[12/22, 10:41] Lynne: ×•••× INTRO ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

•

I'm done making dinner my beautiful family will be here shortly but I burnt my steak a little though it's not that bad,well I think.I heard the door open up I knew it was them.

"What is that smell?"

That was Dad asking about the smell well since I told y'all I burnt my steak but its fine,trust me.I walked out of the kitchen

Me:Hello hello!

I said smiling

Mom:Sweety pie you made dinner?

She said with a shocked look

Me:Yes

I said smiling like a 5 year old given a loli

Her:Oh no!

She ran to the kitchen

Her:Is my kitchen ok?

She breathed out of relief

Her:Oh it's fine

Me: Why would it be? Anyway pls take your seats I'll dish up for you

Dad:My Princess I'm not hungry

Me:But Daddy I made this dinner for you guys from my heart

I said getting sad bcz they don't eat my food.

Mom: Don't cry my Angel we will eat right Honey?

Dad:Yah...yah...kgm of cause my baby we will I can't wait

I smiled

Me:Ok pls sit down I'll dish up for you

Dad:Yes yes my Princess

I ran to the kitchen I took all my dishes I placed them neatly on the table they were smiling

Me:Looks delicious huh?

Mom:Yes my baby

Me:Thanks Mom

"Hello my Family!"

That was my bro.I went to hug him.

Me:Come and eat dinner with us

Him:Great who cooked?

He was smiling

Me:Me

I said smiling

Him:W...Wow I can't wait to eat

Me:I know come sit

He set down I also took my sit

Me:I'll blessed the food.

Them: Sure

I blessed the food.

Me:Let's eat now

Mom cleared her thought

Chris (my brother): I think we should order pizza

Me:What?

I said sad

Mom:No sweety Chris shut up and eat your sister made up this special dinner so pls

Chris: Ok

Dad:Sweety pie what is this?

Me:Oh that its a little ruined it's a pan lasagna my oven was not hot enough it supposed to be 180 I did 80 can you blv it

I laughed

Dad:No sweety I actually can't blv it

Me:Yah

Chris:The steak is uhmmm....

Me:A little burnts I know but I'm working getting it right

I looked at the time

Me:Oh its 9 sorry family I gotta go sleep I got a early shoot tomorrow

Mom:Go honey go

Chris;Yes Sis get your beauty sleep you deserve it

Dad:Early morning early sleep sweety go maybe your tired

Me:I really am

Chris:Go and get some rest

Me:Your not mad me not finish...

Dad:Noooo Princess work is very important go

Me:Ok

Chris helped me up then walked me to my room

Me:Thanks Bro

Him:Anything for my lil sis

Me:Goodnight

Him:Sleep tight

Me:Thanks

I walked in my room

•

•

•

•

Chris's POV

I ran back downstairs

Me:Already ordered pizza?

Mom:Yes

Dad:Let's get rid of this there's noway I'm eating this as dinner

Mom;My poor baby is trying

Me:She's terrible TERRIBLE

Mom:At least she can boil water

Me and Dad: Yah

Mom:Anyway let's clean up

We cleaned the table threw the food away we can't eat this we love Paige but her cooking no no but she loves to cook,clean all those stuff my lil Sis no.After we were done and washed the dished we set in front of a TV eating our pizza and drink.

Me:Finally my mouth have been missing that taste

Mom:After we are done hide throw these She'll be very disappointed if she find's out we don't eat her food

Dad:And I don't want her to cry

Ok one thing to know about Paige NEVER and I mean EVER make her cry that innocent girl you see will turn into s monster no one knows or she may surprise you by crying and get mad for days even weeks.I don't upset her too and I care about my sister if anyone makes her upset I'll squash that person without thinking twice and she knows that.

Mom:What about the news?

Ok the arranged marriage she will flip over it but what is done is done.

Me:Let's not tell her now I still don't know what will be her reaction

Dad: You will yell her

Me:Me? Oh no way she's your daughter

Mom:Your sister

Me:Mom? You gave birth to her

Dad: Yah

Mom:Hey hey I didn't make a sin by that one of you will tell her

Me:You Dad

Dad:Noway

Me:I'm out one of you will tell her

I said walking away noway I'm getting involved no no

•

•

•

Hey guy my name is Paige Mahone I'm 21 I live with my Both parents and brother Chris he's 25.I don't actually have real friends but I have 2 ppl I call friends at work though. I'm a model

•

This is my story a Slay Queen like me forced in a marriage. Will I cope? Y'all saw that I can't cook

•

Like!!!

Comment!!!

Share!!!

[12/22, 11:06] Lynne: ×•••× 01 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

•

I woke up pretty early I look at my phone

Me:5? Wow so early

Anyway I took a relaxing bath till 6:50 I got out,dried my body,lotion I wore my black ankle long dress with long sleeve that exposes my back then did my make up then let my hair lose.Time hit 7:30 It's time for me to eat and go I took my Gucci purse then walked downstairs

Me:Hello family

Them:Hey

Me:Hmmm pancakes my favourite

I set down then ate they were so quiet which is unlike them

Me:Why so quiet

Mom:No...Nothing honey just eat your breakfast

She flashed a fake smile

Me:Dad what happened? Are you guys getting a divorce?

I was shocked bcz these ppl love each other dearly that would be impossible

Mom:No no no honey its nothing

Chris;I better go

Dad:Me too

Mom;Yah your father is my ride so yah

They left

Me:Your leaving me alone?

Dad:Sorry sweety

They left in a rush pushing each other at the door I laughed

Me:A family I have

Anyway after my breakfast I took my car keys then drove to work listening to Ariana Grande - Breathin.Ari is my girl she's my role model.I sang the whole song to work after sometime I parked and made my entrance in our Model label C (name of my work place like I said I'm a model)

"Paige!"

That was Kimberly I ran to her

Me:Hey

Her:Your next go and get ready you know our camera man doesn't like ppl waisting his precious time

Me:You can say that again ok bye

Her:Bye

I went to my dressing room.Our cameraman is very controlling and I hate him he thinks bcz he took pictures of us half naked he can have us bloody bustard.Ok I wore my outfit any all that then went to the studio.I saw him shooting Alicia one of the models

Him: Come Paige you'll be next

I walked in.Alicia was the only one left I was the last one I didn't want to be left alone with him.

Him:Paige your turn

I walked forward taking off my gown I was wearing a sexy red lingerie with black red bottoms. I'm slender but got an ass tiny boobs.

Him:Pose for me

I did poses he took pictures.I was seating on a couch

Him: Ok look up high

I did

Him:No like this

He came to me

Him:Your chin up your body like this your leg like this

He was touching me

Me:I get it Carlos get off me you know your forbidden to

Him:Fine I was trying to help

Me:Just take the mother fucken pictures niggar

I'm mad right now.He took pictures

Him:There I took a lot of'em

Me:Done?

Him:Yah

He took my gown and helped me to wear it

Me:Thank you

Him:Welcome

I walked away

Him:Hey Paige

What does he want now?

Me:Hm?

Him:I would like for us to grab some lunch together or dinner

Me:I'm sorry Carlos but no

Him: Oh ok cool

Me:Sure

I left.I went to Vicky she's our assistant

Me:Why so quiet here where are the girls?

Her:At meeting it will start soon

Me:Why I wasn't told?

Her:It was arranged at the last minute

Me:Ok I gotta go

Her:Sure

I went to our office meeting area

"Oh there she is can we start now?"

Everyone: Yes

I went to seat next to Kimberly who saved a chair for me

Me:Hey girls

Jennifer: Your late

Me:I didn't know there was a meeting

"Paige Mahone you and your group are making noise"

Me:Sorry Sir

We looked at him

"I have an announcement to make.Your all going to Miami next week"

Wait did he just say "Miami"? Everyone was screaming out of excitement I didn't know how to

react Miami is such a cool place beautiful ppl,building, beach actually its beautiful

" ok ok ok calm down ladies"

They all kept quiet

"You'll be shooting pictures there"

We screamed Miami? Shooting pictures? This is awesome

"Silence everyone listen"

We kept quiet

"There will be also a runaway show competing to their models there and I have a feeling you'll win so I want everyone there to make me proud ok?"

Us:Yes!!!!!!

"Your dismissed"

We all went to our dressing rooms me and Jennifer went to Kim's

Me:Miami girls

Kim:We'll see those yummy man walking around

with no shirt on the whole day

Jennifer: Girl I can imagine

Me:Like I wouldn't want to leave

We laughed. It was fun spending time with them then after work I went home I found everyone gathered around the table looking stressed

Me:Hey everyone y'all hungry?

Mom:Oh no

Dad:Ah ah

Chris: But thanks Sis

Me:Ok what's wrong?

I also set down

Mom:Sweety this is hard for us to say

Me:Mom it's ok

Dad: Pls don't freak out

Chris: Do you ever see yourself getting married Sis?

Me:Married me? Oh yah of cause but since there's no one to get married with..

Mom:Let's say we arranged marriage for you how will you react

Me: I'll rip your throat's off who does that

Dad cleared his throat

Dad:Honey we just found out something shocking about our past

Me:Wait wait wait

I chuckled

Me:Where is this going?

Dad:Sweety pls listen

I leaned back of my chair then starred at him.

Him:Your Grandparents made a deal

Me:Deal?

He gulp

Him:They uhmmm made a deal with the Jackson family

Me:I don't know them

Him:No you don't we do

Me:Ok carry on

Him:Your Grandparents made a deal with them that their daughter will marry a son of the Jackson's

Me:Owky so where do I interfere? By the way you don't have sisters

Him:Yes sweety pie that's the point they didn't give birth to a girl we were all boys

Me:Yes and?

Him:So their deal turned back to me my parents chose me that once I have a daughter she will marry one of the Jackson's son's

I swear to my mind stopped functioning for a sec

Me:Huh?

Mom: Meani...

Me:No! Don't bother I already get it. So I have to marry one of the Jackson's son's that I don't even know who's probably ugly,fat,nerd, abusive,controlling freak!!!

Dad:Don't raise your voice at us young Lady

I laughed

Me: Ohhhhh God are you serious father? I'm really getting married?

Mom:Sweety we're sorry we had no choice

Me:Those ppl are long DEAD NOW! I will not give up my future bcz of that

Chris:Sis..

Me:You knew.You knew all along and kept quiet Chris Mahone I thought you were my best friend

Chris: I am

Me:Your not ALL OF YOU GO TO HELL!!!!

I said taking my purse

Me:Oh! And tell the Jackson son he will never marry me I'm too expensive for him whoever he is

I went to my room I banged my door then I opened it I yelled

Me:I WON'T MAKE DINNER YOU'LL STARVE!!!!

Then I closed my door locking it

•

•

•

•

•

Chris's POV

Me:Its OK if she doesn't make dinner hoooo I'll order something

Mom:This is a mess

Dad:If my parents didn't do that selfish decision we wouldn't be in this mess

Me:What are we going to do?

Mom:She have to come around we have no choice

Dad:I fell sorry for the boy who will marry her

I laughed

Me:She'll cook for him

Mom:This is not funny Chris I'll teach my baby girl

Me:Remember what happened the last time?

We all laughed

Dad:She almost got the Kitchen on fire

He laughed

Mom:The cake blast for the first time

We laughed

Me:I'll miss her a lot

Dad:Yah this house will be nothing without her

Mom:Yah we are only left with few days with her next week she's getting married

Me: Yah we are running out of time

•

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:09] Lynne: ×•••× 02 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

I was woken by my alarm today its a day off I'm going tomorrow at work.I forgot I set an alarm now I have to wake up even if I don't want to.I just laid there thinking about yesterday

Me:Me + Man I don't know + Marriage = My whole life full of unhappiness.If they think I'll agree they are making the wrong mistake of their lives.Imagine the guy maybe he's some weirdo,nerd or freak.No no no I would never marry someone I don't know no.No hell no my parents are trippin no no.Ewww the imagination of this guy is creepy

I heard a knock

"Sweety can I come in"

Me:I'm not here

I said tucking the blankets under me.Mom got in

Me:I said I'm not here what do you want Mom?

Her:How did you sleep?

Me: I don't know Mom you tell me I slept thinking about what my own parents said I should marry some freak that I don't even know

Mom: He's not s freak sweety

Me:Have you seen him?

Her: Well no but his family seemed nice

Me:Oh Mom what if he abuses me beat me up

Her:Someone beat you up impossible

Me:Well of cause I'll fight back but he's a man

Her:Honey he'll never abuse you his family is very nice besides if he does tell us

Me:Woah woah woah don't get it twisted Lady I'm not agreeing to this

Her:Paige?

Me:No Mom no

Her: But your left with few days

Me:What? This is going to happen now?

Her:Yes

Me:When mom?

Her:Next week Saturday

Me:Oh thank God I'm leaving Saturday

Her:For what?

Me:At work we are going to Miami

Her:What?

Me: Yes then I'm saved OH! close the door on your way out

I pulled my blankets then slept I heard the door open up then closed I guess she's gone.

•

I slept for more hours then got up I put on my sleepers and gown then went downstairs.I didn't even greet I set down then focused on my plate.I kept making noise by my fork and plate I want the one who will talk and say I'm making noise.

Dad:Honey can you pls pass me the salt

I thought he'll say I make noise.I pass him the salt.

Chris: So Sis how about we go out?

Me:No I'll go out alone

Chris:Ok

Then silence took over

Dad:What is your final decision Princess

Me:I'm not getting married

Him:Paige pls...

Me: What Dad? Your scared of these Jackson's? Tell them to come here today I'll talk to them

Mom:Paige no

Me:What Mom? Since you guys can't handle them I can bcz there's no one I can't handle

I said then focused on my plate

Me:I lost my appetite

I walked away I went to my room I took out my outfit for today then took a shower.I'm so mad right now

so mad no one will control my life I rule my life.I got out then lotion I put on my clothes did my make up.I tidied my room took my phone and everything into my purse then walked out.

Mom:Where are you...

I walked pass her I slam the door I got in my car I drove to Burger King my favourite place to eat.I got in I ordered

"Paige Girl!"

I saw Kimberly

Me:Hey Girl

We hugged then set down

Me: Day off

Her:Yep and a girl gotta spoil herself with her money you know

We laughed

Me:Yes girl

Her:Whassup with you you look stressed

Me:Family problems

Her: Oh I'm sorry care to share you know I'm always there for you

Me: Oh Kim this is totally different

Her:What?

I breathed out

Me:I have to get married

Her:What? By force?

Me:Yes and I don't want too

Her:But why?

Me:Bcz of my late Grandparents deal

Her:Wow

Me:I can't believe they are selling me off like that

Her:Oh I'm sorry

Me: And it's next week

Her: Noway next week we are leaving

Me:No I'm coming no matter what they say I don't

care about them

Her:This is a hard decision girl

Me:Tell me about it. Even Chris knew and he didn't say anything

Her:Sorry girl but its so soon why won't they postpone it then

Me:Nothing would be postponed here there will be no wedding and that's final

Her:I know you you ain't taking shit

Me: Thats good to know

We laughed.She also ordered then we ate.

Her:Anyway Carlos asked for your number

Me:Oh pls he better take pictures and know his place yesterday he asked me out

She laughed

Me:It ain't funny

Her:He finally made a move

Me:I lost interest in him when he kissed me

Her:He said sorry

Me:I don't care no one has a right to touch me in anyway my body my rules

Her:That is the Paige I know but that slap was too much

Me:Too much? No it wasn't he deserved it and a lot more

Her:He likes you

Me:I made it clear to him that I don't like him

Her:Hmmm

Me:Yes

Her:Anyway let's take pictures my Instagram is dry

Me:Mine too I can't remember the last time I post a pic

Her:Let me take yours

She took mine I took hers it was really fun.

Me:Let's go to the mall now I feel I shopping

Her: You know it

We drove by my car then we got out we went to a shoe shore I'm obsessed with shores.

Me:I want heels

Her:These?

Me:To walk around with then I couldn't last a day in those

We laughed

Me: These

Her:Yah I love gold but I want red and and pink Fila's

Me: I want white

Her: Let's buy'em

•

Anyway we shopped for everything we needed then I drove her home her car had an emergency she couldn't go with it

Me:Bye

Her:Bye

I drove back home I parked my car outside then took

out all my bags then got in.Arggg I got irritated

Mom:Honey your back

Me:Yes Mom

She hugged me kissing my face

Me:So cancelled the whole madness

Dad:Paige your marrying that boy whether it seats well with you or not deal with it

He walked away.

Mom:Paige my Darling understand we have no choice and we didn't chose the date

Me: No I'm sorry Mom I was too hard on you but I don't care I'm not marrying anyone unless Dad will drag me

I rushed upstairs I put down the bags I threw myself on the bed.There's noway I'm getting married no no no no and hell no.

•

[12/22, 11:10] Lynne: ×•••× 03 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

•

•

I'm tired asf but I gotta go to work.I woke up I did my hygiene process then wore my adidas shirt,adidas leggings,adidas kicks.I didn't do any makeup I'll do that at work I just curled my hair then wore my red cap. I cleaned my room I love cleaning y'all I'm a clean girl ok.Anyway now face my fake family and IM STILL NOT GETTING MARRIED. I went downstairs I took my sit then focused on my plate.

Mom;Morning honey

With a smile

Me:Morning

Looking at my phone

Dad: No phones in the table Paige

Me:Sorry Father

I put it away with a little attitude

Dad:Your in-laws will be here tomorrow

Me:Oh they are moving too fast it's a pity I won't meet them

Dad:Paige! You'll marry that boy whether you want it or not

Me:Why don't you marry him huh?

I was mad as hell Chris burst out laughing

Chris:Good one Sis "why don't you marry him" Dad she got you there

We all stare at Chris who was clearly laughing alone he noticed he was laughing alone he cleared his throat then focused on his breakfast.

Dad:Paige my word is final!

Me:So is mine!

I said grabbing my purse and phone

Me:Have a nice day

I walked out. They think I'm playing huh? I ain't marrying nobody they'll kill me first.I got in my car I drove to work I put on my sunglasses while driving on the main road there was pressuring me behind mine.I'm on my bad mood today I don't want to be pissed plus I'm driving 100km/h it's written on the board.I kept ignoring the person I drove but nahhhhhhhh I can't with this kinda pressure.The robots went red I got out in.a hurry the road wasn't full so yah maybe 2 cars behind this disrespectful mother fucker.Like I said I stepped out of the car then a dude csme out.

Me:Niggar what the fuck?

Him:First of all you drove like a 60 year old Granny secondly you got a sticking attitude

To tell you guys I was fuming

Him:Thirdly you just called me by the N word

I laughed sarcastically

Me:You think I give a SHIT you were pressuring me

while you know very well the speed or is it you don't got your glasses on?

Him:Listen here little girl don't talk to me like that

He said getting all angry

Me: You think...

"Lady move the robots are green!"

Shit I'll be late

Me:I ain't scared of you dumbness

Him:What did you call me?

Me:Whatever asshole some of us have work to go to

I said walking away

Him:Wish I could see you again I swaer I'll crush you!!!!

I opened my door looking at him

Me:Piss off!!!

I got in and drove.I swear this is not my lucky day at all.I drove to work I parked my car then walked inside I saw Kimberly approaching me

Her:Hey girl you don't look good

Me:Hey

We hugged then pulled out

Me:It was a terrible morning

We made our way to my dressing room.

Her:What happened?

Me:My Dad is still on about me marrying this guy then I had an argument in the drive way he say I drive slow

Her:You argued

Me:Yes I couldn't let it slid Kim never

Her:Wow ok

She said laughing

Her:Anyway you heard the big news

Me:What news why I always be the last to hear things around this building

Her:After our big huge gig in Miami if we win one of us will me the next cover girl of VOUGE MAGAZINE

Me:Shut the front door?

Her: Yes

Me:VOGUE as in VOGUE?

Her:Yes girl

We streamed

Me:Oh Wow Girl this is bigger than I thought

Her:Huge girl HUGE

Me:Wooow

Her:I can't wait only few days left

Me:Tell me about it

"This looks fun"

Our manager was standing by the door

Him:Stop gossiping and move,leave here Kim don't you have your own dressing room?

She ran out

Him:You Miss Mahone get ready

Me:Yes Sir

My makeup artist walks in then did my make up blah blah blah no boring details.

•

•

•

•

•

Unknown POV

"Mr Jac..."

I stopped her I'm not in the mood that was my PA.I got into my office I found my love.

Her:Morning Babe

Me:Morning my love

We hugged and kissed

Her:What's wrong?

Me: I got into an argument with a crazy lady today Gosh she had a big mouth

I went to sit down she came and massaged me

Her: Ohhh your tense Babe

Me:That feels good

Her:Yah?

I relaxed my body she was caressing it I closed my eyes then enjoyed

Me:Hmmm that is so good

Her: Know what's better?

Me:Hmmm dirty mind you.What are you thinking?

I said laughing a little

Her: Wellll...

She set on my lap then started kissing me I ran my hands under her skirt it felt good until someone disturbed us.

"Dude come on"

It was my brother he closed the door again

Me:I'll go by your place after work ok?

Her: Promise?

Me:I promise honey

We kissed she left my Brother walked in

Him: Bro I told you that is gross... in the office?

Me:Who are you to tell me what to do pls

Him:Whatever man Dad said be early for dinner

Me:No I'll be with my girl

Him:I was just telling you what he told me to say Bro

Me:What's special about this dinner. Oh no the marrying shit why won't they just drop it

Him:Bro I'm.just glad your older than me I won't be marrying some crazy ass girl

Me:Arg they are ruining my life I love my girlfriend

Him:Yah but you gave to sacrifice like sacrificing your happiness now

Me:What if I marry some loud, crazy,disrespectful,spoilt brat?

Him: She will be your wife that I know your even have a beautiful house ready for you guys awww it's it romantic?

He made puppy eyes then laughed

Me:Your not funny

•

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I'm back home after work oh and it's dark it was hectic today.I took my things I got in the house

Chris:Sis your back

Mom:Honey I throught you ran away

Me:Ran away?

Mom:We couldn't reach you

Me:Ohhh I turned it off bcz you don't reach me like now

I walked away

Me; Goodnight

Dad:Burger king for dinner

Really?

Me;I don't care

Dad:Ok

Chris:Let's eat I'm hungry,without her

Dad:Sure

They started eating my heart broke ahhh the smell is aw I can't explain

Me: Can I eat?

Mom:Of cause Baby

I smiled Mom dished up for me

Dad:Back to our conversation

Me:Arggg really Dad did you really had to spoil the mood

Him:Yes Your in-laws are coming tomorrow and that's final

Me:I better finish this in my room excuse me

I took my food

Dad:Night princess

I went to my room I ate my food while thinking about what Dad said.My in-laws are coming tomorrow.

Me:Do they know Paige Mohone?

I did a evil laugh

Me:They don't know me.They will go back where they came from in a sec.

I laughed out loud

"Sweety are you ok!"

Mom asked I cleared my throat

Me:Yes Mom!

[12/22, 11:10] Lynne: ×•••× 04 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

"Honey wake up"

Me:No Mom

Her:Your in-laws will be here today

Me:I'm going to work I have a life remember? So pls

I yawned getting up and rubbing my eyes

Her:Your Dad called off they are ok with it

I looked at Mom surprised

Me: Your husband did what?

Her:Honey...

Me:Wow all for meeting those "in-laws" as he says.I'll show them who is Paige Mahone

Her: They are very nice ppl my baby

Me:I don't care Mom

Her:I'll leave you oh...wear decent pls

Me:That is not happening

Her: Yah it is

Me:We'll see Mom

Her:Paige!

She looked at me then left."wear decent " that shit is not happening. I took a shower then wore my demin shorts,pink plain off shoulder tank top,Nike pushins then did a pony tale then put on make up.

Me:Yes girl your in-laws wouldn't want you at all bcz you look like a hoe.

I laughed

Me: Well let's seat back and enjoy the ride.

I went downstairs

Mom:Paige?

Me:Morning

I set down

Mom:What are you wearin?

Me:Clothes.Can we eat pls

Dad is giving me a dead stare hoooo I am cool asf.We ate I washed the dishes.

"Don't you think you should change?"

Me:Oh no its kinda hot

Dad:Pai...

Me: Dad... No

Dad: Go and Change PAIGE NOW!!!

He was so angry we heard the door bell.

Me:That must be them I'll get the door

I went to the door I opened up

Me:Hey everyone pls come in

They looked at me from head to toe it's amazing.I moved away from the door.

Me:Come in don't be shy

"Your Paige?"

I smiled

Me: The one and only

They all got in I showed them the lounge Dad and Mom showed up.They greet like old friends then we all set down

"She's beautiful"

Bitch I know

"Her style though..."

Oh that woman already hates me this is working as planned.

Dad:No she doesn't wear like this often it was just...

"But still she could have worn decent since we are coming here just to show respect"

Oh she's crossing the line

Me:Hola hola hol'up your the once showing disrespect here by FORCING...

Dad: Paige sit your ass down!

She was mad I don't give a shit

Me:By FORCING a 21 year old to marry some ugly,disturbed son of yours

"How dare you talk about my handsome boy like that?"

Me:Oh you must be the mother how wonderful

"I knew this was a waist of time"

Me:Of cause it was what's wrong with ppl nowhere days now thr wedding is off right?

"I love her"

A Granny said

"She's perfect for him Peter need someone like her she's the female version of him"

Another woman said

"No no no no she's terrible"

Me:Good then its all cancelled

"No pls we will do everything"

Then it hit me

Me: Everything?

Him:Yes pls

"Why pleasing her..."

Me: I'll plan the wedding

The shock they had yah yah guys I'll plan the wedding don't look at me like that.I have a huge plan.

Dad:You'll marry him?

Me:Yes

"Oh that's great I don't know what to say"

Me: It's ok don't say anything

"I guess we're done here"

The woman said

Me:Yes

They all said their goodbyes and left.

Mom:What was that?

Me:Nothing

Dad:What are you planning?

Me:Nothing Father just watch and learn if you have too

Chris:Your up to something

I laughed

Mom:So your not going to Miami

I laughed

Me:Mommy sweety,honey just trust your only

daughter

I said petting her back.I walked to my room I laid on my back. I'll plan that wedding I want it to cost R50 000 or more so they refuse to pay then no wedding am I good or am I gooood? This is gonna be good they don't know what is coming their way they don't. And that's a good thing.I should start looking for expensive dresses that they wouldn't be able to pay Ohhh this is gonna be good bcz I'm going to Miami IM GOING.

-

I have a headache guys I couldn't go on but I tried

[12/22, 11:10] Lynne: ×•••× 05 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

It's the following day it's pretty early I have a habit of waking up early these days.Anyhow I'm still in my warm sheets but on my laptop and now I'm calling one of the designer's of the dresses I saw on the internet and I'm interested so there's this dress that I looooove but I want few changes on it.I found the contact right here on the internet now I'm making the call

Me:So when shall I stop by?

Him: How about tomorrow I'm free

Me:Say no more Paige Mohone will be on your door step

Him:Ah Miss this can cost you a lot

I laughed bcz that is what I want

Me:Oh don't worry about that money is NOT a problem

Him:Ok Miss soon to be Mrs...

Me:Hey don't push it OK? At what time?

Him:12

Me:12 sharp bcz I don't like delaying things

Him:Of cause will you come with your husband to be?

I just rolled my eyes

Me;Look I'll be there

I dropped the call arg he's too forward.So the price here says 35k I wonder how much will they add extra hmmmm perfect. Ok I got out bed I did my hygiene process then wore my blue jeans with pink hopdie, pink cap and pink block heels then headed downstairs.

Me:Morning morning

Them:Morning

Me:What? Cereal? Mom

Chris:Yah Sis bcz you didn't cook

He smiled

Me:Oh let me do something quick...

Mom:No no no sweety don't how about you go and buy breakfast on your way to work or eat somewhere

Me:Hmmm since I'm in s gooood mood I should do that eating out would be wonderful

Mom:yes

I took my things

Me:Bye!

Them:Bye!

I went to my car I drove to Wimpy I ordered then took my seat then ate Kim called

Me:Girl girl girl

Her:Where are you

Me:At Wimpy why?

Her:Get in here now

Me:Sweety my shoot is at 10 the meeting at 2 then my appointment at 4 then go home

Her:Paige Mahone I want you here right now like now now

Me:Kim come on I'm enjoying myself I'm eating breakfast pls

Her:You'll regret not coming here now

Me:What? You miss me

Her: whatever

She dropped the call

Me:Oh she misses me so bad

"Paige? Paige Mahone the model?"

A girl said

Me:Who me?

Of cause you you idiot. But act like a fool Paige I look horrible for selfies

Her:Yes you

She set opposite me.Can someone pls tell her who am I? Oh wait...she already knows

Her:Your that Paige model OMG my friends will freak out when I tell'em this

Me:Oh

Her:A selfie pls pls I beg you

Oh she's so cute a little maybe 15 I think

Me: Sure who would say no to that face

Me,me I would say no but since your a fan why not. We took pictures

Her:Oh you look way beautiful without makeup

Me:I do?

Her:Yes your skin is flawless

Me:Actually it is

I said smiling

Her:I'm such a huge fan OMG I can't blv this your here in Wimpy with me

Me:Trust me I can't either

She laughed

Me:I better go I'll be late for work

Her:Ok damn you look good

Me:You too sweety you too

I said taking my things then walked out to my car I drove to work listening to Ariana Grande Pink Champagne. After sometime I reached my

destination I got out I went inside

"Paige!!! Your late"

Me:Late for what? My photoshoot is at 10

Her:Actually uhmmm

Me:Oh don't uhmmmm me what happened

"I happened"

I turned to see Kelly my frenemy I hate that bitch to the core.

Me:Kelly?

Her: You still got style and your still a model but not really thin hmm you should tell me the secret

Me:Why your here weren't you in London?

Her: Yah yah I heard bad news so I wanted to be here so why not join my former colleges oh it was fun those days huh?

Me:I hate you know that right?

Kim:I'll go and get ready

Me: Ok

She left

Kelly:You two still friends

Me:Yes true friends stick together no matter what

Her:I am your true friend

She got close to me

Me:Your a monster

Her:Oh don't tell me you still in love with that idiot

Me: Why did you do it huh? Tell me

Her:It was so big Paige it made me cum and cum and cum hmmm I still dream it in my sleep

I wanted to cry I'm not a cry baby but her sleeping with my boyfriend killed me I loved Kelly like a sister where this bad blood started I don't know

Her: It was soooo huge

She licked her lips

Her:When he kisses me oh God heaven opens up.Oh his body arggg amazing hmm just the thought of it makes me horny

She laughed then left I ran to my dressing room I cried. Let me tell you what was that all about.Kelly slept with my boyfriend she was my best friend my sister she betrayed me.I won't say a word by my ex bcz I don't care yes I was heart broken I cried for days till my heart ache.What hurts the most is I saw'em fucking ever since that day I've never dated ever since. And no I'm not a virgin but its been a year now so you know the deal my muscles there went back where they were.Anyway I've slept with 2 guys in my life my ex Jason he is my favourite ex really I loved him he loved me but we cut off things bcz he was moving and we were still in high school.His parents were moving so he had to go it was hard but yah I let him go even though I didn't wanted too we both cried that day that boy was my first you guys first love and my virgin breaker. I would be lying if I'd say I don't miss him of cause i miss him and so much.Then my lunatic ex Leonardo but shorten for Leon. He slept with Kelly there I met Leon in the modeling agency our manager back then liked me and him on the same pictures all the time then I developed feelings for him he also confessed his

love then we began dating. Leon was the hottest guy in the boys models so I don't know if Kelly became jealous or what or Leon ohhhh I don't even know what I'm saying all I can say is I loved Leon soooo much he broke me.But my favourite ex Jason I still think there's a space for him in my heart somewhere. Anyway enough of that while I was crying my eyes out I heard the door opens up

Me:I want to be alone

"No you need to get ready"

Me:Huh?

That was our director for the pictures

Him: Your up next

Me:Up next but I shoot at 10

Him:No at 8 so pls get ready

This smells Kelly

Me:Who shoots at 10 then?

Him:Kelly

Me: Why? I shoot at 10

Him:She changed the times

Me;Excuse me she just got here

Him:Paige get ready and now

He left.But why is this girl driving me crazy.

•

After work I went home.

Me: Mom? Dad? Chris?

No one answered.

Me:Mom!?

I went to my room I took my laptop and a fleece then went to sit at the lounge I ordered Burger king.Then it arrived a I look at the shoes for the wedding they look do beautiful I want them gold.Ok I wrote down my list including prices of cake, decoration, chairs, tables, set of the table,food alot of food and many bunch of things they better not agree bcz I'm going to Miami in few in few days.My Mom got in

Her:Hey Baby

Me:Hello Mommy

Her:Watchu doin?

Me:Oh nothing interesting

She set next to me

Her:Paige? That much for only a cake

Me:Mom you ain't paying so chill

Her:My baby...

Me:Mom I got this I got this.Tomorrow I'm going to the in-laws pls tell Daddy to arrang a meeting at 4 bcz I'll be free then so I can name my price

Her:But....

Me:I better go and get my beauty sleep Mom tomorrow is a big day.

I went to my room I got under covers.I stare at the ceiling thinking of tomorrow when they say "no we can't afford it" I'm too expensive not even a million is worth me.I'll show'em tomorrow who is boss.

•

I'm tired guys I'll post another later today

[12/22, 11:16] Lynne: ×•••× 06 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

I was woken by my alarm then Mom walked in.

Me: Morning

Her:Morning my princess

Me: What did Dad say?

Her:Yes your meeting will be

Me:Awesome where?

Her:At this location

She gave me a peace of paper

Me: Oh

Her:Be there

Me:Trust me I will

Her:Your wedding is in few days oh my baby I'm so proud

Me:Wow

Her:Don't be like that honey maybe you'll actually fall in love with him

Me:Fall in love Mom really? No I won't

Her:You'll see

She smiled walking out

Me:Oh I won't fall in love noway.

I took a shower then wore my black tracksuit and ghost pencil heels.After all that process I went to eat

Me:Morning

Dad: So your really meeting the Jackson's

Me:Yah

Chris: Can I come along pls

Me:Why?

Him:I miss spending time with you

Me: Ever since you betrayed me

Him:I'm sorry Sis

Me:Ok will you also take me to work?

Him:Will pleasure

Me: Awesome

We ate having light conversation then Chris drove me to work.

Me:Your car is always neat

Him: Yours too

Me:I'm a lady

Him:So?

Me:You should be messy

Him:Shut up no I'm neat too you know

Me:I know sorry

Him:Tell me something Paige

Me:Sure

Him:Are you really marrying this guy?

Me:What? Of cause not ew

Him:I knew it what is your plan?

Me:Making the wedding expensive as possible

Him:How much?

Me:Relax brother dear you'll hear me at the meeting

Him:I can't wait

Me:Chill you'll see

He dropped me at work then left.I went in

"Morning Paige"

Lord pls make her disappear or I will

Me:What Kelly?

I looked at her annoyed

Her:No nothing much just admiring your outfit

Me:I need to go

She grabbed my arm

Her: Hey wait a sec

I stared at her

Her:I'll be the cover girl of VOUGE

I laughed

Me:You? Cover girl? Oh pls

I walked away she grabbed my arm again

Her:Listen here this is not primary/high school ok? I'll beat you

Me: I can't wait bcz I've always beat you in everything even in

I whispered

Me:Men

I walked away laughing.I've beat her in everything absolutely everything she's acting tough bcz it helps her to gain confidence but deep down she's hurting poor princess.

"Miss Mahone"

Me:Hmm

Him:This came for you

Me:Oh thanks

It's a big golden box written my name I went to my

dressing room I put it down I started opening it.Guess what I saw...a red sexy party dress

Me: What the hell?

Kim showed up

Her:Hoooo that's beautiful

There was a card to it as well

[I would love to see you in it]

Me:What the fuck who sent this?

Kim:Let me see

She looked at the card

Her: "Love T" who's "T"?

Me:I don't know I don't know anyone by the name on T

Her:Maybe an admire

Me:Kim pls no

Her:I'm just sayin

Me:No it can't be that I'll throw this

Her:Have you lost your mind this dress is beautiful

Me:I don't give a damn

I threw it in the dust bin

Her:I wish someone could buy me a dress like that

Me: No to me it's creepy

Her:Don't you like it that there's someone out there who loves you

Me:I seriously don't care Kim

Her: Fine I'll stay out of it

She left. I wonder who it T. Who is T I don't know at all

•

•

•

•

•

Unknown POV

Me:Did she get the gift

Him:Yes Billy sent it there

Me:Good oh I can't stop thinking about her

Him:She it quiet beautiful

Me: Hey hey watch it she's mine you thirsty beats I swear I'll kill you if you lay your hands on her

Him:Sorry I won't jeez.

Me:Good now you can leave

He left me day dreaming about the love of my life.Paige Mahone oh she's beautiful beautiful...

" Sir we got them "

My men interrupted me

Me:Ohhhh how wonderful

Guy1:We're sorry...

I threw a punch

Me:Who sent you to steal my stuff?

Guy1:We're sorry pls

Me:WHO SENT YOU?!

Guy2:Red

He whispered

Me:Who?

Him:Red Sir

Me:Ohw isn't that nice the Jackson's really knows how to piss me off huh? Get these ppl out of my site

They all got out. The Jackson's like pressing my red buttons really now they are stealing from me?

•

Time pass by till it hit 4:30 I got a call

Me:What?

"Paige Mahone is inside the Jackson's house"

Me:Pardon? Why?

Him;I don't know maybe...

Me:Find out find out I want to know what is her business with those ppl and get here with an answer ok?

Him:Yes

I dropped the call. Why is my beautiful woman doing with those sick lunatics?

•

I know its short but I'll try making them longer

[12/22, 11:44] Lynne: ×•••× Continuation ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me:Good evening everyone

Them:Hy

Me:Oh I guess you already know my older brother

"Yes we do"

Me:Awesome so about the wedding price

"Yes yes we want to get everything ready now"

Me:Great...

Mother: What is it already

Me:I.6 million

The shock is priceless

Mother:Are you crazy?

Me:Ahhh no I'm 100%...

"But my daughter that's a lot of money"

Me:1.6 million? Sir I'm too expensive I was I gonna make it 2 million.

Mother:Why?

Me:let me see I'm well educated, I have a job,I earn a lot of money, I don't depend although I still live with my parents but thats not the point the point is you guys can't afford the wedding

Mother:Damn straight we can't

Me:Ohhhh how sad I guess we're don't here.Chris let's go

We walked away

"Wait"

No no no no "wait" you guys can't afford the wedding so now I'm going home don't tell me your changing your minds

Me:Yes

"It will be paid"

Me:Said what?

My ears stopped hearing for a sec there

"My son will pay"

"Your future husband"

Me:Huh?

Chris:Your getting married

Me: No I can't

"In 2 days you'll be family"

I faked a laughter bcz they were laughing

"Welcome to the family"

A guy said I guess the father or Uncle I don't know my head is not here at all. They stood up and hugged me

"I give you my blessings"

A old wrinkled lady said

Me:Wonderful we're better go

Them: Bye

With smiles

Me:Bye

I said flashing a smile.Me and Chris walked out I cried Chris was laughing at me.

Me:Its not funny Chris

Him:You got there with attitude telling yourself you'll neil this now? BAM! Your crying

Me:Chris stop it I don't want to get married in 2 days I'm going to Miami

Him:I guess you won't be going

Me:Noooooooo that Bitch Kelly will be the cover girl

Him:Stop thinking about that focus on your life with your husband

He laughed

Me:You have terrible sense of humor Chris

Him:I don't care

I was crying he was laughing at me

Me:I hate you

Him:I love you too

•

•

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I'm coming back home from work they called me I wonder what is it this time.I arrived I parked my car then walked in the house.

Me:Hey everyone

Mom:Hey my son

She hugged me

Dad:Oh son your already here

Me:Yes what's the emergency?

Granny:Sit down my baby

I went to sit down

Me:Its the marriage again with this ugly skinny girl of yours

Nicole:I haven't seen her but what about your girlfriend?

Me:Shut up Nicole

Dad:The wedding is on

Uncle: its 1.6 million

Dad:Mxolisi?!

Uncle: What? The boy needs to know

Me:ok woah what is 1.6?

Mom: Your wedding son

Me:What? 1.6 goes down to the drain to someone I don't love

Dad:Son we had no choice

Mom:We had a choice by letting go of all this madness

Dad:Shut up I'm talking to my son

Mom:Our Son our son

Dad:As I was saying she's a nice girl

Granny:No she isn't she is just like you

Aunt:Are you nice?

Me:I am nice

Uncle: No your not

Nicole: Your always cold and you don't smile at all

Me:I am nice and I do smile

Nicole:No you don't

Granny:She is just like you son and right there I knew she's the one

Me:The one? Granny those ppl don't exist anymore

Aunt:They do and that woman is

Me:If she's just like me we won't get along

Dad:Well true but..

Me:Nvm that Father let's go back to the 1.6 who planned the wedding that costs that much

Uncle:Your future wife

Me:What? She planned it? Is she insane? 1.6 I'm not paying

Uncle:Your lucky she almost said 2 million

Me:2 mil..? She is crazy for real there's noway I'm paying noway o agreed to pay first but now 2 mil no no

Mom:Don't pay my child your father will see what he does

Dad:Shut up woman

My Mom and Dad don't get along I don't know why they don't even shair a room.

Mom:This is totally a waist of time and money my God

Me:I can't blv this who does she think she is? I already don't like her

Granny:These things take time

Me:Oh Granny I don't like her one bit she's bad news.I better go to my house and be peaceful

Dad:Peter just marry her pls

Me:If it makes you sleep at night so be it

I said walking to my car I drove to my house.1.6 million for a damn wedding she's crazy 100% crazy.I arrived I parked my car then walked to my house.I walked upstairs I laid on the bed facing the ceiling. I'm fucken getting married in 2 days with some crazy lunatic.I swear God doesn't love me at all.I don't care even if she's hot as hell I won't fall for her no no no no.I have a girl that I love and that's who I want to marry one day.She also doesn't like me marrying someone but I told her I love her and only her.This crazy girl better think again. I'm hungry too I better go and eat out.I'm also tired though but what the heck I'm going. I took my things I drove to burger king I love eating there.After sometime I arrived I

went inside I ordered then ate.While eating 2 girls showed up the other was crying the other is comforting her.They took seats now the crying one is giving me her right side I can't see her face.I can see the other one.She's busy consulting the crying one I wonder what happened.

"Bro!"

Me:Bro

We bro hugged

Me:What brings you here

Him:Looking for you dawg I knew I'll find you here

Me:What do you want?

Him:How do you feel?

Me:I feel horrible Dude she wants 1.6 million for the wedding

Him:Said what?

Me:You heard right

Him:Dude that's alot

Me:No too much does she know how hard I work? No she just names the price

Him:She's already a headache bro

Me:Tell me about it

Him:So what will you do

Me:Does it looks like I have a choice I'll pay

Him:Wow

Me:Yah wow I'll pay that 1.6

Him:She better be worth it

Me:I don't care even if she has beyoncè's body I love my girlfriend and I'm a very loyal boyfriend I don't fuck around

Him:What? Oh no tell me your kidding

Me:I love my girl dude she's the one I'll love to marry one day

Him:Ok man.1.6 million

Me:Arggggg don't bring it up I'll pay it

We laughed

•

[12/22, 11:44] Lynne: ×•••07×•••×

Wedding day

•

•

•

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I feel like crying,shouting doing all kinds of things I do not want to get married.

Mom:You look so beautiful

Me:Thanks I guess

Mom:Don't be like that I hope he's a fine young man

Me:I don't care Mom even if he's handsome or not I do not want to marry him

Mom:Sweety you'll be ok trust me

Me:I trust you Mom but I swear if he lays a finger on me it will be the last thing he does on this earth

Mom:Or maybe not bcz his family seems nice

Me:Nice? Oh Mom

Her:Why you always thinking negative?

Me: I'm not that is life Mom

Her:I'm not saying life is sweet and smooth but for once in your life belief

Me: I do blv Mom

Her:You don't

"Its time!"

Mom:She's coming!

I looked down

Mom:Hey you'll be ok I love you OK?

Me:I love you too

We hugged

Mom:I'll never throw you away your my baby my only baby girl

Me:Oh Mom

Her: I'll always, always with you

Me:Thanks Mom

Her:No thank you now I'll see my daughter walking down the isle

Me:I'm not happy Mom

Her:You'll be ok

She said walking me out of the room.

"You look like a Princess indeed"

Me:Thanks

That was Dad

Him:Let's go

He held my arm the piano started playing we walked in the isle. There are few ppl that's what I like few ppl not the whole neighborhood. Ppl were whispering and giggling but who care I'm way to beautiful than

all these bitches right here.My Dad handed me over to that guy when I laid my eyes on him he looked familiar. It looks like I've seen him before ahhhhhhhh yes yes his the guy on the driveway. That disrespectful bustard.I'm marrying him? Why Lord why why and why? Why me?He looks at me then his watch oh he can't wait for this to be over and hoooo I can't wait either.

Pastor: Pls hold hands

Arc with this jerk? Never.Someone took my flowers then he held my hands.I just rolled my eyes can someone pls move the clock faster I'm tired of starring at this ugly face.Time went on we did vows put on the rings blah blah blah.

Pastor:You may kiss your bride

I was like no no no hell no.I whispered to the pastor

Me:Is it like necessary?

Him:Yes my child

Me:What if skip that part?

Him:No you can't my Child

Oh lord have mercy on me. The poor guy kissed my cheek. Aw he's so cute thank you.

"I bet your saving those lips for tonight"

Ppl laughed.

Ew as if.The wedding went on now we were on out table eating you know I got bored I wanted to call Kim but since they are flying all the way overseas her phone is in flight mode I'll try tomorrow. Anyway time went on ppl did speeches then after that we were taken to our special house for the night. These ppl have money if only I said 5mil maybe they would have said no arg stupid Paige stupid. We got in this wooden cabin I've never been in a cabin before it looks so beautiful and warm I could see the fire place.

Me:Ok Bro we need to set some rules

Him:I agree

Me:First of all I know the kind of shit you can pull through

Him:Are you still talking to me

Me:What? No of cause not. Hell yah I'm talking to you.Don't you remember me?

Him: Crazy like this why don't i?

Me:Let me refresh your memory Sir I'm that girl you were pressuring at the driveway

Him:That loud crazy woman why didn't I realize?

He said taking off his blazer

Me:Look Sir I'm not crazy nor loud I want to tell you that we,us we do not spent on each others toes ok? You stay on your lane I stay in mine.We are married but that doesn't mean we are in love ok? We are more like roommates don't bother my privacy I don't bother yours.You don't ask my whereabouts I don't ask yours you can come home at 3 in the morning if you like I don't care.If you bring girls to our house I bring boys I hope I made myself clear

Him:Yah you did and I agree

Me:Oh wonderful then I need to shower

I walked to the bedroom there's only one bedroom in this cabin didn't they know we are two? Lazy idiots.I

stripped naked then took a long shower then got out.

Me: Shit I don't have anything to wear what am I going to do

"Come on I want to shower too"

He said knocking at the door

Me:Oh come on wait a lil longer.

I took the dress and other things to the bedroom

Me:I'm done its all yours

He got in I dried my body I guess I'll sleep naked.I got under covers I looked at the time it was 8:51.It's early but I'm not going to work for a week bcz everyone left.My life sucks right now.I closed my eyes while I was starting to fall asleep I heard someone getting into bed

Me:What are you doing?

Him:Sleeping

Me: No not here I'm sleeping here

Him:No I'm not going anywhere

He said tucking the blankets in

Me: Pls don't sleep here I'm naked

Him: So?

Me:So I don't want you next to me

Him:I'm not a rapist just sleep

Me:Hell no

I got up I took one blanket and a pillow

Him: Where are you going?

Me:Just leave me alone.

I walked to the lounge I moved the centre table I placed my pillow on the matt then laid there I covered myself with my blanket I felt warm instantly bcz I was next to the fire place.I've never done this in my life but I rather do this than sleeping on the same bed as that jerk or I rather die first do you hear me DIE.

•

[12/22, 11:44] Lynne: ×•••× 08 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

Oh my body hurts my whole body hurts actually. I opened my eyes it's morning oh thank God.I stood up WITH my blanket I'm not risking noway.I stretched myself every part of my body hurt I'm not used to hard surface when I'm sleeping bcz my bed is very comfortable.

"Morning"

Me:Morning

Oh he's done showering he's dripping water arg does he think he's sexy or what?

Me:Done taking a shower or bath?

He walked to the kitchen

Him:Yah you can go

Me:Ok

I walked to the bedroom then to the bathroom I took a long shower after what seems like 20-25 minutes of shower I walked out I wrap a towel.I walked to the bedroom

"Here are your clothes"

Me:Oh who sent them?

Him:Just put on those clothes and go i got ton of work to do

Me:Whatever you say Sir

I said taking the beg while rolling my eyes

Him: I hate that don't ever to it again

Me:Whatever

Him:And that...

Me:I need space pls

He walked out. I wore my grey tight tracksuit with it's grey hoodie,black Nike kicks,black cap then I was done I went to the kitchen it smells actual nice

Him:Your breakfast I'm going to get dressed

Me:Thank you

He left.Hmmm he made Bacon God I missed it.I ate my food after a lil while

"Let's go"

Me:No I'm not ..

Him:I said let's go

Me:Hello Sir

Him:Your Paige right? Now pls I'm running late to work

Me: How did you know my...

He grabbed my arm forcing me to go

Me:Let go of me!

Him:Get in!

Me:Fine but you owe me breakfast I'm hungry

Him: There's food home

Me:We are going "home" now?

Him:Yes my house

Me:Point of correction OUR house

Him:You didn't give me a single penny to build that house

Me:Mi casa...(My house...)

Him:Don't tell me that "my house is your house " phrase that house is mine and mine alone

Me:Whatever I don't want nothing that belongs to you too

Him:Awesome we see eye to eye

Me:Awesome

We drove in silence till we reached his house we got out.

Me:It's beautiful

We got in

Him:Hey Maria

Her:Morning my Son

They Hugged she looked at me

Her: This is the wife?

Him:Yes

He walked away

Her:I'm Maria the maid

We hand shake

Me:Paige Mahone

Her:What no your Paige Jackson now

Me:No it sounds horrible

She laughed

Her: Hungry?

Me:,Totally

Her;Come I already made something

Me:That's great

We went to the kitchen this place is fantastic though.

Her:Here you go

She gave me a plate

Me:Thank you

I ate with her cooking

"I'm off to work"

Maria: Oh bye

We heard the door close meaning he left.

Maria:Why didn't you say your goodbyes to your husband?

Me:Hello Ma'am I don't even know that guy

Her:He's a good boy

Me:To you actually he's a Monster a real devil

Her:No he's not he's sweet and loving

Me:I don't think so

Anyway I ate then looked around the house it's pretty big if you ask me.

"Where is my room?"

Her: First door on your right

Me: Thanks

I went to the room it's huge I saw my begs I opened the closet.No this is that guys room I'm not sleeping with him.I took my begs then looked for a suitable

room for me and finally I found it.its big but not big as the first one but there's space.And a beautiful bathroom so I'm settled.I unpacked my clothes I became bored I took pictures I posted.If everyone thinks I'll just fold my hands and enjoy this when I say this I mean this marriage well they better think again I'll do everything in my power to end it.I'll drive that husband of mine crazy till he wants a divorce bcz there's noway I'm spending the rest of my life with this man NOWAY you can call me crazy.

-

[12/22, 11:45] Lynne: ×•••× 09 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

Next day I slept through the whole night my body is relaxed a little. I took a long bath then wore white long sleeved crop top,blue jeans and white block heels then I curled my hair I went to eat breakfast.

Me: Morning

Him:Morning

Then we ate no one said a word and we were alone but my phone disturbed me it was Kim.

Me:Girl!

She screamed in my ear

Me:Ouch!

Her:Guess who I saw

Me:I'm not good at that game you know

Her:I saw Klein

Me:Noway

She screamed

Her:He was soooo hot

Me:Your kidding

Her: No I'm not

Me:What was he wearing?

Her: Nothing

I screamed

Me:Nothing?

Her:Only shorts

Me:Hmmm disappointing

Her:Anyway I saw those abs girl I wanted to touch a bit

I laughed

Me:Girl I'm freaken out right now

Her:Girl you didn't see him his lips so pink and oh Lord I wanted to jump in his arms and kiss him

Me:Shut up I'm getting hot

"I'm trying to eat in peace"

This annoying guy said

Me:Sorry.Look girl we'll talk later about everything ok

Her:Tonight bcz I'll be busy the whole day plus I want to hear about the wedding

Me:Tonight I'll tell you everything bye

Her: Bye and let me look at those abs again

Me: You go girl

We laughed

Her:Bye

Me:Bye

We dropped the call. I sighed

Me:A friend I have.

I ate my food with him looking at me

Me:What?

Him: Nothing

Me:What's your name again?

Him:Peter

Me:Hmmm Peter ok got it

We ate no one said word again.After a while

Him:I'm off to work

Me:Ok

He left I did the dishes I really miss cooking but no I don't want to burn the kitchen that guy can kill

me.After that I set on the couch watching TV. I heard the door bell I went to open

Me:Oh hey

Him:A package for Paige Mahone?

Me:Thats me

Him:Sign here pls

I signed

Him:Thank you

Me:Thank you

He gave me a box then he left I went to sit down.The box wasn't heavy not big.I just opened it

Me:Mother of Jesus

Its a beautiful silver necklaces with shining diamonds.

Me:What the?

I saw a card

[I saw it I thought of you.Love T]

Me:Its the same person "T" who is it? And this looks

expensive.

I put it away I looked at it sparkle wow like it's magic.I went to make myself sandwich I have no idea what I was doing I messed the whole thing up but I ate it anyway. After that I took the necklace to my room then went to watch the TV again I fell asleep watching it.

•

"Paige!!!!"

Who dares to wake me up like this?And this person is shaking me roughly

Me:Hm hm!

"Wake up dinner is ready"

I opened my eyes

Me:Why waking me up like that?

I rubbed my eyes

Him:Just come and eat

Do you see how he treats me? Well he doesn't no me YET.I went to to join him in the table

Me:Oh I don't ear pork and steak

Him:Why not

Me:Have you gotten a look at me like for real? And why mixing pork with steak?

Him: Will you just ear or what?

I looked at him then rolled my eyes I ate the green salad.We heard a knock

Me:I'll get it

I went to open

Me:How can I help you.I,2,3,4 oh 5 wow

Guy1:Is Peter home?

Me:Yes come in your his friends?

Him:Yes

They all got in I closed the door we all set at the table we all ate.it became awkward no one said a word other than them eyeing each other

Me:O-ky I need to get some rest

Peter:Rest wow sleeping is your talent huh you just

woke up

Me:Don't test me ok?

Him:What did you say?

He said giving me a look

Me:Oh pls your not scary I'm not scared of that face

He stood in front of me fuming

Me:Woah woah chill personal space we set boundaries you stay in your lane I stay in mine

I walked to the kitchen I drank water then walked to my room I took a shower then wore my PJs I called Kim.

Her:My girl

Me:Hey girl

Her:So?

Me:So?

Her:Your wedding your husband

Me: Its fine everything is ok

Her:How was the wedding

Me:Cool I was bored asf

Her:I miss you

Me:I miss you too

Her: At least your happy right?

Me:No I'm not

Her: Why?

Me:I'm married Kimberly

Her:Oh yeah is your husband ugly?

Me:Yes he's horrible

Her:Really?

Me:Yes really he's ugly

She laughed

Her:I can't wait to see him

Me:Whatever he's the one who's ugly not me

Me:Girl I gotta go

Her:ok

I walked out

Her:Just be ok OK?

Me:You too

I walked down the stairs

Her:I love you

Me:I love you more

I dropped the call I went to lounge I turned on the TV to 166 I watched X factor I can't miss it tonight.Peter was not around with his friends.I watched the TV till it was over. I turned off the lights while I was walking upstairs I heard the door opens up.Didn't Peter locked? He gets in.Oh its him he didn't see me since it was dark.

Him: Come in

A girl walked in with thin thighs oh poor thing and a short dress.

Her:How about we start this party right here

They closed the door I couldn't see then then I heard smooches they were kissing he was leaning her against the wall I could hear things falling.Maybe that's his girlfriend I tip toed and walked upstairs.He

carried her up I could see them he walked with her upstairs I moved so they don't see me.Oh God he's fucking this girl they got to his room they left tracks of their clothes around. I leaned on the door I heard the girl moaning oh my he's not waisting time huh? I wanted to laugh and to watch so bad I know I'm weird so don't. I left she was moaning poor thing I laughed walking away I went to my room. I slept through the whole night i woke up thirsty I went to drink water then came out of the kitchen that girl saw me

Her:Who are you

Peter:She's my younger sister

Me:Yah

Her:Oh bye sexy boy

They kissed Ewww

She left.

Me:Last night was something else huh?

Him:Huh?

Me: I saw everything

I said laughing

Him:Everything?

Me:She was yelling your name out you gave her too good huh? But why saying I'm your sister

I got close to him

Me:Isn't that your girlfriend?

Him:No

Me:Hoooooo your cheating?

Him:Look its none of your business I love my girlfriend

Me:You should bring her over I'd love to see her

Him:I need to get ready for work

Me:Ain't you tired? I mean after last night I thought she drained your energy bcz she was like "Oh oh Peter right there oh my God your so big.Don't stop harder"

Then I laughed bcz I was mocking her voice

Me:You hit her good Husband I hope your girlfriend

never finds out

He grabbed my arm fuming in my lips

Him; You wouldn't dare

Me:Its not my place actually I'm on your side

He let's me go

Me:You can have'em it's your call just remember I'm also a waman with needs I need to be excited you know I also need to be laid not by you of cause ew I have class

I walked away

Me:"Oh Peter deeper babe don't stop "

I laughed he looked pissed.But she really said it

Me:"Your so big Peter oh my God your on my chest "

I laughed

Him:SHUT UP!!!!

I ran to my room laughing

[12/22, 11:45] Lynne: ×•••× Continuation ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

How can I drive Peter crazy? The nuts crazy not the other crazy.I want him to say he had enough of me I should live his house then we divorce bcz I'm sick and tired of living here.Today I'm going to the gym since its been a long time.I wore my grey shorts,grey crop top hoodie I did a pony tail,wore my black running shoes.I took my cellphone with earphones.I walked downstairs I found him eating

Me:Hey again

Him:Hey

I made a bottle of water

Me:I'm going to the gym

Him:Wearing that?

Me:What's wrong with what I'm wearing?

Him:Nothing go

I took my car keys I drove to the gym I got in I put on my earphones I started training.

•

Time hit 12 I left I went back to the house I heard ppl making noise oh my God.I got in eyes locked on me.It was his friends I thought he said he's going to work but nah I won't ask.I went to my room I took a long shower then lotion I wore my short high weisted grey leggings,white long sleeve crop top,black Nike kicks,I curled my hair I did make up I finished with a grey long jacket.I took my clutch and cell phone.I walked downstairs I went to the kitchen I drank water I love water. Then I walked out of the kitchen

Peter:Where are you going?

Me:To the mall want something?

Him:No

Me:Cool

I walked out

•

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Ace:I've been looking at this girl she looks like that model

Me:Model?

Harry:What model?

Ace:I don't know but I've seen her

Adam:It is her Paige Mahone the model

They laughed

Ace:I knew it

He took out his phone

Ace:Look here

He showed me her pictures on Instagram

Me:Oh it is her

Harry:Ohhhh let me see oh look here she's wearing a

bikini damn boy

Me:Yah I don't care

Ace:She's hot dude

Adam:I've seen her pictures today I saw those legs in front of my eyes

Me: I got eyes for one woman

Harry:Whatever but this one wow

Ace:Look at her skin

Harry: Flawless

Me:You don't know that maybe she's like one of those Kardashians not throwing shade anyway

Adam:Your right Peter but we like what we see

Harry:Look at this one

He was laughing

Adam:Let me see

He took it

Adam:Damn she's dripping wet coming out of the pool Peter wanna see your wife

Me:No thank you

Ace:Let me see

He gave him

Ace:You lucky bustard

He laughed

Ace:Why you always get fly girls

Me:Bcz I'm also fly and Paige is not my girl she's my wife a wife I don't love

Harry:At all

Me:At all Harry

Adam:She's beautiful though you agree right

Me:Oh God leave me alone

Adam:Answer me

Me:Yes she is beautiful happy?

Ace: No

Me:Oh God

•

After 2-3 hours she came back with a lot of bags.

Me:Your back

Her:Yes wow it was hard work

She took her bags upstairs.I was alone then my friends left.She came downstairs she gave me a chocolate

Her:Here

Me: No thanks

Her:Ok then two chocolates for me

She set down eating her chocolates

Her:Change the channel

Me:I'm watching

Her:Baseball?

Me:Yes

Her:Press 323 pls

Me:No

Her:Arg your no fun

Her phone rang

Her:Girl

...

Her:Your lying

...

Her:Noway why she's crying

She laughed

Her: I can't blv this

...

Her:Poor thing

...

Her:Since here?

...

Her:She'll be fine she's a big girl

...

Her:Yah

...

Her:Tonight?

...

Her:I'm so jealous

She laughed

Her: Stop

She laughed

Her: Girl you better not blew it

...

Her:Abs

She laughed

Her:Stop its getting hot in here

She laughed

Her:Oh my oh my

...

Her:Have a good day and get him

...

Her:Yes

She laughed

Her:Bye

She laughed then dropped the phone.

Her:Hoooo my girl better get him

She laughed

Me:Your talking alone

Her:You heard me so I'm talking to you

Me:No...

We heard a door bell

Her:I'll get it

She went to the door then came back with a box

Me:What is it?

She opened it it was a dress

Her:This guy won't ever give up huh? But this is pretty good.How will I look? Look it got a long slipt on my left thigh

Me:Its fine

Her:Oh your just jealous

Me:No I'm not

I said focusing on the TV

Her:Whatever it says here "Paige my Darling beautiful flower this dress matches your beauty it will look great on you I would love to see you in it looking like a gorgeous lady that you are" oh God some man are romantic

Me:Your boyfriend?

Her:No I don't have a boyfriend but I think I'll have one soon.This guy seems nice I would love to meet him

Me:Do you mind I'm watching the game

Her: Sorry

She took her things

Her:Whatever "Peter babe go harder ohhhh oh oh"

She laughed

Me:Just leave Paige

Her:I'm going "Oh Peter"

She laughed walking away.I admit its funny when she's mocking her voice. Besides she's exaggerating that girl didn't say all those things,well maybe few

•

[12/22, 11:45] Lynne: ×•••× 10 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

•

•

Next day and I just want to sleep the whole day but that's not me.I woke up I bathed lotion then put on my knee long tight dusty pink off shoulder dress with sleepers bcz I'm not going anywhere today.I did my hair no make up. I tidied my room then went downstairs I found breakfast ready with a peace of

card saying [I'm at town buying groceries love Maria] Oh where was she?

"You have a girlfriend you Jerk"

Then I heard a slap I turned to see a girl walking out angrily I looked at Peter.

Me:Another girl? Then you claim you love your girl

Him:What I do with my life doesn't concern you

Me:Hell yah it doesn't

I went to sit down to eat he set down too

Me:Smelling sex really?

Him:Do you mind leaving me alone?

Me:Ok sorry Sir but I want to ask something since we both share this house are you gonna bring girls every night?

Him: That doesn't concern you either

Me:I'll take that as a yes and if so pls I do not want to be involved in that kinda drama OK?

Him: And how?

Me:For example your girlfriend thinks we ever did shady stuff just leave me out of your problems.If one of those girls insult me I swear to God I'll break their nose's better yet their necks clear?

He just looks at me then looks to his plate

Me:Men are all the same

Him:Not all stop saying that

Me:Your all can't keep your pants zipped that's what you have in common

Him: Let's just drop this

Me:Yah I think so too

We ate.Few minutes later Maria got in we helped her with the begs now we are in the kitchen.

Her: I hope you too got along very well now

Me:Yah why not

I said eying Peter who was looking at me too.

Peter:Yah we get along quiet well

We were busy putting the groceries away.

Maria:I'm glad ... I'm glad

After a while we were done

Me:I'll be in the lounge

I walked to the lounge I set at the couch I turned the TV on I watched 124 Revenge body by Kloe Kardashian I love it. My phone rang

Me:Hello

...

Me:Hello

I turned the TV mute

Me:Hello?

...

I looked at the screen its a number +27 at least its a African

Me:Who am I talking too?

...

I dropped it someone ppl are insane maybe its those crazy stalkers.I pressed mute off then watched my

show after a lil while I thought I should call Chris.It sent me straight to voicemail. Oh God I miss my family.

•

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Today I'm going to work I'm done getting ready. So the reason I sleep with those girls its Bcz of stress me and my girlfriend cut things off bcz of this marriage she thinks I'm sleeping with her now she's not taking my calls I don't know how she's doing right at this moment I really miss her.Anyway I walked downstairs I overheard Paige on the phone

Her:No Kim I want to leave here

...

Her:I just want my family you know I miss'em

She sniffed

Her:I'm not happy Kim I don't love this man he doesn't love me either so there's no hope of me and him being together 0% chance

...

Her:No no no it's not that

...

Her:You know me I'm not that kind of a girl I don't date taken men like that...

...

Her:Fine I won't say her name but I can't...

My family burst the door opened. What are they doing here?

Dad:Son

He came to hug me

Nicole:OMG Paige

She went to hug her then they talked

Mom:My Son how are you doing?

Me:I'm ok Mom

Mom:Pls let's all sit down we don't have all day

Alex: Bro

Me:Yah bro

We bro hugged

Dad:Let's all sit pls

We did

Dad:Are you happy Daughter in-law?

She paused for a moment

Her:Yes Father very

Dad:Ok great I guess you already made peace

Her:Peace? Oh yah peace yah

Dad:No I mean you're officially husband and wife for real?

Where is this topic going?

Mom:Your father means to say are you happy with each other do you do things married couples do?

Paige:That is a very personal matter Mrs Jackson don't you think

Mom:No not at all

Her:Well if I ask you if your doing things married couples do with your husband would you answer?

Mom:We are older than you

Her:Still it's a matter between me and your son whether we have sex or not

Dad:Ok ok

Wow so those two don't get along

Dad:We are here to propose something

Before I could speak

Paige:I'm all ears

Dad: Ok we are here to offer you this

They gave Paige a briefcase

Dad:Open it

Alex:Dad did you...

Dad:Shut up boy

Paige:Money?

Mom:Yes

Paige:In exchange of what?

Mom:Of a baby

Me:What?

Paige:Excuse me?

Dad:Its not like we will take the baby we just want grandchildren

Paige: I can't blv this at all

Me:Mom your offering her money which is your buying her

Mom:I thought she loved it

Paige: Your a mother too how could you ask me something like that plus I'm a model

Mom: So?

Paige:Do you want to ruin my career?

Dad:Ok we are sorry daughter in-law this was a bit extra

She stood up

Her:A bit? How could you offer me money huh? I don't want your money here take it

She gave it to them she walked away then stopped to look at us

Her:By the way there's noway I'm getting pregnant have you take a good look at me huh?

She said turning around

Her:Look at my body just look.See flat tummy a baby will ruin this just look see? See? See!? This is all hard work.Peter pls talk to your parents look at me this sexy and get pregnant pls

She walked away

Nicole:She is sexy and I love her

•

[12/22, 11:45] Lynne: ×•••× 11 ×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

I've been in my room the rest of the day yesterday and today I don't want to talk to anyone. I heard a knock

Me:Go away whoever you are!

"Paige I just want to talk"

Me:Just go Peter

Him:Pls

He's been knocking for a while now. I went to open he got in.

Me:Talk

Him:My parents said they're sorry

Me:Why didn't they say it to my face?

Him:Bcz you told them they should leave you alone and...

Me:Oh yah yah I know

I told them that yesterday

Me:But it wasn't cool for them to buy me I have my own money this body makes money honey

I said looking at myself at the mirror

Him:You love yourself too much

Me:Is that a problem Mr Jackson?

Him:No

Me:Hmmm

Him:Excuse me

Me:Your excused

He left.I cleaned my room, took a bath ,lotion then wore my adidas leggings, Adidas crop top and adidas kicks and a red cap.I went downstairs

Me:Hello

There were his friends

Them:Hy/Hey/Hello

Me: Oh Peter I'm going to my Parents house I'll be back soon

Him:Sure

Me:Bye

I went to my car I drove home. Peter is being freaken nice to me now its hard to make him crazy.Anyway I arrived home.

Me:Hey family

Chris: Sis

We hugged

Dad:Your here at this time?

Me:Hey to you too Dad

I kissed his cheek

Me:Hey Mom

Mom:Hey my love how are you?

Me:Great awesome and you?

Mom:Good

Chris:How is Brother in-law?

Me:He's fine

Dad: Fine?

Me:Yes Dad fine

Mom:Is he treating you well?

Me:Yes Mom he's actually a gentleman

Dad:See he already swept you of your feet

Me:Yeeey

I said faking a smile

Chris: So when am I talking to him like brothers that we are?

Me: Don't ask me

Him:Oh sorry

Mom:At least your happy honey

Me:Yah

•

•

•

•

•

•

Unknown POV

So my beautiful Paige is married to that idiot

"Sir I don't think you still have a chance with her now"

I laughed

Me:She'll be mine Nev

Nev:You don't dissapoint I know

We laughed

Me:I always get what I want Nev...always

•

•

•

•

•

Paige's POV

After a while I went back to the house I found Peter seating at the couch watching TV he turned it off

when he heard me getting in

Him:Finally your back

Me:Yes

Him: I blv this is for you

He gave me flowers and a box of chocolate

Me:Where...

Him:Your boyfriend sent'em here

Me:He's not my boyfriend

I took them

Me:Lilies my favourite

I smelled them

Me:They smell nice

I threw them away

Him:Why?

Me:He's becoming creepy

We heard a door bell I went to open to find a girl looking all sexy with a freak'em dress on

Me:Oh hy

Her: Who are you

Peter came to the door

Her:Peter my love

Me:Oh your...

Peter:I'm having a family time with my wife Monica

He held my waist to him there was no air between us.

Her:You jerk

She walked away I closed the door I got off him.

Me:Don't you ever lay hands on me ever again

Him:I'm sorry I wanted her to live

He we to sit down

Me:Then don't use me

Him:I said I'm sorry

Me:Gosh I'm a lady you don't touch a lady like that without her concert ok?

Him:Yes Ma'am

Me: Good now give the poor girl what you gave her first time

Him:I never gave her anything

Me:No?

He looked at me

Me:What about "Oh Peter"?

I laughed

Him:Oh God that again

Me:You don't like talking about it?

Him: Yes

Me:Oh sorry

I said seating down too I turned the TV on I watched music

Him:I'm going out

Me:Lier your following that girl

Him:No I'm not

He said taking his jacket

Him:Don't wait for me

Me:Why would i?

Him:I'm your husband you should be concerned

Me: Well no

He left.Ok I got the house to myself for the whole night I went to the kitchen.

Me:There's dinner here

I dished up for myself I ate then went to bath I put on my silky short night dress with my slippers.I tried sleeping I couldn't I kept tossing and turning. I just went to the kitchen I poured a glass of wine I'm not the drinking type but I'm defiantly the wine person. I drank two glasses I bet they'll do the trick I turned to see Peter standing there.

Me:Peter you scared the shit outer me

Him:Sorry

Me:Why you just standing there Gosh your creepy

I put the wine away

Me:Goodnight Ewww you smell alcohol

Him:I drank a little

Me:Yah you did.Go and take a bath

I walked upstairs I felt his eyes on me I turned to look at him he quickly looked to thr kitchen he went in.Was he checking me out?I felt my night dress at the back it's short so he probably saw my ass son of a....I went to him I found him drinking water

Me:Where you checking me out?

Him:Why?

Me:Why were you looking at me when I caught you you shifted your focus

Him:Your seeing things

Me:Am I? I better be bcz I don't like those stares

Him:Go and take a nap woman

Me:Hmmm

I walked out

•

•

•

Peter's POV

If she thinks I was starring no I wasn't I was admiring my beautiful house.And I should call my girlfriend she's still angry.And Paige well she's just sooooo crazy but in a good way and funny too.

[12/22, 11:46] Lynne: ×•••×12×•••×

•

•

•

•

•

Next morning I'm used to work not sit around the whole day and do nothing. Im used to work not this I want to go to work already.I got up then took a shower I looked at my mirror I saw a pimple in my face.Oh no no no that is horrible HORRIBLE..

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I was getting out of the shower when I heard a scream coming from across the passage I knew it was Paige I ran to her room I found her crying.

Me:What happened someone broke in?

I had baseball belt on ok?Just in case

Her:No

She cried

Me:Then what?

Her:I have a pimple see!?

She pointed to her cheek

Me:You creamed so loud bcz you have a pimple?!?!!

Her:Yes Peter jeez look at me

She cried.I can't blv I'm married to this

Me:I thought you were seriously hurt Paige you scared me

Her:Peter hello I have serious emergency here THIS is important

Me:No my work is

Her: What?I'm going through a crisis Peter do something do you want ppl to laugh at me?

Me: No one will recognise it

Her:No I do I recognise it where are my creams oh God

She paced up and down looking for creams I think

Her: I found'em

She started rubbing her face with them

Her:I look so ugly right Peter? Just say it bcz I have a pimple a pimple Paige Mahone has a pimple this is the worst day of my life I know my wedding day was the worst no offence

Me:None taken

Her:But this this is the worst ever I swear if it doesn't go away by tomorrow I'll die

Me:Oh God I'm going to work

Her: Whatever go why ain't you wearing a shirt anyway?

Me:I was getting out of the shower

Her:I see

Me:Huh?

Her:Your wet

She was starring

Me:were you starring?

She quickly came back to her senses

Her:What?no at those pls

She looked away oh she was starring

Me:Hm

Her:Pls go

Me:What do my presences brother you?

Her:No it's just became hot all of a sudden can you feel that heat?

Me:No I'm shirtless

Her:That is why

Me:Huh?

Her:Huh?

Me:I should go

Her:nice tattoos they are really interesting

Me:thanks

Her:I need air

Me:You're ok

Her:Yep

[12/22, 11:46] Lynne: Paige's POV

Dzammmmmmmmn hubby got muscles well I saw'em differently this morning he's hot.But anyway like I said my face is ruined now.I lotion then put on my short tight dress with sandles I'm planning on staying home today no one should see me like this noway.After hours in my room hoping Peter left I went downstairs I set on the couch finally I'm alone.My phone rang

Me:Kim sweety!

Her:Honey

Me:I have a pimple

Her: No

Me:Yes my face is ruined

Her:That is bad

Me: Bad? It's horrible

Her: Yes you're right but I got bigger problems

Me:Bigger than this pimple I doubt

Her:Kelly actually have been blue ever since we got here

Me:Yah yah you told me that

Her:You don't get it Paige she actually didn't show up for the runway last night

Me:What? The whole Mighty Kelly herself?

Her:Yes she cries I heard rumours that it's her boyfriend

Me:I'm glad a taste of her own Madison

Her:This is affecting me Paige

Me:How?

Her:I can't be the cover girl bcz of her we didn't do the show

Me:Oh too sad

Her:Yes strew her and her boyfriend

Me:Yah strew them but what about my pimple Kim its so big

Her:You used the creams?

Me:Yes but nothing

Her: Wait till tomorrow

Me:I can't I need to take selfies today my Instagram is dry

Her:Mine too

Me:And...

I heard a door bell

Me:I gotta go

Her:Sure

I went to the door

Me:How may I help you

Him:So your the wife?

Me:Yes

Him:Not bad

Me:I know who are you?

Him:Gabriel

He's a Mexican I can hear his ascent

Me:Why your here?

Him:I'm Peters friend I'll be staying here for few days

Me:Oh that explains the bags

He got in

Him:Your way beautiful to be that idiots wife

Me: Shit happens man

He laughed

Him:I like you already.Weren't you informed by me?

Me:No and I'm not surprised Peter do whatever that pleases him

Him:Sounds sad

Me:Actually no I'm ok with it my turn is coming I hope he'll cope

Him:I like you

Me:I like your ascent

He laughed

Him:I'm a Mexican mi amor(my love)

Me: Oh I'm flattered actually

I know Spanish ppl

[12/22, 11:46] Lynne: ×•••× 13 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was woken by my cellphone ringing

Me:Whaaat?

"I'm coming back tomorrow!"

Me:Serious?

I set up

Her:Yes dummy

Me:Oh my God I can't wait to go back to work

Her: You will soon and I can't wait to tell you what happened in Miami girl

Me:I can't wait to hear

We laughed

Her;I gotta go but I need to see you tomorrow

Me: Yah sure no problem

Her:And meet your husband

Me:Yah you'll see him if he would be home

Her:Ok bye

Me:Bye

I hung up I then took a warm shower then did all the necessaries I wore my ripped light blue jeans,black best,yellow shirt and black and yellow nike kicks. I did my make up then did a messy bun.I cleaned my room I went downstairs I found Peter watching TV

shirtless again I swear I'll faint this time. The table is full of food.

Me:Who cooks here?

Him:Maria

Me:Where is she?

Him:She cooks and leaves she doesn't stay for long

Me:Hmmm

He kept changing the TV like a bored person

Me:And what's up with you

He looked sad

Him:Nothing

He got up can someone pls give this guy a shirt bcz hooo lala

Him:I gotta bath

Me:Wait

I held his arm

Him:What?

OMG he's strong GODDAMN

Me:Ahhh

I don't know why I stopped him

Me:Uhm nice tattoos where did you get them?

Him:A frnd did them

Me:Ohhh I see can he do me too

Him:You want a tattoo?

Me:Yes right here under my boob and on my right hip

Him:What? No

Me:Why? Your jealous mine will be better than yours

Him: PSH

He walked upstairs.Damn his girlfriend is lucky but he's a damn cheater you'll never find a loyal man EVER.I went to sit down alone I ate breakfast then took my car keys I drove to a fast food store I'm craving for large fries,onion rings,Burger and chicken. I got there I did my order then order a drink as well.I know its wrong to eat like this bcz I have to stay in shape but I want'em now.I took my sit I ate my food

in peace till I noticed a guy stealing glances at me but he had shades on.I ate my food then went out I went to my car I drove to the mall I went to Pick n Pay I brought few things needed at the house then went back to the house.Peter was walking out he helped me with the bags

Him:You shouldn't have

Me:Help me out pls

We took the bags inside the house.

Me:Thank you

Him:Welcome

He helped me to put everything on it's place.

Me:Where is Gabriel?

Him: Huh?

Me: Gabriel the one you didn't tell me abt

Him:Oh he's uhm out

Me:Oh

He's phone rang he answered it quickly

Him:Beab pls just...

...

Him: Yes yes I get it

...

Him:Tomorrow awesome

...

Him:Of cause I love you I'm willing to prove it

...

Him:Ok

...

Him:I promise

...

Him: I'll be here

He dropped the call he looked stressed

Me:Girl problems?

Him:Yah

Me:what actually happened?

He looked at me

Me; Sorry I'm noisy

Him;We fought bcz of me getting married

Me:Oh she has every right to be

Him:I know but she thinks we are...you know

Me:We are what?

Him:You know like doing things

Me:I'm so lost

Him:Come on like doing the deeds

Me:Deeds?

Him:She thinks we are having sex Paige Gosh your slow!

Me:Ohhhh that next time be straight jeez

Him:Whatever

Me:Anyway tell her that you and me are more like roommates we just married to make our parents happy

Him:She doesn't blv me

Me:Do you blame her I mean your kind of a womanizer

Him:Oh pls I was stressed

Me:When your stressed you take it on sex good for you

Him:That's not me but it was just...

Me:Oh pls Peter you cheated on her once a cheater always a cheater

Him: I'll change for her

He looked sad

Me: You really love her

Him: And no one can understand

Me:I'm sorry

Him:I'm deeply in love with her

He looked really sad guys it was heartbreaking

Me:I'm sorry if I was your friend I would hug you right now

He laughed

Him:I would really need one come here

We laughed then hugged and pulled out

Him:You're actually an amazing person Paige

Me:Oh thank you

Him:Welcome

•

•

•

Unknown POV

I can't stand the fact that my Paige is with that Idiot.

Me: Nev!

He came in rushing

Him;Yes sir

Me:Let's talk business

Him:Sure Boss

Me:I don't like the fact my future wife with that boy

Him:So what is your plan?

Me: I have a huge request Nev and I want it done.Clean

Him:Ohk what is it Boss?

Me:Spy on them

Him:I'm already following the girl everywhere she goes she's safe no one I'll hurt her

Me:No now I want you to hid cameras on their house

Him: Why?

Me:To see what is he doing with my woman

Him:Why don't you just go to her

Me:Nev I'm still your GODDAMN BOSS

Him:She'll never know what you feel abt her

Me: And its out of this world

Him:So?

Me;Those cameras

Him:Come on Boss

Me: I'm not asking Nev tomorrow I want to see my woman on my screen

Him:Whatever you want Boss

Me:Good you may go

He left.One day Paige will be mine but I'll never force her I'll never hurt her.Her marrying that Peter guy broke me I love her I can't say it on her face maybe she'll never accept. Bcz I'm not every girl's dream guy I'm a bad guy with shocking past. But Paige Mahone is the woman for me the woman of my children my Queen in my Castle. If only I could say that on her face im the guy for her.I know I'm bad but for a reason and Peter will hurt her that guy isn't right for her.I...I Romeo White will make Paige Mahone mine and we will be happy.

[12/22, 11:47] Lynne: ×•••× 14 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Today my friend is coming back I can't wait.Anyway I bathed then wore my denim bum shorts,sport bra

and black flip flops no make up then curled my hair.I went downstairs I found Gabriel and Peter eating breakfast they are suited up.

Me:Morning

Them:Morning

I set down and ate.

Me:So Gabriel what do you do?

Him:Uhm work

Me:What kind of work?

Him:I'm a...

Peter: Why asking him?

Me:Is there a problem?

Peter:Yes

Me:Why you're so boring?

Him:I'm not boring

Me:Yes you are and I wasn't talking to you

Him:I know that

Me:Arg

Gabriel:Wait you don't get along?

Us:NO

Him;Why?

Me:He is so serious all the time and...

Peter: She's irritating

Me:I'm irritating???

Peter:Yes

Me:You're a Jerk you know that?

Peter:Whatever

He got up and took his briefcase and left.

Me:Idiot

Gabriel:I thought despite you guys are forced you'll make your marriage work

I laughed

Me:Me and Peter? Together? Like husband and wife?

Him:Yes

I laughed

Me: I wouldn't even dare to date him so pls don't get your hopes up

Him:You'll look great together

Me:Ew ew ew don't ever say that

Him: You don't like him at all?

Me:No at all actually no guy

Him:Wow ok

Me:Yah

We ate.After a long time of boredom I took my things then drove to a near by restaurant.I took a sit on those wooden tables and chairs outside. I ordered my order came I ate my food Kim called

Me:Hey babe

Her: Where are you

Me:At a restaurant you're already here?

Her:Yes I'm at my house now

Me:What?

Her: We flew a day before Paige

Me:Oh now you're making sense.Anyway come here Peter is not home

Her:Peter your husband?

Me:Yes now you can't see him come here and tell me about Miami

Her:Which restaurant

Me:The Filipino restaurant why it's called that anyway

Her:Ok I'm on my way

Me:Hurry

We dropped the call I waited for 30min I think then she arrived I already ordered for her

Me:Girl

We hugged then set down

Me:Your skin is flowing girl

Her:The sun was everything

Me:I'm so jealous

Her:But you're fine I thought I'll see you way skinny and...

Me:You thought wrong girl

We laughed

Her:And husband?

Me:Arg he's just fine but a jerk there and there

Her:How fine?

She said giving me nasty smiles

Me:Oh I wasn't talking about that kind of fine

Her: Don't tell me you haven't seen him shirtless

Me:3 times

She screamed

Her:And?

Me:He's fine

Her:No no fine or finnnnnnneeee?

Me:Just fine Kim

She gave me a "oh really" look

Me:Ok ok fine he's so fiiinnneee

I laughed

Her:I knew it

She laughed

Her:So ever thought when you'll get laid

Me:Excuse what?

Her:Get laid by your husband

Me:NE-VER EVER

Her:Wow that was hush isn't he cute?

Me: He is but no and he have a girlfriend

Him:What but your the wife look at that ring

I looked at it

Me:its so beautiful

Her:Fight for your marriage

Me:Woah woah woah where does that come from

Her; I have no idea

Me:Cool down girl. He sounds like he loves her the

way he talks about her he really loves her

Kim:But still you're the wife

Me:Kim come on

Her:Don't Kim come on me that girl will take your man

Me:He's not mine

Her:Maybe you're right there but you're married to him will he like it to see you date?

Me:He wouldn't mind

Her:You're sure?

Me:Yes

Her:Ok we'll see

Me:See what?

Her: Just relax I'll do everything myself

Me:What is everything?

Her:Everything

She smiled sipping on her drink

Her: Oh it turns out the sadness behind Kelly's face is actually a man I heard her on the phone

Me:Oh what did she say?

Her: It looks like he is cheating

Me:Oh poor thing

Her:She have been crying got swollen eyes and hardly sleeps

Me:What? Don't tell me she really loves this guy

Her:It looks like it

Me:Kelly in love? Not possible

Her: We may never know

Me: Yha

We carried on talking and eating after hours I went back home I found Peter sitting on the couch

Me:Hello

Him:Hy

I went to my room I took nap after a lil while I went downstairs I saw Peter kissing a girl wait I know this

girl and they are still kissing

Me:Wait Kelly?

They looked at me

Kelly:Paige?

Peter: You know each other?

Me:This is nice

I said folding my arms smiling

•

•

•

To be continued...

[12/22, 11:47] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Kelly:Why you're here?

Me:Me? Oh of cause me.I'm a married woman Kelly

some of us are upgrading you know

Peter:What is going on here?

Kelly: Beab she's the wife?

Me:She's the girlfriend?

He gave me a stare oh he doesn't want what happened coming out

Kelly:She knows about me?

Peter:Girls!? Stop.Yes she's my wife and Kelly is my girlfriend now how do you know each other?

Me:Me and Kelly well we are best of friends isn't that right Kelly?

She gave me a dead stare

Her:Yes

Peter's phone rang

Him: I'll be right back

He left

Me:Poor Kelly

Her:How could you?

Me:Me? I didn't do anything I didn't made this happen

Her:You want to ruin me

Me:Oh pls I don't care about you anyway did you look at my ring

I showed it to her

Her:It's fine

Me: Oh jealous much? Oh its a pity it's getting late I would love to sit down and chat about the wedding but you know

I whispered in her ear

Me:I gotta take care of my man

She was fuming

Me:Oh well I gotta go and fix the bed.Oh I almost forgot it was so big

Her:What big??!!!!

She was angry Peter came to us

Me: The wedding

I laughed

Me:Oh well I gotta go oh and your boyfriend knows how to behave

I left them I laughed walking up the stairs

•

•

•

Peters POV

Me:What did she say? Did she hurt you?

Her: No

Me:I'm sorry beab

Her:Do you guys share a room?

Me: No beab

Her:Peter I know you love women...

Me: I got eyes for you

Her:You've never touched her?

Me:Never and I'm not planning to

Her:I trust you Peter

Me:Trust me love I'll never betray you

Her: Its just she's...

Me:She's what?

Her:She's beautiful and sexy I mean have you seen her?

Me:Yes

Her: What?

Me:No no Beab no I got eyes for you

Her:Arg I knew it Peter you slept with her

Me; I didn't

Her:She said it

Me; What?

Her:Know what go to her she's waiting in the bedroom!

She was angry

Me:Kelly let's talk

Her:I do NOT want to talk with you

She took her purse and stormed out

Me:Kelly!

She left.What did Paige tell her? I ran to her room I didn't knock I found her with a towel on coming out of the showed I guess

Her:Hey don't just bug in like that what if I was naked?

Me:What did you say to Kelly

She was drying her hair with another towel

Her:What do you mean?

Me:You said something mean to her

Her:I said what she needed to hear thats all

Me:That is?

Her: Look Mr Jackson me and Kelly are friends

Me:That are attached to 1 man?

Her:You wouldn't understand

Me:Make me

She made her way to me

Her:I said you wouldn't understand

Me:She said you said we slept together

She laughed

Her:She's smart I never knew she got it in her

Me:Paige!!

Her:Ok ok I didn't say that exactly

Me:What do you mean exactly?

Her: I was just kidding Mr Jackson I mean we both know that's not true

Me: Of cause it's not

Her;Then why that's got you all worked up

Me:Bcz she got angry and sad

Her:Wouldn't you like it?

Me:What?

She was weird she was licking her lips and moving towards me and that made me really uncomfortable

Her:Me and you? Together?

I moved away

Me:Oh pls

She laughed

Her:I'm kidding jeez you should have seen your face you were so tense

Me:That was not funny

Her:Its OK Peter I won't seduce you I'm not that kind plus I know which guys I should lay eyes on and your not one of'em I have class I like'em classy you know

Me:Just don't ever talk to Kelly

Her:Oh I don't promise that like I said we are very close friends

She set on a chair then lotion her legs. Damn they look...

Her: Why you're still standing there go now

Me:Yes

I went to my room

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:47] Lynne: ×•••× 15 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Today I'm going to work I already got an SMS from my manager that I should go back to work. Anyway I'm already done getting ready.I took my things then went to eat breakfast

Me:Morning

Them:Morning

Gabriel: And you?

Me:Me?

Him:Yes

Me:I'm going to work

Him: What do you do?

Me:I'm a model at the Model label C

Peter: What that's where Kelly works

Me: Yes

Peter:Oh God

Gabriel:You're still with Kelly?

Peter: Yes I love her

Gabriel: Oh-ky

Me:That is so cute

Gabriel: Pls don't encourage him

I laughed

Me: Ok I better leave now or I'll be late see Yah

I took my clutch,phone and keys I went to my car I drove to work it felt like I was being followed. The car that was behind me was on my tail the whole time till I get to work but when I parked my car it went pass me.Maybe I'm seeing things.Whatever now I'll start my day being a bitch today is going to

be fun.I took my staff I walked in the girls came to me rushing

"Ahhh I heard you got married"

"What's his name"

"Congratulations"

"Your even glowing"

Me:Well thank you girls it's just that marriage is treating me well

"I hope you're happy"

Me:I'm beyond happy girl

We laughed.I made it worse bcz Kelly was sitting across the room looking at me like she'll chop my head off.

"May I see the ring?"

Me:Sure Darling

They took my hand

"Wow is that a real diamond?"

Me:Well you know me

"Wow I'm so happy for you"

Me:Thank you thank you thank you so much although you guys were not there

"It's ok we were sad but now we're cool"

We laughed

Me:I'm glad

"How is your husband?"

They laughed

"Pls tell us"

Me:Well...He's so handsome like soooooooo handsome

They screamed

"I know you got taste girl I don't doubt you at all"

We laughed Kelly walked to us

Her:Well well well look who decided to show up

Oh this is gonna be fun FUN I'm telling you

Me:Hey Kelly want to see my ring as well?

Her: No I'm cool

Me:Hey I heard it didn't go as planned in Miami girl I thought you said you'll be the "cover girl" of VOUGE

"She stood us up now none of us got that luck"

Me:Whaaaaat? Kelly that wasn't very nice.What happened?

"She was crying none stop"

Me:Poor thing

Her:SHUT UP!

Me:My ear drums you're loud

Her:Pls leave I want to have a serious talk with Mrs here

They left

Me:Mrs Jackson in case you didn't know

I said smiling

Her:Your Mrs Jackson in papers in his heart I am

Me:Phew you're right he sure does love you but you know things changed this girl got on bord I think you

know what I mean so yah

Her:Are you playing a game with me?

Me:A game?

Her:Who will win his heart?

Oh she's going too far but it's worth a try she'll be the one playing but I'll beat her in her own game

Me:You're playing with fire Miss Kelly

Her:Do I look like I care I'll win anyway

Me:Why am I even doing that I'm already the wife so I won

Her:What are you scared you'll break a nail?

I laughed

Me:Oh it's on

Her: Let the game begin

She walked away swinging her ass.She'll play alone bcz I'm not winning no once heart ok? But I'll win this game not his heart do you get me? If not watch and maybe you'll learn something.

-

I Walked to my dressing room my phone rang it was Dad.

Me:Hey Dad

Him: Hey princess how are you?

Me:I'm great you?

Him:Awesome. You disappeared on us

Me:You sold me off Daddy what did you accept

Him:I'm sorry it was a done deal Paige I couldn't back out I was deep in it

Me:It's ok Dad I'm fine

Him:You and your husband get along?

Me:Yes we get along

Him:I'm happy for you really I am

Me:Thanks Dad

Him:Hey I miss you

Me:I miss you too Father

Him:Come and visit pls

Me:I will

Him:Ok bye I love you

Me:I love you more

I dropped the call.I should really consider meeting them more often I really miss them maybe I should try a surprise dinner I know they'll love it.

-

Remeo's POV

I was watching Paige talking to that Kelly girl.Yes I got cameras on her house now.One in the lounge, kitchen,hallway to her door. I see who goes in and out I didn't want it in her room I have manners you know and a gentleman.I won't see her naked if that's what your worried about.Anyway I heard her conversation yesterday and it didn't sit well to me.I can't tell even if she likes him or not. But she saw him kissing another girl she didn't get mad like a wife should.So yah their marriage is just a marriage they don't like each other I'm relived.Nev walked in

Me:Nev my man

Him:Boss you're still into that laptop waiting for her to come back

Me:I just want to see her Nev

Him:At least they don't share a room

Me:I'm relieved there

She walked in

Me:She's in

I wore my headphones Nev listened on the other side.She is alone she is not talking.

Nev:She's going to the kitchen

She went to the kitchen then made something to eat then an old woman walked in they talked while the woman was cooking but their conversation glued me to my chair

Woman:So how is everything going with you and Peter?

Her:Fine

Woman:Fine?

Her:Yes

Then that stupid Peter walked in he went to sit on the TV.

Nev:He is not even greeting her so yah nothing is happening between them

Me:I'm glad Nev

We laughed. Paige went to sit with him

Me:Where is she going?

She went to sit with him the watched the TV.

Her:Can you pls change the channel now

Him: Pls don't abuse me you were not here when I arrived here

Her:A lady is asking Peter pls

Him;No

Me:Do you see Nev if it was me I would have given her same time he's abusing her

Nev: Yes Boss

They kept arguing about changing the channel.

Nev: I smell love with these too

I looked at him

Him:Sorry Boss

Me:You better be sorry

After an hour or two the woman was already gone,Peter was upstairs then a man walked in.

Me: Isn't that?

Us:GABRIEL!!!

Me:Peter is hiding him

Her:Gabriel hey

They hugged

Me:Hugging why?

They set down he took her legs to his lap

Me: Do you feel the heat Nev?

Him:No Boss

Me: I do.He is touching my woman

He was touching her legs and he was massaging her cute little feet

Me:I suppose to do that not Gabriel. Remind me pls Nev why I didn't kill him

Nev:Ah bcz he got away

Me:Yah thats why now I have him and I got many reasons to kill him.She is giggling look at her look at her face she's out of this world. I should be putting that smile on her face I ok i! This is bull shit

Nev:They are having a great time

Me:Pls remind me of killing him plssss do.He doesn't even know her I know her everything about her is right here on my heart.

They ate then went to their rooms. After a lil while Peter went to Paige's room.

Me:What does he want?

Nev:I do not know

Me:At least he knocked today

He went in they closed the door.I can't hear their

conversation bcz the door is closed.He stayed there for a long time

Me:He is taking too long

Nev:Yah

I looked at my watch

Me:15 minutes pass

Nev:Boss what do you think they are doing?

Me:Nothing just talking

20minutes passed

Nev: Time is ticking Boss man

Me:No they are just having an conversation

Nev:Its been a while now

30 minutes passed

Me:Come on Peter

Nev:30 minutes wow

Time passed even more he is still in her room. Am I being tested or what?He has his own room isn't it?

Nev: Boss man 40 minutes passed by now he is good 40 minutes and...

Me: And what? Huh? And what? They are talking just talking

We waited a bit longer still

Nev: He is beating the record it's an hour now

Me: There is no fucken way they are fucking I swear to God I'll rip his throat off I swear it to you!

He finally got out and left

Nev: He looks fresh do you see the way he walks

Me:Nev?

Him:Boss?

Me:Shut up!

He walked away.They didn't do anything

Nev:Explaine the hour him spending there

Me:I think you've seen enough leave my office

Him:Just looking after you Boss

Me:Just go I'm heartbroken

Him:An hour Boss he broke the record he is good I only take 20-25 minutes and you Boss

Me:NEV!!!!!!!!!

Him:I'm going sorry

He ran out.No they didn't fuck right guys? Right?

[12/22, 11:48] Lynne: ×•••× 16 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I woke up did my hygiene process then wore my black leggings, black sport bra,blue denim jacket and black push's.I didn't put on a make up then did a back neat bun.I went downstairs I found no one.I ate breakfast then drove to work listening to Ariana Grande-Monolopy.After sometime I arrived I went inside

"Miss! Miss!"

I turned to see a delivery man holding flowers

Him:Sorry Mrs Jackson

Me:Arg Yah

Him:These are for you and this

Me;Box of chocolates and flowers

Him: Yep

Me:Who gave you these

Him:I didn't see his face

Me: You heard him?

Him: Yes

Me:How was his voice?

Him:Bold not like mine at all

I laughed

Me:Ok ok where was he?

Him:In a black beautiful car

Me:Hm was he around here?

Him:Yes he's car was parked

Me:Oh thank you

I walked away so this person was following me AGAIN.This is very creepy I'm going to the police today. What if he wants to sell me or he's obsess with me.Obsession is not a joke y'all it's very serious and I want to still live my precious life.I went to my dressing room I found the annoying Kelly there.

Me:Hey

Her:Where did you get the flowers?

Oh we are in a game remember guys??? Fun fun fun

Me:Oh these this is nothing I even got chocolates see?

I showed her

Her:Who sent them to you?

Me: What do you mean? Who else will sent them other than my own husband.Pls can you be kind and get them water thank you

Her:Why you're like this?

Me:Like what?

I put down my things

Her:Why you're rubbing this on my face?

Me:Why I'm rubbing this on your face? Do you want me to take you back years ago

Her:Paige I beg you

Me:You slept like my boyfriend that you knew I loved and you were my best friend.You betrayed me Kelly

Her:I was young and stupid

Me:Leave my room Kelly

Her:I love him Paige pls

Me:Leave!!!

She walkaway then stopped by the door

Her:I really love Peter

Me:I loved Leon too.A taste of your own Madison

She left sad and I don't give a shit.My day went like any other.

•

•

•

Time hit 3 we were all going home.I thought its my chance to go to the police station.I drove there I went to someone's desk

Me:Hy

Him: Hy

Me:Where can I find your captain or whatever?

Him:There

He pointed to a far corner office

Me:Thank you

I walked to the office

Him: Oh hello hello you can sit

Me:Thank you

Him:Pls close the door

I did then set down

Him:What brings a beautiful lady like you here?

Me:Oh Captain

Him:What happened?

Me:There is someone following me everyday when going to work actually it started yesterday well I guess. And he keeps sending me gifts and that is very creepy if you ask me

Him:Oh have you seen this person?

Me:No sir not at all

Him:His number plate or whatever that might help?

Me:No no nothing

Him:Hmmm then we don't have a case

Me:Excuse me? Have you seen me? I wouldn't afford being killed I'm way too beautiful to die

Him:You can give me your number so...

Me:Why would I when you not willing to help

Him:Maybe I can hook you up

He said giving me nasty smiles

Me:Are you hitting on me?

Him:If you put it that way

Me:You're a sick bustard

I stood up walking away

Him:Damn

I looked at him

Me:Idiot

Then walked out.I went to my car I drove home.I found Peter lying on the couch maybe he can help me.

Me:Hey

Him:Hey

Me: I need your help

Him:I'm too lazy today

Me:No not now uhm I want you you find me someone

Him:What?

Me:Pls this this guy sending me gifts is really creepy

Him: Be happy you have a secret admire

Me:No I'm not

Him:What do you want me to do chase him away?

Me:I want to know who he is

Him:What do you want me to do?

Me:I don't know Peter think of something what kind of a husband are you?

Him:A husband by a name don't threaten me

Me:I beg you what if this guy is some kind of a psycho?

Him:That is your problem

Me:Peter?

Him:No pls don't

Me:Are you being for real?

Him:Yes and oh Kelly is coming over

Me:Whatever

I walked away

Him:No more snooping

Me: What scared you'll be on her neck like "Oh Peter you're on my neck".I don't care even if you choke her

I walked to my room

•

•

•

Target:::1k likes and 40+ comments

We'll see each other when that happens

[12/22, 11:48] Lynne: ×•••× 17 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was at the kitchen getting a glass of water I was super thirsty

"You wear like this around my boyfriend?"

I turned to see Kelly standing at the door frame with Peter.

Me:Oh hey

I said smiling

Kelly; Really Paige?

Me;It's a free country

Her:This is not a free country this is my boyfriend's house

Me:Actually mine too

Peter:Ladies!

Me:She started it

I walked to them

Her:How could you stoop so low

I laughed

Me:I stooped low? I did?

Her:Paige I...

Me:Peter isn't offended

I turned to look at him

Me:Right Peter? I mean you have seen a girl wearing a bra and panties.You just saw a model for God sake

I laughed

Me:I am too but the one you can't touch

I winked at him smiling then walked upstairs

Kelly:Don't look at her

Peter:I wasn't looking

Oh those two don't know a thing.They wouldn't know what hit'em.I went to my room to continue my morning process then wore blue jeans,tight long sleeve off shoulder crop top and yellow block heels with glass heels.I did my hair then went to eat breakfast.

Me:Hey hey

I noticed Gabriel was not here

Me: Where is Gabriel?

Peter:Ahhh busy with work

Me:The secret work he does Hmmm I see.Can you pass the sauce pls

He passed it

Me:Thank you

I ate

Him:Can you and Kelly get along pls

Me: We do get along

Him:Look I've been with Kelly for years and I don't want to lose her

Me:Years?

Him:5 years actually

Me:And you guys always been together ever since?

Him:Yes Paige

Me:Wait like you never had a fight or take a break or something?

Him:No Paige we had rough time with our relationship bcz of the marriage

Me:Wow

Him:No hard feelings

Me:No its cool

When I think of it when Peter and Kelly were together Kelly slept with Leon MY BOYFRIEND so that only

means SHE CHEATED.

Me:You've never cheated on her?

He smiled

Him:No this was my first time bcz of stress

Me:Didn't she cheat on you?

Him:No no Kelly is not like that

Me:Hmm I see

Him:Why asking all of that

Me: Nothing

Him:I better go to work

Me: Yes oh...wait uhm...your tie

Him:It won't just...

He said getting it on but struggling his fingers are crossing up and down I had no idea what was he doing.

Me:Let me help

I went to him I started fixing his tie

Him: You're sure you can?

Me:Yes so chill

Him: Fine

Me:Why you're so nervous?

Him:I have an meeting I'm even sweaty

Me:Is it huge?

Him:It's a huge thing

Me:Well good luck

Him:Thank you I'll need it

Me: Sure

Him: Thanks for the tie I like it you should make my tie more often

Me:As you wish

We laughed

Me:Ok go

Him:Bye

Me:Bye

He left.

•

•

•

I'm at my dressing room at work with Kim

Kim:Tell me you're kidding

Me:I'm telling you no lies.Kelly slept with Leon a year ago and few months

Her:This can ruin her and Peter

Me:I know

She gave me a smiley smiley face

Me:What?

Her: You know

Me:I don't actually

Her:Come on

Me:Come on what?

Her:He will be yours

Me:Pardon me Kim?

Her:Come on he's your husband and he's banging your frenemy under your roof

Me:Pls highlight your point

Her:Tell Peter the truth

Me: its not my place Kim and he really loves Kelly

Her:He does?

Me:Girl if you could hear how he talks her when she's not around I would melt if a man would say that to someone

Her: He's confused I mean look at you duhh you're a sauce

Me:Not many guys see that

Her:Yah bcz they're stupid

Me: Let's drop this topic Kim

Her: But Pa...

Me:Kim I'm not Kelly and I won't win a man's heart by sleeping with'em if he that's the only way then I'm

not interested

Her:So you like him

Me: Pls leave

Her:You're mad bcz I'm telling the truth

Me:Kim Kim!

Her:Ok OK I'm going

She stood up

Her:Oh you like him

Me:I do not

Her:You do

Me:Leave!

She left laughing idiot. Imagine me and Peter together ew ew ewww.

•

•

•

After work I went to the salon to cut my hair. I want

to get rid of the mass in my hair right now. So I made it shorter and I straightened it plus it's black.Anyway after that I went home I found no one.I threw myself on the couch then I became busy on my phone suddenly I got a creepy text

"Looking good in that new hair"

Me:Who are you?

"The love of your life"

Me:Look stop texting me

"I can't"

Me:Just stop ok

[I blocked him]

I can't stand that then Peter walked in.

Me: Peter oh thank God you're here come here

He came to me I showed him the messages

Him:Ohw

Me:"Ohw"? "Ohw"?

Him:What do you want my to say

Me:Pls track him or do something I beg you

Him:I got things to do

Me:Excuse me?

Him:Bye

I drag him to sit down

Me:Pls

He over powered me to get up

Me:Peter pls

I pushed him he set down

Me:Pls

Him:No Paige I got work to do

He walked away I set down crying (crocodile tears) I'm treaking him I bet it works.He set next to me

Me:Just go away

Him:Ok I'm sorry

Me:Just leave it's clear you don't care

Him:Paige I'm sorry

Me:Leave!

He hugged me

Him:I'm sorry I'll help you

Me: You promise?

Him:I promise

We broke the hug he whipped my tears.

Him: Just don't cry OK?

I nodded

Him: Look at me

I did he smiled

Him:Better

I smiled too

Him:I'll help you

Me:Thank you

Him:I'll go and uhm take a bath

Me:Yah sure

He left. Yes yes yes I should consider acting bcz I'm

very good. By the way that was weird I felt weird around him.Anyway I also went to take a bath

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

Nev:Am I the only one who saw a spark there?

Me: Nev will you shut up

Him: Yah I should bcz they will track you

Me:Destroy the phone I can't let her find out about me like this

Him:Like what Boss?

Me:Nothing Nev

Him:Other than the fack that you're ugly

I looked at him

Him:Sorry Boss

I gave him a nasty look

Him: You're handsome Boss

Me:Good Nev

He mumbled something

Me:Nev I'll crush you to mini Peace's

Him:Sorry Boss man

Me: Anyway make sure these two don't get too close I don't like the fact that he even hugged her

Him:But last night...

I hit his head

Him:Ouch!

Me:Nothing happened you idiot but if he tries something funny I swear I'll kill him

Him: Like kill kill?

Me:Do you know other?

Him:No Boss remember...

Me:Oh I know I tried killing that bustard for years he always survivors or get away

Him:He's a cat

Me; What?

Him:He's a cat

Me: Why he's a cat

Him: Oh you don't get it.He's a cat bcz a cat got 9 lives get it?

Me:You're the most stupid right hand man on earth

Him:Oh come on Boss that wasn't very nice

Me:Go and get my ship ready for tonight bcz you're...

Him:Noway Boss Ben should do it what if she walks naked again Hmmm

Me:She was naked?

Him:This morning Boss you were not around then

Me:You spied on my woman and saw her naked and I didn't?

Him:Yah Boss

Me:Get out of here Nev I don't want to see her anyway I want to see her infront of my eyes when she will say "I'm all yours"

Him:Ah Boss sorry to interrupt but you're sure she'll ever fall for you?

Me:And why not?

Him:I don't want to say bad things about my Boss

Me:Nev talk or I'll...

Him:Ok fine.You kill people, you torture them,you on illegal business,you...

Me:Ok ok I hear you Nev and Peter?

Him:She doesn't know about him well yet and they don't even date.And you you love her I'm the only person who can agree on that bcz you do.You love this girl since you lay eyes on her you've been following her around and everything. Just know once you get her and she finds out about this she may not want you anymore

Me:If I have to quit Nev for her I will I swear I will

Him:I'll support you Bcz I'm your best friend

Me:Yah you my best friend too

Him: And I love you man

Me:Don't push it

Him:Sorry.But Boss what if she rejects you?

Me:Wow I never thought of that Nev I don't know what I will do.I don't know

•

•

•

Unknown POV

I'm back to my home city its been a while.I can't even to see my friends and family. Its been so long 8 years ain't a joke.Finally I can feel the fresh air its so relieving.Many faces will be shocked by this face.

•

•

•

I wonder who is on board ppl.Care to guess our new Character?

•

Target:::1.5k likes and 50+ Comments

We'll see each other then

Admin

[12/22, 11:48] Lynne: ×•••× 18 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me:Peter! Peter!

I said yelling his name bcz someone is here for him(one of his girls)

Me:He's coming

Her:Ok

She said in a low sweet voice

Me:So what's your name?

Her:Lauren

Me:Oh Lauren I see so what's your relationship with

Peter

Her:Who are you his wife?Bcz I heard he has one and I don't want problems

Me:You came to his house who do you expert?

Her:I used to come here and...

Me: Whatever

Her:You're the wife?

Peter came running downstairs the look on his face was priceless

Him:Lauren what are you doing here?

Me:Why are you asking her that

Lauren: Yah why are you asking me that? Bcz you don't answer my calls Peter why?

Me:Yah why?

Peter:Paige pls.Ahhh Lauren pls I'm busy can we talk later ?

Me:No dude talk to her now

Peter:Paige shhhh

Me:Don't shush me

Lauren: Yah don't shush her

Me:Yes girl

We did high five

Me:Now talk

Peter:I got no time for this

Lauren:Oh you'll make time

Me:Hm

Him:Lauren pls leave

Me:What for?

Lauren got a call

Her:Wait a minute...

Her;Hello

...

Her:Oh I'll be there right away

She dropped the call

Her: I gotta bounce a real emergency came up but

this ain't over Mr Jackson

Me:See you girl

Her:Yah see you

She left I closed the door then went to sit down

Peter:Were you taking her side?

Me:Yes

Him:Why?

Me:Bcz she is a victim in your little scandal

Him:A victim? oh pls

Me:Yes a victim you are the one after them

He laughed

Him:No they are the once who come to me

Me:Oh really? Oh poor thing

He came to sit next to me

Him:Ok fine few girls but her she came to me

Me:And you claim you love Kelly

He looked away

Me: When you love someone you don't lie

Him:I'm not lying to her

Me:You're sleeping with bitches Peter

Him:No...well yes but what she doesn't know won't hurt her

Me:You once said you never cheated on her what happened

Him:Nothing why so many questions?

He said stooding up I pulled him down

Me:No don't go I need an answer

Him:It's nothing

He set down I made him to look at me

Me:Look Peter you're hurting her most importantly yourself. If you truly love her let this go focus on her or you'll regret it. This will break her fix your things with Kelly Bcz she needs love from a man she loves I know she does.I've once been there being cheated on and it hurts like hell.You'll break her

I didn't realise I dropped a tear he whipped it

Him:I'm sorry

He said in a low note

Me:You love her right?

He paused

Me:Peter?

...

Me: Peter?

He snapped back

Me:What?

Him:Nothing and yes well I think so

Me:You're doubting your feelings?

Him:I don't know

Me:Well I tried talking to you I don't want drama with Kelly I know how she can get.She loves you

Him:You've been hurt before?

Oh he's changing the topic

Me:Yes

Him:How what happened

Me:No it's a very long, emotional uhm story I rather not talk about it

Him:Pls

Me: No...

Him:Pls I'm a very good listener I tell you

I laughed

Me:I don't want to cry

Him:You're a strong girl and you won't if you've gotten over that guy

Me:It happened a year ago I saw him in bed with someone I called a friend, sister.They betrayed me that I'll never forgive them,ever.I trusted them I loved them Peter I loved him.I saw them rolling in sheets together having sex. My heart stopped for a minute I couldn't believe my eyes. I finally took it as it is

Him: Wow and what did they say?

Me:He apologized and I've never seen him since

Him:And your friend

Me:She never felt sorry for doing it,she never felt sorry for my hurting, tears,broken heart

Him:She was heartless

Me:She is heartless Peter maybe one thing can change her

Him:And that is?

Me: Love

Him:How can love change someone?

Me:It can her life was always upside down she only needed love.Well I think

Him:She can only change by herself Paige. The only person that needs love here is you

Me:Why?

Him:Your hurt

•

•

•

NARRATED

The story that Paige said touched Peter's heart and she didn't know Paige have been through so much pain. And he is not the only one that felt pain also Nev and Romeo who were watching them.But Romeo didn't like how they were close to each other

Nev:This is so sad

Romeo:Why he's touching her cheek?

He wasn't feeling it at all.On the other hand Peter and Paige are on their own world they got caught up in the moment of pain then something happened.Peter ended up kissing Paige I don't know why but to her it felt right to Peter it was everything. Let's not mention Romeos jealousy he was breathing fire but couldn't do anything about it.Anyway back to the kiss.They kissed patiently Paige's thoughts were "What the hell am I doing!!!!!!!!!!!!!" But Peter's thoughts were "I can't believe I kissed her".Paige finally pulled out

Her:No no no no

Peter:I'm so sorry

Her:I'm sorry too

She stood up

Peter:Pls don't go I kissed you

Her: Yah but I'm also at fault I kissed you back

He tried apologising

Her: I better go and take a nap I'm kinds tired

She walked upstairs Peter was left speechless then Gabriel walked in

Him: My man

Peter: Yah

Him: What happened to you your eyes are red

Peter:I'm tired I better go and sleep

Him:Uhm ok

He ran upstairs

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Hour's later

I've been awake a long time ago and thinking about the incident that happened earlier. What the hell am I going to do? How will I look at Peter in the eyes again? How will stay under the same roof at him? Well we just kissed nothing more.And I'm hungry I need something to eat I hope he is not downstairs. I walked out slowly I looked around I saw no one then walked to the kitchen I made something to eat

" Finally "

I turned to lock my eyes with Peter. God pls swallow me now

Me:Finally what?

Him:You came out of your room

I kept mixing something I had no idea what I was making but I was hungry

Me: I was sleeping

Then awkward silence

Me:Look Peter about the kiss let's forget it it was a mistake ok?

Him: Yah I agree

Me:Great

He left

Him:Oh one more thing

Me;Wht?

Him:Your lips said the opposite

Then he left.WTF?

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:49] Lynne: ×•••× 19 ×•••×

•

•

•

Me:No no no Who's calling?

I said picking my phone up

Me: You better be dying

"Honey"

Me:Mom?

Her:Hey honey

Me:Mom it's 4 in the morning

Her: Yah I know I've been thinking about you

Me:Oh Mom I was sleeping

Her:I know I felt like you needed me

Me:I'm fine Mom

Her:Are you sure?

Me:Yes Mom

Her:Oky but I don't buy that

Me:Mom I need to sleep

Her: Ok I love my

Me:I love you too Mom

I dropped the call.Arg I wouldn't be able to sleep again.I put on silk gown,sleepers then went back get something to drink. I poured some juice I set on the high chair then all of a sudden the kiss popped in my

mind. This is why I wanted sleep to not think about what happened between me and Peter.Gosh I can't believe we kissed I don't want Kelly's drama at all.

"You're up early"

I saw Peter shirtless. Why he always shirtless? Damn

Me:Yes I couldn't sleep

Him:Me too

He poured water

Me:Oh why's that?

Him;I've been thinking

Me:Oh I gotta go

Him:Wait

I looked at him

Him:Don't you think we need to talk

Me:About?

Him:About what happened Paige

Me:Peter? There's nothing to talk about let's forget it

Him:Are you sure?

Me:Look it was a mistake...right?

He took time answering

Him:Yah

Me:Cool...friends?

Him:Friends

Me:Awesome

I went to my room to get ready for work.

•

•

•

"Paige!"

Me:Mr Jones

Him: All of this needs to go

I looked around I saw red Rose's

Me: Woahw wait are these for me?

Him:Look Paige this is your work place tell your

husband to not send flowers here

Me:I'm sorry Mr Jones it will never happen again

Him:It better not

He left.Oh God who is this stocker he will get me fired.The cleaners were taking them outside. I went to my dressing room...

•

•

•

Unknown POV

Me:Romeo my man

Him:Man!

We bro hugged

Him:It's been ages

Me:I know I know but I'm back now

Him:I'm glad I missed you actually we missed you

He said pointing to his workers

Me:I know you did

We laughed

Him:So how was L.A?

Me:Fine and I saw cool chicks there

We laughed

Him:You and girls

Me:You know me

Him:Oh bro i got a problem

Me:A problem?

Him:Remember Peter Jackson?

Me: How could I not remember that jerk ass

Him:Well him very well we are enemy's now

Me:You've always enemy's with him

Him: I mean in the business too

Me:Oh?

Him:Yes man and now he's married to the love of my life

I laughed

Him:Stop laughing I'm dead serious

Me:Bro you're in love with someone?

Him:Yes Jason I am

Me:Ohhh I'm sorry.What happened?

Him:They were forced to get married

Me:Oh that's sad

Him:Yah but that idiot is trying by all means to win her heart

Me: And you?

Him: I can't face her

Me:Dude man up maybe she may fall for you

Him:Yah man maybe you're right

Me:Go and get your girl I gotta get mine

Him: Yours?

Me:Yes I dated a girl here but I left our relationship ended now I'm back to have her back

Him:Oh I remember you telling me about her "the girl who stole my heart" you used to say that

Me:And yes she did. I lost contact of her she'll be happy to see me

Him:What if she already moved on?

Me:She's mine Romeo and no one else's

Him:I take your word

Me:Good

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me:I don't feel good

Kim:Why?

Me:I don't know why my stomach get the creeps

Her:Maybe you're PREGNANT!!!

Me:What?

Her:Just sayin

Me:Arg Kim I feel like something wrong will happen or I'll get bad news

Her:Your exaggerating Paige just go home and relax

Me:Yah you're right

Her:Bye

Me: Bye

I took my staff then went to out to my car.I drove to the house I went in.I found Peter working on something and got glasses on he looked sooo funny I ended up laughing I couldn't hold it back.

Him; What?

Looking at me

Me:Nothing

Him;Oh no it's something.

I went to him

Me:Its nothing

I said it between giggles then we heard a door bell I

went to open

"Guys guys we got a problem"

It was Peter's brother he said getting tight in

Him: Take off those glasses man you look ridiculous I told you that million time already

He did

Me:What is the problem?

Him:Oh Granny is coming tomorrow

Me:Oh I know her

Him: No you don't

Peter: Granny J!?

He was so shocked

Him:Yes man tomorrow

Me:Who ar...

Peter:Wait here?

Him:Yes man

Peter:No man no she's too...

Him:Controlling yah I know

Me:Is she...

Peter:So at what time?

Him:I don't know

Peter; But I don't want her here

Him; You guys have you act like a couple since she'll be around

Me: But...

Peter:Oh she doesn't know...she thinks I married someone I loved I totally forgot that

Him:You guys better get it together tomorrow or...

Me: OR WHAT!?

they both looked at me

Me;Finally I spoke my mind out

I said calming down bcz Peter have been cutting me off

Peter:Or...I don't know Paige she is really crazy

Him:I better leave but get ready

He left

Me: Are ypu all like this in yout family?

Him:Like what?

Me:Fun unlike you ofcause

Him:I need to work

Me:I need to sleep

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:49] Lynne: ×•••× 20 ×•••×

•

•

•

"Paige"

Someone knocked on my door.After that I heard ppl talking

"Honey open up"

Honey?

"Come on Beab I said I'm sorry about last night?"

Have Peter gotten crazy or what?I went to open

Me:Why you're calling me that

Then I saw him shirtless with a lady see his abs make me lose control of my MIND

Me:Who are you?

Peter:Love this is my Grandmother

He said smiling and holding my waist mine I pushed him

Him; Still mad about last night? I said I'm sorry love

G.ma:I need to eat the breakfast is already ready she went downstairs

Me:What the fuck?

Him:Pretending Paige pretend

Me:Ohhh I forgot I'm sorry

Him:It's ok from now on follow my lead

Me:Yes sir

Him: Let's go and eat

Me:When did she arrive anyway?

Him:I don't know

We ran downstairs we took our seats

Me:Hmmm it smells delicious

She just looked at me then to her plate I clock eyes with Peter then to our plates.This is gonna be a long long ride with her

G.ma:I like the room you slept in last night it will be my room now

Pardon me?

Me:Oh hell...

Peter: Yes! Hell yes G.ma

I look at Peter

Him;Me and my wife got into an argument last night it's fine now Beab you can sleep with me now like before

What?

Me;Uhhh

G.ma:Ok great I'll be out for the day I'll see you later

Us: Ok G.ma

She tool her bag

Her: Oh and those are my bags

I looked and I saw the whole closet SHE IS STAYING oh no better yet MOVING! NOOO! She left

Me:Is she moving in here?

Peter:I don't know

Me: Is that bag designed by...OMG it is

I said getting close to it

Me:It is right?

Peter:I don't have

Me:Your G.ma got class

She has designer bags

Me: This is still new I wanted it so bad but my eye caught those new heels and I couldn't let it pass you know

I said laughing

Peter:I gotta get ready for work

Me:Wait hold on this means starting from now on I sleep with you?

Him:Yes

Me: We share bed?

Him:Yes

Me:Bathroom?

Him: Yes

Me: Shower?

Him:Yes

Me:Everything?

Him: Everything like a real couple

Me:Whatever Mr know it all

I.was panicking

Me:For how long?

Him: Till she goes back home

We looked at her luggage

Me:And she ain't going back sooner

Him: Nor later

Me; This is a nightmare.

Him:I'll call Mam Maria to move your things while we'll be at work

Me:But I've never shared anything in my life EVER Peter I do not share I'm a very selfish person

Him:I'll manage bcz I couldn't manage that old hag's drama

Me:Big mama drama

Him:Get ready for work Paige

Me:Yes Sir

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

Me: Someone is testing meeeeeee I swear

Nev:Oh Boss this ain't good

Me:Tell me something I don't know Nev!

Him:You know everything I know Boss...

Me:Shut up Nev my future wife is sharing a room with that bustard

Nev:You mean her husband?

Me: Nev which side are you on?

Him:On yours ofcause

Me:Then act like you are get rid of that old hag and my Paige go back to her bedroom

Him: Get rid of her?

Me:Yes Nev!

Him:Like kill her?

Me:No Nev I don't kill ppl

He looked at me

Me:Scare her

Him:Yes Boss oh but how?

Me:Nev! Figure it out you're a smart guy

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I went to Spur first I need lunch

"Paige?"

I turned to see Jason

Me:Jason?

Him:Paige

We hugged.Oh my God Jason is my ex my favourite ex really the one I told you guys about. We broke up because he moved.Oh my I can't blv I'm hugging the love of my life.He is really.We broke the hug

Him:Wow you look beautiful actually you're still beautiful

Me:Oh thank you you're still handsome as well

Actually freaken HOT

Him:You're so big my God

We laughed

Me:Shut up

Him:I'm serious I still remember you little we little we would sneek out of our homes to be together.Remember those times

Me:I do actually Jason

He saw my ring

Him:Oh your married?

Me:Yes

I said sad

Him:Who's the lucky guy

Me:Some guy

Him;He's very lucky very

Me:Thank you

Him:So Mrs...

Me:Jackson Mrs Jackson

Him:Ok Mrs Jackson your husband wouldn't mind an old friend getting her old friends number right?

Me:No not all

He gave me his phone I typed my number

Him:Thank you

Me: Welcome

He left.Yeessss Jason OMG it's been years and Years and I still love him the same he just does sOmEtHiNg to me.Oh God

•

•

•

I'm tired I'll continue tomorrow guys

[12/22, 11:49] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After meeting with Jason and brought my spur ribs I

went to work.i walked in I saw Kim

Me:Kim!

I ran to her

Her: Hey girl

Me:Guess who I saw?

Her;I'm terrible at this game

"Paige you're next in 30 ok?"

Me:Lauren I just arrived

Her:The director said that

Me: But that ain't fair

"Paige"

Me:Ma'am

Her:I see you're giving Lauren some hard time.Kim go and shoot Lauren meeting

They left

Her:And as for you Mrs Jackson go and get ready for your shoot you're shooting in 10

Me:But...

Her:In 10 Jackson and get rid of those ribs you're already gaining wait and that is not good for our company

She left I swear if she wasn't my Boss I would have strangled her by now.But wait did she say I'm FAT?

•

•

•

It's late I'm back at the house I found Maria

Me:Hey Ma

Her: Hey Babe I was about to leave dinner is ready

Me:Ok is anyone here?

Her:The Grandma only

"Don't you ever call me that"

She said walking downstairs

Her:Call me Mama Marry

Me:What?

Her:Oh dinner is ready? I thought I'll eat the food my daughter in-law made

Me:Oh I'm sorry I was at work

Her:Sure you were

Maria:I'll go now

Me:Ok bye

Her:Bye

She left I went to sit on the table Peter walked in looking tired it's the first time seeing him like this

G.ma:Oh my boy you look tired

Him:I'm very tired G.ma

Her:Oh I'll dish up for you even if its not my job

She said looking at me.Is she saying I should dish up for him doesn't he have hands.Well my Mom always dish up for Dad.I watched this Lady dishing up for Peter glancing at me then and then I absolutely didn't care

Peter:Thanks Grandma

Her:Welcome my child

I wanted to disappear so they can live in their little bubble

G.ma:So what do you do uhmm

Me:Paige

Her:Oh Paige

Me:I'm a model

Her:Oh my grandson loves models

She laughed looking at Peter they both laughed

Her:Actually I heard he was dating a model but when I saw you...

Me:What are you trying to say Grandma?

She gave me a stare I returned the favour

Her:I'm not trying to say anything I'm saying you don't look like a model

Me:Shall I take that as an complement?

Her:I don't know is that good thing?

Grandmaaaaaaa I'll murder her I swear.I can read

between the lines she is saying I'm fat

Me:I'm full excuse me

Her:Good for you hey you should hit a gym you know just in case

I walked upstairs pissed asf she is saying I'm fat guys i mean there's Noway in the world I would ever get fat EVER.I went to Peter's room I still can't blv I'm sharing a bed with him.I went to the big large mirror he has there I took off my jacket and shirt. Am I really fat? Well I got few clothes that don't fit anymore but that doesn't mean anything.Anyway I look good at these jeans.Peter walked in

Him:Paige God put on something

He said covering his face

Me:Stop being dramatic

I closed the door

Me:Look at me

He did

Me:Am I fat? Are my boobs too big or my ass big?

Please say something

He just starred at me

Me: Peter? You've seen a naked girl before and I'm even that naked I got a bra and jeans on

He cleared his throat

Him: Uhm you're fine

Me:Peter be specific pls

Him:Ahhh...

Me:Ok are my boobs too big?

Him:Ah..

Me:Want a closer look or what? Peter pls work with me do I really need to hit a gym?

Him:Your perfect Paige

Me:No don't bore me and now how about my ass?

Him:It's ahh..

Me:I don't want a huge ass pls I'm a model although I have an ass naturally...Peter God

Him: Can we sleep pls

Me:You're running away?

He went to the shower

Me:Whatever

After a while the Grandma walked in

Me:Grandma didn't your Mom teach you to knock you would have seen things that are very disturbing

Her:Oh

She said in a low note

Me:Can I help you ?

Her:Oh I wanted Peter to help me

Me:Oh he's taking a shower I was about to join him...do you mind?

Her:Oh no not at all

Me:Bye

Her: Hm

She left.I'll show her a good wife arg what am I saying maybe she can get me out of here so I can live my life like how I wanted.But what about Peter?

No what about the kiss we shared? It meant nothing right Paige? The kiss meant nothing and since now Jason is back? Oh God Jason I still love him well I think so.You love him right Paige?

"A lot in your mind?"

I saw Peter shirtless

Me: Do you hate clothes that much

Him:What do my abs bother you?

I laughed well actually they do

Me:What? No

Him:Then leave me alone

Me:Whatever

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me and Kelly actually call it quits.I still love her though well I thought so

Paige: Hey

...

Her:I'm with ahhh...

...

Her:Yes you guessed right

She laughed

Her: Nothing

...

Her:I'm kidding I'm kidding

She said giggling

Her:Shut up no

...

Her:We'll see

...

Her: Bye

She dropped the call smiling

Me:What makes you so happy?

Her:Oh nothing

She went to the bathroom leaving her phone after few minutes she got a call.I don't answer another persons phone it rang 3 times.After that messages now it's getting on my nerve

Me:Paige! Your phone

She came out

Her:Why didn't you answer?

Me:I don't do that

Her;Next time pls do see it was Mom...

I got undercovers I was already on my boxers

Her:Don't you have...pjs or something?

Me:I don't like'em

Her:You hate clothes period

She went to the bathroom with her pjs she came back wearing them

Her:My side and your side

Me: I get that

Her:I'm crazy sleeper ok.don't judge me

Me:Ok

I turned off my side lamp she turned off hers

Her:Your bed is really big

Me:I know

Her:Wait the sheets are changed right?

Me:Yes

Her:Thank God I wouldn't stand sleeping in your bed as your...

Me:As my what?

Her:Actually as "Ahhhh Peter yes yes yes harder harder oh you're on my chest" if you know what I mean

Me:Please sleep

She laughed

Her:Sleep tight

This means extra drama now I'll sleep with her

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:50] Lynne: ×•••×21×•••×

•

•

•

I heard Peter talking on the phone

Him:Can we meet?

...

Him: I beg you

...

Him: I am faithful to you Beab

...

Him:Kelly? Kelly? Hel...Damn she dropped it

I woke up

Me: Morning

Him:Oh morning I hope I didn't wake you

Me:Actually you did but it's ok.So do you jog?

Him:No

Me:Gym? Something?

Him:Only gym but not everyday only when I'm free

Me: I'd like to gym too

Him:Why?

Me:Well ppl are saying I'm fat I mean I have a body to die for right?

Him:Uhm

Me:I do but ppl are just jealous but I'll gym just in case.So when are we going to the gym?

Him: I don't know I'm still stuck up at work

Me:Poor thing

Him: I'll shower

Me:Sure

Chris called

Me:Brother

Him:Sis how are you holding up?

Me: Great so far and you at home?

Him:Awesome but we miss you and your cooking

Me:Oh I'm really flattered I'll come by anytime and surprise you guys with dinner

Him:Oh no no that won't be necessary me: Is fine you're my family and I love you

Him:It's fine really

Me:No I'll come by

Him:Oh can't wait

Me:I know you can't bye

Him:Bye

I dropped the call I know they miss my cooking although I mass up little things.Peter comes out of the bathroom

Him:You can go

Me:Yes yes

I took out my outfit for the day then went to

shower.After that I lotion then wore my dusty pink short dress with ghost heels no make up I just did a messy bun.I went to the bedroom

Peter:Wow you actually look good without make up

The first person to tell me that

Me:Really?

Him:Yah and I like your hair like that

Me: You do?

Him: Yah

Me:Thank you you're the first person to tell me that

Him:Everyone around you is blind then

Me: Oh ok Mr Jackson I get it

I said laughing

Him: Can you do my tie again

Me:Let's go and eat breakfast first

Him:Sure

We walked downstairs we found Granny already dishing up for her and Peter. Nah I don't care.We set

down

G.ma:Oh my son your face looks awful did you get enough sleep?

Ofcause he did

Peter:Yes G.ma I did

Me:Why wouldn't he...G.ma?

Her:I don't know

Me:Oh we slept like babies last night nothing bothered us

Her:Hmmm

Then there was a moment of silence.

Her:So when are we having little Jackson's?

Me:Huh?

Peter's drink choked him

G.ma:When are you guys giving us an heir?

Oh I'll put this woman where she wants me to put her bcz she is irritating

Me:Oh we are...working...on that right my love?

I smiled Peter was confused

Peter:Ah yes yes uhm we are...

Me: It's just we ain't in a rush and kids are a very big responsibility plus we are still young

Her:And that's the spirit you're still young your eggs are still fresh

Me: It's just we have careers we can't bail on them kids can take a lot of space in their parents life

Her:You're actually a very smart little thing huh?

Me:I'll take that as a compliment

I sipped on my juice looking away

Peter:I better go to work

Me:Honey your tie

I walked to him I did his tie G.ma on the other hands is looking at us like he wants me to disappear

Me:There we go

I kissed his chin

Me:Have a great day at work I love you

Him:Ah I love you too

He walked out. Arg if that's how I should act from now on forget it I'm never doing that again.

G.ma:Hmmm

Then she left that old hag

×

×

×

Peter's POV

I drove to work I went straight to my office I found Josh there

Me:Why you always do this?

Him:Oh good morning to you too and someone is glowing

Me:I'm not glowing Kelly broke up with me

Him:Oh that's sad

Me: I'm serious Josh you know I love Kelly

Him: You have a hot wife now

Me:Josh pls

Him:Don't tell me that glow is because of her

Me:If you're gonna annoy me pls leave

Him:Oh sorry I came to see you

Me:I'm doing horrible horrible even Grandma is back

Him:Your Grandma?

Me:Yes mine

Him:Which one that evil one?

Me:Hey she's not evil well not that much

Him: How is he coping with your wife do they get along?

Me:No not at all they hate each other I can see it they always argue. And Grandma wants us to have babies

Him:So?

Me:So?

Him:That's Paige Mahone dude hit that

Me: Paige is not like other girls

Him: Ofcause she's not she's your wife

Me:No I will not sleep with her

Him:Come on you're even sharing a bed now right?

Me:Yes but...

Him:There we go this should be easy just seduce her

Me: Josh no she is a very sensitive person

Him:Come on little rounds won't hurt

Me:No no and no I won't do that

Him:You're missing out

Me:I will never take an advice from you just get that

Him:Ok I tried you will be getting some pussy tonight but your stubborn

Me:Shut up Josh

•

•

•

After work I went home I found no one I went

straight to my room I heard someone crying

Me:Paige?

I walked in she was crying on the bed her body squeezed to her

Me:Paige what's wrong what happened to you? Did someone hurt you? Paige

I brushed her shoulder

Her:Yes

Me:Who who did it?

Her:Oh Peter they hurt me so much

She set up

Me: Who are they?

I whipped her tears

Her: They've hurt me right here

She said pointing to her heart

Me:How? Tell me pls don't cry

Damn her eyes glow when she cries

Me:Don't cry no more.How did they hurt you

I'll hurt them too I swear

Her:They said I'm fat

She cried even worse.Is that why she's crying? Oh girls

Me:Oh that is...uhm

Her:I mean I eat healthy right?

Me:ah yes

No you don't

Her:I have a banging body look at me.And they have a nerve to say I'm fat I'll ruin their business now

Me:They are talking rubbish you're not fat

Actually she did gain wait remember she likes take aways

Her:Oh Peter they fired me

Me:What?

Her:They did I lost my job my life.I don't get it

She went to the mirror

Her:I don't look...fat fat Peter I do fst.

She was to cry

Me:No no no you're not

Her:Look at this Peter don't you dare lie to me I gained wait. I'm fat Paige now my figure is gone my boobs are big they are so disgusting

Me:You hate big boobs?

Her:Yes and you?

Me:Well uhm

Her:You don't too you like those skinny girls

Me:Well big boobs are a big deal you know

Her: That won't make me feel better. How about my ass? Look at it argggg let's hit a gym quick Peter I can't live like this

Me:You look...uhm fine

Her:I do not want to look fine I want to look hot get it?

Me:Yah get it

Her:This is humiliating. Imagine me getting pregnant

I have to keep up on being fat

Me:A pregnant lady looks very sexy

Her:Peter no don't lie why you like lying so much they look fat and fat is a very horrible word

Me:It's their body and that's your body you don't have to change for anyone else

Her: Aw some encouraging words but nahhh I ain't encouraged. Let's hit a gym you need to train me.I need all of this fat gone

Me:Could I do all that

Her:You're a very muscular guy come on you got arms

Let me tell you this she was holding my arms saying that

Her:You got arms,chest,abs and...

She bite her lip then cleared her throat

Her:I mean you can handle me

She touched me then bite her lip hmmm

Me; Nothing I can't handle

Her:Awesome oh it's hot here

Me:Really?

Her:Yah very very hot

Me:Hmmm

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Hooo I touched his chest,abs,arms he's strong very strong doesn't he squeeze poor girls.He's so hot Kelly got something here but she's too stupid to notice that.

Him:I got to work

Me; Sure

He took off his blazer,tie and shirt he was left with a wife beater. His arms Imagine yourself Paige lying there hmmm.What? No no I will never do that

never.But wow.He took his laptop and started working. I looked at myself in the mirror I saw a PIMPLE again.

Me:Peter Peter

I ran to him

Me: Look closely

Him: Uhm

It was next my mouth

Him:I don't see anything oh oh I see it a pimple

Me:Oh no how will I walk around with pimple I think your house hates me

Him:My house doesn't hate you and no one can see that

Me: Pop it pls

Him:What?

Me: Pop it

Him: I'll make it worse

Me;I'll take care of it after that

Him:Why don't you do it you have long nails

Me:Peter pls

Him:Ok

He pop it

Him:Done

Me:Oh thank you I didn't even feel a thing

Him: I think I saw another one

Me:Really? Where?

Him:Right here

He kissed me

•

•

•

To be continued...she

[12/22, 11:50] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

This dude actually kissed me and he crossed his line the RED line

"Peter my boy I wante...Oh sorry"

We saw Granny entering the room

Her: Sorry to interrupt

Peter:Uhm it's ok

Her:Excuse me

She looked at me then walked out I slapped Peter right there

Him:Ouch! What was that for?

Me:Don't you ever lay a hand on me

Him:You asked me

Me:The kiss was not part of the deal Mr

Him:I'm sorry

Me;These lips don't just kiss anyone OK? But that was really good you have hmmm hooo I need a shower

I walked to the bathroom. Gosh he's lips taste good but no I'm not going on that same road again no noway.I took my shower then wrap a towel on I went back to the bedroom

Me:What?

He was looking at me

Him:You got a message

Me:From who?

I took my phone

Me:Oh

{Goodnight beautiful}

From: Jason

Ok that got me smiling like a fool

Peter:Seeing someone?

Me:Well you can say that

Him;Hmmm

I set next to him

Me:What's with you and Kelly?

Him:Nothing

Me:I can see through you now tell me

I said getting comfortable on the bed

Him: We broke up

Me:Why?

Him:About you and me sharing a room

Me:Is that all?

Him:Yes

Me:ok stop lying

Him:That's all for real

Me:Peter

Him;Ok she left me! Happy!

He shouted

Me:I---i---i'm sorry

I said frightened

Him:I'm sorry--- it's just it's the company, marriage, family and Kelly I couldn't hold it in

I was actually very hurt

Me:Am I bothering you?

Him:No!...Yes!...I don't know

Me:Wow

I went to the closet to take out my night dress

Him:Paige?

Me:Don't pls

I went to the bathroom I lotion then wore my night dress. I walked out Peter was under the blanket just starring at me

Me:I'll sleep on the guest room

He ran to close the door like lock it

Me:Peter I ain't playin witchu ok give me the keys

Him:Pls stay what about Grandma?

Me:She needs to know the truth

Him:Who knows what she may do after that comes out

Me;Mr Jackson I don't stay up late I love my face

and I'm not planning on having eye bags

Him: Just stay I'm sorry

I went to my side of the bed he walked to me

Him; You forgive me?

I turned off my side lamp

Him; OK we'll talk tomorrow

He also got undercovers.After 5/10 minutes I wanted to say something and I'll say it.

Me:Peter!

Him: You forgive me?

Me:Look if you still love Kelly go to her and tell her that.Bcz she left you for a stupid reason she wanted you yo beg...girls need to be begged

Him:It's over for good

Me:What do you mean?

Him:I'm broke Paige

Me:Huh?

Him: The company went bankrupt this morning. I got

nothing

Me:I'm so sorry

Him:Kelly heard the news and call it quits

Me: Wait what?

•

•

•

[12/22, 11:50] Lynne: ×•••× 22 ×•••×

•

•

•

What Peter told me last night stuck in my head.How could Kelly do that? No no Kelly is selfish and care about herself but what Peter said, there's something behind what Peter said. Kelly is afraid of something but what is it? Anyway I woke up

Me:Morning

Him: Morning

Me: So?

Him:So what?

Me: Ain't you going to work?

Him: Yah but I don't want too

Me:Sorry but let's get ready and go

Him:Huh?

Me:Let's go

Him: And you?

Me: I'm coming with you

Him:Why?

Me:I'm going to help

He laughed so hard I was serious

Him:Oh you're serious?

Me: Yes Peter I'm serious

Him: Oh no no I'm not baby sitting you

Me:Take that back

Him:No I'm not baby sitting you I'm going to work

there

Me: So am I

Him: Thanks but I don't need a model I need investors

Me:So? I'll get you investors

Him:Oh no thank you but no

Me: Why you're so stubborn? Now get your ass up and get ready

Him: I'm not going with you

Me:Yes you are now let's get ready or we'll be late and we don't want to be late at my first day now do we?

Him:Paige no

Me:Oh God

I stood up and take out my classic lady suit and black heels.

Me:I'll look casual don't worry

I went to shower after few minutes I lotion and put

on my suit and black heels. I went to the bedroom

Me: So how do I look?

Him:Uhm great

Me: Awesome

I did my makeup

Him:Are you serious?

Me:Yes

Him:But you don't know anything about business

Me:Yes but getting investors is easy

Him: Trust me it's not

Me:Oh yes it

Him: Paige...

Me:Are you getting ready or what?

Him: Yes yes

Me: Go pls

He went to the bathroom. I did my makeup and hair after few minutes he got out dripping water hoooo I

never get used to his abs.

Me:Make it easy for you OK?Take your clothes so you can shower and change there so you don't... Uhm... Yah

He chulked

Him:Do my abs bother you?

Me:Oh pls those...things of yours don't get ahold of yourself

Him:I better be wrong

Me: Oh you're damn straight wrong

Him:Hmmm ok

He took his suit and looked at me smiling.

Me: Time is ticking Mr Jackson

Him:Ok

He walked in.I finally breathed out hooo it's hot in here.I should stop looking at his abs bcz I'll end up doing things and you don't want to see me doing things .Anyway he came out

Me:Looking good let's go

Him:You better...

Me:Trust me

Him: OK fine

Me:Let's go

We went to eat breakfast Granny wasn't around

Me: Where is your Grandma?

I said annoyed

Him: Can't you two just get along?

Me:She started...

Him:I love you both...uhm I mean I love her bcz she's my Grandma and I like you as a friend you know...

Me:I get it I get it

Wow that was Awkward

Me: Let's forget that and eat

Him:Yes pls

He was so embarrassed I wanted to laugh but nahhh

I should not.Time went on we were done

Me: Let's go

Him:Ok ok you look excited

Me: It's my first day

Him:I have a meeting with some investors today sure you can handle them?

Me:Yes ofcause

Him:You better not blew it

Me:I would never

Him: OK fine

We went to his car we got in I set on something,something sharp I screamed

Me:Ouch!

Him:What?

I take it out

Me: Ouch it's an ear ring

Him:Oh sorry

I gave it to him I set down

Me:Know who is it from?

Him:No

Me:How did it get here anyway?

Him: Uhmmm

He scratch his head

Me:Oh don't say it.You fuck in the car?

Him:Once

Me:Oh wow when?

He mumbled something while coughing

Me: Peter?

Him:Yesterday

Me: Ew open the windows God

I opened up all of them

Him:You're dramatic

Me:I'm dramatic? Pls.You should stop this now you're old enough to find a suitable girl for you that

you'll spend the rest of your life with

Him: While I'm married to you?

Me:What? Hell no.As time goes we'll make up a story and divorce

Him: What?

Me:Yah you didn't think we'll grow old together did you?

Him:Ahhh no no not at all

Me: Good

He didn't look pleased at all

Me:You're ok?

Him:Yah

Silence took over

Him:Do you think our parents would approve?

Me:We'll say love wasn't there besides Peter we don't love each other

Him:Yah we don't

I heard disappointment in his voice

•

•

•

I'm busy I'll continue later

[12/22, 11:53] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Him:We're here

Me:Great

We got out

Me:You're not even a gentleman

Him:Are you coming or not?

Me:Yes yes

We walked in ppl were looking at us

Me:I like the attention

I said smiling

Him:I'm not surprised

Me:Hey...hy...hello

I was waving at them they were also greeting and waving at me

Me:I should come here often you know

Him:Not now Paige. Ready for the meeting?

Me:I was born ready Gosh

We walked to a office

Him:Let me get some stuff

Me:This is your office?

Him:No...Let's go

Me:Where is your office?

Him:You're talking too much

Me:I know Mr Jackson

We took a lift up

Me:How do I look? oh don't mention it I look good

I said looking at myself in the mirror there

Peter:We're here

The lift opens up we walked to a room full of men they'll look down on me for sure.

Me:Morning

I said smiling

"Morning/Moooorning"

Me:I'm Paige...

Peter:What are you doing?

Me:I got this now sit down

We whispered.I was the only one standing

Me:As I was saying I'm Paige...

"Paige Mahone"

Me:Oh yes who said that

He stood up

Me:Thank you Sir

Him:Welcome Miss

He was smiling I think I've won 1 investor already.

Me:Well actually I was one of the ppl that owned this place...

"Aren't you a model"

Me:Oh you guys know me.Well actually yes but I was doing business on the other hand

"Then what do you mean by " was"?

Me:Well we got bankrupt and I lost everything.Now if only I could get investors...

"I would invest"

Me:No I mean I'm no longer in the business and...

I was starting to get sad

"No Miss it's ok"

Me:Really?

I faked tears

"I would invest too in your favor"

See that's what I call business

Me:Thank you thank you so much that could mean so much.Any other ppl?

Silence. Ok I'll talk your language

Me:Oh it's hot here

I took off my blazer I was left with my shirt half buttoned

"Uhm I would totally invest"

"Me too"

Me:Really?

I was at urge of crying

Them:Yes/Yes/Ofcause

I smiled

Me:Thank you for being so nice I wish I would hug you all

"I wouldn't mind"

Me:Ohhh come...

Peter:I'm afraid the meeting is over we will be having another one in few

Me:We are?

Him:Yes

He gave me scary eyes

Me:Yes oh I forgot

They all stood up

Me:Thank you Gentleman

"You're welcome Miss"

They left

Me: Don't they had so sign papers or something?

Peter:That we'll be handled

Me:Ok so?

Him:So what?

Me:Thank you Paige for doubting you ypu really proved me wrong.?

Him: Oh pls

Me:You're ungreatful

Him: Fine thank you

Me:Welcome. You see my charms work and those fake tears helped a bit and me being a model was the fresh start

Him:Let me drive you home

Me:No need I'll be here with you

Him: Excuse me?

Me:Yes let's go

I took my blazer

Me:Where's your office

I took my bag

Him:You're not staying

A lady walked in

Her:Morning

Me: Morning

Her:Mr Jackson...

I sniffed

Her:Miss are you ok?

Me:He wants me to leave I mean I'm his wife

Her:Oh you're the wife?

Me:Yes

Her:Wow I thought you're one of his business partners or anything. Come let's go to his office Mr Jackson why making the poor girl cry

Peter:She's faking

Me:See how he treats me?

Her:You're being unfare Sir

We walked out I looked at Peter I smiled he was so mad.

Her:I'm sorry he can be like that sometimes

Me:It's ok

We went to his office

Her:If you need anything call me ok?

Me:Sure yes

She left Peter walked in with his hands on his pockets

Me:Nice office Mr Jackson

Him:Whatever

Me:So ain't you happy?

...

Me:You're mad?

He just went to his sit and got busy

Me:Fine then I'm leaving

I fixed myself

Him: Ok fine sorry you can stay

Me:Yeeeey!

I threw myself on the couch

Me:So when did you start this business? Or it's a family thing? It's really big not mentioning the beauty.Are you the only owner here? Oh I already asked that...

Peter: Do you mind?

Me:Oh sorry

•

•

•

After hours

Me:Your job is boring and I'm hungry I'm leaving

His parents walked in

Them:Hey

Us:Hey

F.in-law:It's great seeing you too together

Me: I was already going

They looked at me arggggggg I went to Peter

Me:Bye honey

I kissed his cheek his Dad smiled

Him:It's great seeing you happy

Me:You have no I dear

I faked a smile then walked out

[12/22, 12:02] Lynne: ×•••× 23 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up first

Me:Peter

I shoke him

Him:I'll go later

Me:Wake up

Him:Not now

I felt weird my stomach felt weird

Me:Peter I'm not feeling good

Him:Then sleep

He was still sleepy

Me:Peter

I stood up I got dizzy

Him:What!

Me:I'm... I'm...

I held my head then fell down then blank to me.

•

•

•

"She's awake"

I opened my eyes

Me:Where am i?

Doc:In hospital

Me:What happened to me?

Doc:How are you feeling now?

Me:Ahhh...

Doc:Where does it hurt?

Me:Are you gonna answer me or not?

Peter walked in

Peter:How are you feeling?

He had balloons all types of shapes,food Burger king, flowers I just smiled

Me:Hey

I said shifting on my bed

Him:I bought you these I didn't know what to get

Me:I love them thank you

Him:And I brought chocolate

I laughed lightly

Doc:We'll leave you

The Doctor walked out with a nurse

Me:Thanks you're really cute

Him: I'm happy you liked all of'em

Me:I do can I have the food pls

Him:Here

He gave me

Him:You'll gain more fat

Me:But I'm hungry

Him:I like you just the way you are

Me:Thanks but...

Him:Eat or you'll faint again

Me:Few pounds won't hurt anyway

Him: Eat up

I ate he was looking at me

Me:Want some?

Him:No

Me:How did you know its my favorite?

Him: I didn't know actually but it's my favorite too

Me:That's a beautiful coincidence

Him: I guess

After sometime

"My baby!"

Mom walked in with the whole family and Peter's family

Me:Hey Mom

She hugged me

Her:Are you ok?

Me:Yes Mom

Chris:What did the Doctor say?

Me:He didn't tell me

Mom:Peter?

Him:Uhmmm she uhmm..

Me:Is it something serious?

Him:Uhm it's nothing much it was just stress

Me:Stress?

Him:Yah

Mom:What are you stressing about?

Me:Nothing Mom

Peter:She needs to go home now

Mom:Yes yes be well baby

Me:Thanks Mom

Dad: I love you princess

Me:I love you too Dad

We hugged

•

•

•

Few minutes later they were all gone I was left with

Peter

Me:Pls tell me the truth

Him:You're sick

Me: What?

Him:Well not actually sick you got weak

Me:I know that but what happened? Why I got sick?

Him:You need to balance your diet

Me:What are you talking about.Can't you just be clear?

Him:Ok how can I say this? Ok you're kinda need to lose wait

Me:What?!?

Him:You're fat

Me:What! I'm fat? Who said that? How dare he? Whoever that is

Him:The Doctor said that

Me:I know he hates me

Him:He said you need to lose wait

Me: And you brought me chocolate and this

Him:I'm sorry

Me: Where is this Doc of yours? I want to tell him my peace of mind

Him:He said he doesn't talk to fat ppl

Me:What!? He should say that to my face I'll sue this hospital

He laughed at me

Me:Is that funny?

Him:I'm kidding

He said still laughing

Me:Ok be real here pls

Him:He didn't say that

Me:You're lying?

Him: And it was all worth it your face was priceless

Me:Ok ok woah so why I'm here really?

Him:It was stress that's all

Me:Why did you lie?

Him:To see you get angry it's so cute

Me:Shut up

Him:Dress up so we can go

He gave me my clothes

Me:That wasn't cool

Him: But funny

He walked out laughing I got ready after few minutes he got in

Him:Ready?

Me: Yes but I'm taking my food with me

I said taking my things

Him:You love food

Me: I know

We walked out to his car I started eating.

Him:You still want to hit a gym?

Me:Ahhh not now

Him:What about modeling?

Me:I don't want to model anymore

Him:Why?

Me:They had a nerve to call me fat they're just jealous

Him:Are they?

Me: Don't you dare

He drove home

•

•

•

Now we are at the house

Me: Finally

Him:Granny left

Me:Serious?

Him:Yah this morning

Me:I'll go back to my room?

Him:Well I don't know

Me:Since she's gone I mean...

Him: I'll tell Maria to get your things

Me:I'll sleep in the spare room tonight...

Him:Oh sure

He walked upstairs

Me: Peter?

He didn't answer I walked after him

Me:Peter?

I walked to the room

Me:Hey...

Him:Need your few stuff?

Me:Uhm my few bags

Him:Oh take'em

Me:I can sleep the night

Him:There's no need

Me: Peter what is it?

Him:Nothing I better leave

Me:To where? Your not dress up for work?

Him: It's none of your business

Me:Peter what is it?

We walked downstairs

Me:Going to your women?

Him:Leave me alone?

Me:You're like this bcz I'm moving out of your room?

Him:Don't wait up

Me:We're playing that game? I'm also leaving

Him:To where?

Me:It doesn't concern you

Why he's angry?

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:02] Lynne: ×•••× 24 ×•••×

•

•

•

I slept in Peter's room and he's not here.Why I bothered anyway.It's clear he has issues that need to be handled.Anyway I wore my goun and sleepers I made my way to the kitchen I found Maria making breakfast

Me:Morning

Her:Morning the breakfast is already ready I will do the finish up's so I can leave my son needs me

Me:Ok

She did her business

Her:You're don't look good

Me:I'm ok

Her: Where's Peter?

Me:She didn't spend the night I don't know

Her:O---oky.I'm done I gotta go oh I see the old lady

move shall I move your stuff?

Me:Uhmmm no actually not now

Her: Oky bye

Me: Bye

She left I went to eat breakfast alone as you all know. Few minutes later I heard a knock

Me:it's open

Kim walked in

Her:Oh my friend

I walked to her we hugged

Her: I'm so sorry you got kicked out

Me:It's ok Sis

I went to the table

Me:Come and join me to eat

Her:Sure

She looked at the table

Her:I'll eat the fruit and juice

Me: How will you get full by that?

Her:Look at your plate that's why you're gained girl I was suspecting a little Paige there

Me:First of all stop being forward secondly don't ever call me fat

Her:Easy tiger jeez.And where the anger coming from?

Me:I don't know my friend and Peter didn't come home last night?

She looked at me then burst in laughter

Me:This is not funny at all

Her: Girlfriend why you're angry for?

Me:I'm not angry

Her:And how did you know that?

Me: While his Grandma was around we had to share a room since yesterday she left I was gonna move to my room all of a sudden he got angry.We had a little argument but it was not a big deal so he left

Her: Don't tell me you already like the guy?

Me:Me? Noooo

Her:Paige?

Me:Ok his abs are disturbing and girl he got a V too

Kim laughed

Her:You didn't even notice you got a smirk on your face

And she was right I acted normal

Me: I was just pointing the facts

Her: Oh I better leave

Me:Yah you better bcz you're talking nonsense

Her:I wanted to meet this Peter finally but too bad

Me: Bye Kim

Her:I'm going jeez

She walked out

•

•

•

The door opens up and the ol'mighty Peter walks in I was finishing breakfast I was eating strawberries.There was no "morning/hy" anything. He took his seat and dished up.I kept eating my strawberries he looked at me

Me:What?

He looked on his plate and eat.

Him: I didn't sleep with a girl

Me: Oh you didn't?

I said acting as if I feel bad for him

Him:Yes I promise

Me:Ohhh poor thing so where were you?

Him: At my parents House

Me:Poor baby missed his Mom did age breast fed you?

Him:Paige I'm serious

Me: Peter I don't care you can fuck any bitch you want however you want it's totally fine by me

Him:There's no need to be all angry you know

Me:Me angry? Oh no I'm calm very calm!

I stood up angry why am I angry? I walked to the room and went to shower then walked out I found him on my phone

Me:What are you doing?

Him:You have a message

Me: From who?

Him:Jason

Me:Oh what is it saying?

Him:"Morning beautiful "

Me:Really that is cute let me see

I took my phone

Him:Who is that?

Me:Jason

Him:I know that

Me:Jason is Jason Peter

I went to sit next to a dresser I dried my hair with the towel

Him: Where are you going?

Me:I didn't know about your where abouts yesterday and guess what,you didn't care besides it's not like your my boyfriend

Him:I'm your husband for crying out loud

Me:In papers you are

I walked to him

Me:But in my heart you're not

Him:Is that right?

Me:Yes

He got close to me

Him:I'd like you to prove it

I laughed

Me:Like?

He got close to me my blood boiled I got tense

Him:Why you're tense

My eyes wondered around

Him:Look at me

I moved away

Me:Peter I do not want more problems

He walked to me

Me:What do you want?

I said irritated

Him:This

He kissed me.Why he always do that?I know I've once said I'll never be his or anything but yah he proved me damn wrong bcz DZAMN .He took me to heaven while on earth. By that I mean one thing led to another shittt happened.

•

•

•

I can't write a sex scene unless you promise you won't report or anything.If you promise I'll post it

tomorrow

[12/22, 12:03] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Like I said he kissed me I kissed him back I don't know why.My body just reacted.The kiss was nothing like the one we've shared before everything changed I changed. I didn't know who I was everything happened so fast.Remember I was wearing a towel my hair was wet and my body.When he kissed me he grabbed my tiny waist I held his arms man they were strong. He kissed me till he picked me up I wrapped my legs around him he placed me on the bed slowly without breaking the kiss.I didn't think what will happen next I just went with the flow.We kissed finally I felt his body on mine not that I've always wanted that but girlfriend hmmmn hmmmm.He was running his hands on my legs,thighs,ass he would squeeze them his head my barried on my neck I was letting out soft moans. I

pulled up his shirt he helped me to take it off I was like "hello hello " those abssssss mama mia hooo lala.While he was kissing on my neck he lifted his head up and kissed on my lips.My body was connected to his then he turned over I was on top of him.I was holding my towel on the other hand on the other hand I was touching his face while kissing him.I bite his lower lip on the process he squeezed my ass I laid flat on top him I felt his boner I got chills I won't lie I mean "hello!?" It's been the whole year without a dick just think about it

•

•

•

He turned me over I guess he was tired of the teasing. I heard his belt I knew he was taking it off he took off his jeans while kissing me then he kissed my neck and went down.I was moaning a bit I twirl my toes my body just went on fire.He took off my towel my boobs were exposed I was a little embarrassed I don't know why but they look good

don't get me wrong.He sucked on them my towel was covering my lower part.He sucked on my boobs then went down my stomach then to my belly button he ran his tongue on it.I felt a burning sensation between my thighs I bended my back my handa turned the sheets I was twisting on'em.Then I felt his kisses on my thighs I moaned out no guy has ever done that to me.Be kept kissing on'em I bite my lips while trying to breath trying to not be weird all of a sudden he took off my towel.I thought to myself "Is he gonna..." Then BAMM! Yep he did he kissed on my pussy I've never felt pleasure in my life it felt so good.I swear I've never been muffed bcz I would say no bcz didn't like it.A guy getting his tongue on me no no but this one right here "hunay" sweety I changed my mind instantly.To tell you the truth I didn't know what he was doing down there next thing I feel his fingers then his tongue I didn't know but I enjoyed every moment. I felt a hot liquid coming out I couldn't help but moan out in pleasure and push his head deeper.I breathed out heavily his hands where on ass.

•

•

•

After sometime him down there he kissed on my figure then up to my bare boobs I had my fingers on my mouth.I didn't make eye contact with him my eyes were closed.He kissed on my neck while his hands were touching my breasts. He got between my thighs.Ok right there I knew shittt was going down and it damned right went down.He had his boxers on and whatever I felt his dick.It wasn't that big well that's what I thought. Anyway he took off his boxers then rubbed his dick on me.I moved a bit he also moved my way ok this is gonna be a long day huh?He came to my lips and took off my hand and kissed me.Maybe he tried helping me to stay calm no no honey you thought wrong.He tried pushing his dick in I moved he moved my way and held my waist tight.He pushed in I whispered

Me:What the fuck?

He only got the head in the sheets probably torn asf

bcz I wasn't playing plus I had nails.He pushed harder it went in and in bit by bit he was groaning.I moaned in pain a little.He went in on and on I was surprised why it wasn't all in that's why that girl said he was on her neck now trust me I understand. He went further he was tightening my waist,his breathing was on the top well our breathing.I dug my nails on his back he pushed harder I dig deeper.My moaning got out of control I couldn't handle it anymore I moaned a little louder. He tightened his arm around me then he did strokes.My pussy was burning fire I swear it to you.He was barring his head on my neck I felt him breathing.No one said anything to anyone like I said. I was feeling pain and pleasure at once.His strokes went slow and slow.I liked that he was taking everything easy but no man I couldn't wait for it to be over it's like he's breaking my virginity all over again.I wanted it to end I can't take it no more.The room was filled with my moans and our thighs slapping together.I swear he is big y'all if I've seen it first I wouldn't have done this but my head was else were now honey it's back this is hurting like hell it's like I'm being tortured and torn apart this

thing hurts so much.After sometime it became good ok ok it was getting there.

•

•

•

He went deeper I felt pleasure I finally felt pleasure he hit my walls.My body build up I tightened my legs around him his pace went higher I was Cumming I was gonna explored. I bet he was feeling the same thing.He stroke faster and faster then we both climaxed we held each other tight.That feeling in the end always the best.He didn't pull out he released his juice on me.It felt like heaven oh God.Then he pulled out slamming his dick on my pussy

Him:You're on birth control right

This bustard said that while catching his breath and tired like a dog.I looked at him he looked at me he smiled trying to kiss me I pushed him off.

Me:And you're asking me that now?

I said angrily

I wrap my towel on and went to my purse I took out my after pill then went to take it in the bathroom with water.I came back then gave Peter a slap

Him:What was that for?

Me:For fucking me

Him:I thought we both wanted it

Me:Oh you thought wrong look here don't you ever get close to me

He looked away annoyed I hate it when someone is not paying attention to me

Me:Peter? Peter? I'm talking here.I mean it don't you dare lay a finger on me ever again or...

Him:Or you'll be unable to resist?

Me:What? No

Him:Really?

Me:Yes really and what just happened was a mistake

Him:A mistake you say?

Me: Yes a mistake

Him:Ok I see

He stood up naked oh God I looked away

Him:Was it really a mistake

Me:Peter we're just friends ok nothing more

Him:Does friends marry each other?

Me:We were forced and you know it

Him:Does friends share a bed?

Me:We didn't have a choice and you know it

Him:Does friends kiss?

Me:You kissed me don't turn the tables around Mr

Him: Does friends make love?

Me:Well that's pretty much our fault but still

Him: So don't tell me it was a mistake bcz you liked it didn't you?

I lauged nervously

Me:Whaaaaaaat? No

Him:It's not like we're friends with benefits

Me:We...

Him:Or we can be

Me:Are your brain cells not functioning well or something.Look man none of this will ever happen on

Him:Are you sure?

Me:I'm sure Peter

Him:But I...

Me:But you nothing ok just leave me alone

Him:Can I at least say something?

I was dead serious

Me:I don't want to hear it

Him:I'd like to make this marriage thing work you know

Me:Oh don't tell me you're serious?

Him:Know what? Fine Paige we fucked ok? Nothing can take that back

Me:You're right now let's move on I'm like one of

your fuck buddies anyway

I tried walking out he grab my arm

Him:You're my wife

Me:Thanks for reminding me

Him:Tell me one thing

Me:Can I go pls?

Him:Pls just one question

Me:Just ask

Him: Didn't you feel anything?

I looked away

Him:When we touch? At all?

I didn't answer

Him:Don't ignore me pls

Me:I shouldn't have done that ok? We shouldn't have had sex

Him:Was is just sex to you?

Me:I didn't feel any difference

I said while my eyes burned with tears

Him:Wow

He went to the bathroom.I wanted to cry bcz if Kelly finds out She'll think I won Peter to win the deal.Who knows maybe she'll want him back now and say everything about the deal I wasn't even serious about. Kelly can be really cruel.But no he broke up with Kelly right it doesn't matter what she thinks.I knocked on the bathroom

Me:Peter?

I heard water running he won't be able to hear me and he locked inside

•

•

•

I tried writing that sex scene and hey I had to stop and breath my ppl.But I did my best I'm a virgin so I don't have a slidest idea of what I wrote but I hope it makes sence

[12/22, 12:03] Lynne: ×•••×25×•••×

•

•

•

Peter was ignoring me the whole say yesterday. I've ran out of options I tried saying my sorry but no he won't listen.Anyway now I'm coming back from the Mall I brought alot of food and desert I can't wait to dug in plus I brought few outfits.I walked in the house my mode changed

Me:Hey

He looked at me

Him:Hey

I put my begs down I took a fleece then covered my cold feet I became comfortable.I took out ny food he looked at me

Me:I have fruit too?

I said giving him strawberries

He shook his head. I started eating I watched the TV

he was watching cricket and I was bored. Can I talk to him now? I mean it's the right moment. I took my food away I looked at him

Him:What?

Me: I need to tell you something

Him: That is?

Me:About yesterday

Him:Nothing happened yesterday

He said looking back to the TV.OK he is hella mad

Me:Peter I'm sorry

He looked away

Me: Peter? Peter come on

Him:I'm watching a game here

Me:Is it important than me?

Him:What?

I slowly moved to him I set on his laps

Me: I'm sorry

Him: You're distracting me get off

Me:Not until you forgive me

Him:For what exactly?

Me:For what I said it wasn't cool I know

Him:I forgive you so can you get off

Me:No

Him:I'm losing focus on what I'm watching

Me:Fine

I got off him I walked to the kitchen I took tap water to drink

"So you're officially my wife?"

I turned to see him on his sweat pants he looked good sweat pants always show us things I couldn't stop starring

Him:My eyes are up here

I cleared my throat

Me:I know that

Shit he saw me

Him:What do a married couple do?

Me: Cuddle let's go and cuddle

Him:You gotta be kidding

Me: I'm not

We went to the couch we cuddled watching the TV

Me:So how's work so far?

Him:Great everything is getting back to normal thanks to you

Me: I know I'm good

Him:Can I say something

Me:Sure

Him:Look at me first

Me:Sounds serious

Him:It is

I set on his laps facing him

Him:I want to be real with you

Me:Be real?

Him:With my first impression to you

Me:Oh no

I laughed

Him: It's not bad

Me:I bet it's not

Him:When I first laid my eyes on you at the isle I said to myself "She's beautiful but no matter how beautiful she is I won't fall for her" but I guess I was wrong

Me:You fell for me?

Him:Yep and the first time I saw you wearing a bra and panties I struggled breathing

I laughed

Me:Stop playing you're lying

Him:I'm serious

Me:Well I'm very flattered Mr Jackson

Him:So what was your first impression Mrs Jackson?

Me:I didn't care at all I didn't even see the

handsomeness in you that day bcz I wanted to go to Miami for a special gig but I had to marry you

Him:Ain't you glad you didn't?

Me:A little

Him: A little?

Me:Yes a little

He tickled me I was laughing none stop

Me:Ok ok fine I'm glad I didn't go bcz I got to marry you

Him:That's much better

Me: Our parents would be so proud seeing us really together

Him:Very especially my Dad and Grandma

Me:Which one the one who just...

He laughed

Him:No not him my other Grandma

Me:The nice one?

Him:Yes the one who knew you're the one by just

looking at your face

Me:I like her am I? Am I the one?

I asked blushing

Him:Are you let's find out

He came close to kiss me we kissed he tickled me I was laughing so hard he was kissing my bare neck suddenly someone clears his throat.I looked up HIS FAMILY AND MINE

Me:Peter stop

Him:No

His Dad:Sorry to interrupt

He looked behind him

Peter:Father? Everyone?

I stood up what are they doing here?

Me:Uhm come in

They took their seats I set next to Peter.They cut us of guard we didn't know they were coming

His Dad: Sorry for not announcing our visit today

Peter:You never announce your visit Dad

Him:Can we not fight pls

My Dad: We got something to say

Peter barried his head on my neck and whispered

Him:Can't we repeat yesterday

In a low deep sexy voice I found myself giggling everyone looked at us.I got embarrassed

Me: I'm so sorry

I pushes Peter he wanted to burst in laughter this ain't funny bcz everyone else is kinda serious here

Me:He told me a joke I couldn't help but laugh I'm sorry

His Dad:Uhm Peter ppl came to me yesterday well came home

His bro: And it ain't good news

His Mom: Shut up you your father is talking

My parents were looking down Chris was looking at me sad

Me:What's going on?

His Dad:Why did you lie to us?

Peter:Lie?

Him:While leaving here

Me:We don't follow

His Mom: You damn right follow Peter was having girls over here while you were here

Oh no

Peter:What?

His Dad:Son...don't tell me that is true

Me:It's...it's not

Peter:Its ok Paige.Yes Dad it's true

His Dad was pissed I could see it

Me: But he stopped

His Dad:Shut up!

His voice scared me

Peter:My wife has done nothing father.Yes that is

true but all in the past now

His Dad: By the past you mean few days ago

Who could that be?

Peter:What are you talking about then

His Dad:You got a girl pregnant FOR GOD SAKE!!!

He was angry the only thing I was able to say was

Me:What?

Peter:Wha...what? How?

His Dad:How? You tell me how.You're married Peter and why did you allow this

I was speechless

His Mom: I bet she had men over too

Me:Excuse me?

Peter:Ok if y'all gonna disrespect my wife pls leave

My Dad:You already disrespected my daughter.I trusted you with her

My Dad had hate in his eyes I whispered

Me:Mom?

Mom should pls handle his husband I'll handle mine bcz this can get ugly

Chris: So bro how did this all happen? Did you come with those here while my little sister was around?

Me:Chris?

He was looking at Peter Dead

Me:Ok ok everyone I say the truth.Me and Peter were not in love.I said it's free for him to do whatever bcz we were not together but yesterday we put our differences aside and build a relationship

His Dad:All I'm asking is why?

My Mom:But you told us you were in love

Me:To not make you worry Mom

His Mom:So what happened yesterday that made you put your differences aside?

Me:Well uhmm

Peter:That's uhmm

We both smiled and looked at each other giggling

His Dad:Do you think this is a joke?

We stopped

Me:I'm sorry Sir...

Him:Dad

Me:I mean Dad that's in the past we will move on in peace and he'll support the girl

His Dad:That is the problem the girl

Me: Ah what do you mean?

His Dad:Her parents want him to take her as his second wife

I didn't know how to react

Peter:What?

Me:His no King there will be no second wife here

His Mom:Actually there will be and I like her since I'll be getting a Grand baby

My Dad:So what do you want baby to stay in this marriage or not?

Me: What?

Dad: Since his getting married in a few do you still want to remain his wife?

Me:But you forced me...

Him:You're free now

Me:I am?

Him: Yes sweety want to come back to Dad?

I looked at my family then to Peter who was broken inside.

Me:Peter I...I love you

He smiled

Me:But I can't...

Peter:What? Can't what?

I looked down sad he lifted my face up

Me: I can't leave you

He smiled hugging me

Him:You're not leaving me?

Me:No I'm not

Him:Thank you so much I love you too

His Dad: So you're marrying this Kelly girl in a few Days

Kelly?????????

Me: Wait who?

Peter:Kelly as Kelly Kelly?

His Dad:No Kelly Kelly don't shit with me boy

They all stood up

Peter:But that's...

His Dad:It's a done deal Peter there's no turning back

I went to hug my parents and Chris

Him; I can't blv you're staying after he pulled this

Me: We were not together then

Him:But still

Me: Bye Chris

Him:Can't I punch him?

Me:No go

They left I was alone with Peter

Me:I need to lie down

I walked away he held my Hand

Him; Don't be like that I mean you just confess your love infront of my parents

Me: What? Haven't a girl confessed her love to you before?

Him: No not like that

Me:Well it's true but me sharing you is another thing

Him:You will not share me

Me:Yes I will I can't blv this

I'll share a man with Kelly AGAIN

Him:But I love you she was just a gold digger

Me:But what if she wants to sleep with you since you'll be her husband too

Him:I'll fuck her and that's it

Me:Am I hearing fine?

He laughed

Him:I'm kidding

Me:You better be or you'll see who Paige Mahone is

He held my waist

Him:Paige Jackson now

Me: I ain't playin

Him:Me too

Me;I swear I'll rip your brain cells out

Him:You wouldn't

Me: Yes I will I'm tired by the way

I said getting him off me and walking away

Him:What? No.Beab you gain weight every second

Me:Call me fat one more time I'll show you fat

Him:Fat!

I ran to him he was dodging me....

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

Me:Now they are in love and they fucked yesterday does anybody...

Nev:She can't catch him look at her run...

Hr laughed

Nev:It's so hilarious.No stop dodging her poor thing

He laughed

Me: Nev?

Him: Boss?

Me: Nev?

Him;Boss?

Me: Stop doing that and find me this Kelly i think she'll be very interested in my proposal

Nev: Bossman look at her run she's catching her breath hoooo

He laughed

Him:No man Peter she's tired now

Me:Nev?

Him:Boss man?

Me:Where you even listening to me?

Him:Sorry Boss man

Me:I said find this Kelly chick now!

Him:Yes Boss

He walked out

•

•

•

I'm so so sorry for not posting last night.I was typing but I didn't finish then something came up I had to stop I'm really sorry I'll post 2 more just to make it up to you

[12/22, 12:04] Lynne: ×•••×26×•••×

•

•

•

The wedding is in few days I'm hurt but there's nothing I can do.

"What's on your mind Beab?"

I turned to face him we were still in bed it's morning

Me:Nothing

Him: Pls don't hide things from me

Me:I'm not hiding anything

Him:I don't care about her

Me: Are you sure?

Him:Yes I'm sure I'm over her

He kissed my forehead

Him:Brush that off Beab

Me:But what if she demands you sleeping with her and wants you every time beside her?

Him: And leave this

He gave me nasty looks

Me:I'm serious

I said laughing

Him:I'm serious too

Me:Hmmm

I woke up

Him: Don't go just yet

Me:I'm hubgry

Him:You can eat me

Me:Ewwww

I laughed

Me:No I want food

Him:I'm food

He pin me on the bed kissing my face

Me:Get off

I said laughing

Him:Not after this

He kissed my neck

Me:Peter? No I want to eat

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

Me:Nev close that!

Him:Hooo Peter is hitting it again

He laughed.We were not looking at them but we heard their conversation and moans

Me:I can't listen to this

Nev:Heard that? Duuuuuuuuude

He laughed

Nev:She's making me wet

Me:Nev I will squash you to little peaces you get THAT! Close that thing

Him:Sorry Boss man

She moaned even louder

Nev:Get her Peter marn!

She was jumping out of his chair I threw the laptop on the wall

Him: Boss man?

I walked out I went to my lounge Jason walked in

Him:Romeoooo

Me:Yah

Him: Why so down?

Me:Nothing let me ask you something what if you find out about this girl of yours and she's with someone else?

Him:She is married but not into her husband

Me:Maybe that's what you think these girls ain't loyal

Him:No no not my Paige

Me:Paige?

Him:Yah man Paige Mahone she's a Goddess

My Paige? This can't be

Him:You know her?

Me:I don't think so

Him:I'll show her one day anyway you don't look good

Me:Oh it's nothing really

Him:Oh I came by I'm heading to the golf course wanna come?

Me:Nahhh I'll pass today

Him:Ok switch yourself

Me:Sure

He walked out.So Jason is talking about Paige my Paige and Peter's Paige too my plan is getting easier. I'll win Paige over that I swear...

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I was walking to a mall when something caught my eye.

Me:Excuse me how much is that?

It was a bracelet

Her:R5000

Me:It's beautiful

Her:They are two if you look closely it's 2.5k each

Me:Wow I want them

I got in wow this place got beautiful jewels I bought it and bought my fruit then went home

Me:Peter!

...

Me:Peter!

"Coming!"

He ran downstairs

Me:Guess what I got?

Him:I'm not hungry and I don't want a chocolate

Me:It's not anything eatable

Him:You got me a new laptop bcz I need one

Me:No a bracelet dummy

I took them out

Him: I don't wear those things

Me:You'll wear it and now.One for you one for me

I made him wear his

Him: How will I walk around with this?

Me:Peter? Pls now help me out

He made me wear mine

Him:It looks good on you though

Me:This is a symbol of my love to you ok wherever you are when you look at it you will think of me when I look at mine I'll think of you

Him:This is a first

Me:I hope it becomes the last

Him:It will

He picked me up kissing me

Me:Don't ever take it off this cost me shit

Him: You didn't have to buy it

Me:I had

I peck his lips

Me:I'll Cook

Him: Really?

Me:Yah

Him:Can you Cook?

Me: Yah but...

Him:Well go ahead my love

Me:You'll like it?

Him:Why wouldn't I like my babies cooking come on go and make your magic my love

Me:Ok

Him:I'll finish my few things OK?

Me:Ok

He walked away I went to the kitchen.Ok what can I cook? Oh I'll look at my cooking app some dishes to surprise him I hope he likes it ...

[12/22, 12:04] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Peter's POV

"Peter! Food is ready!"

Me:Coming!

I closed my laptop then ran downstairs. What is that smell? Did she burn something?

Her: Tadaa! But they are a little ruined

I look at the table the table is full of dishes

Her:I made lasagna here but rough on the edges a little,Fish burito if you want one...

Me:You made all of this?

Her:Yes you like it?

Me:Woooah what's that? Did that thing breath?

Her:Breath? What? No this is uhmmm...I don't know but it's good well I guess

Me:Uhmmm

I gulp hard this is horrible my baby can't cook at all

Her:Taste some come on

Me:Sure

I said nervously.I took a bite of something I don't even know what it was.I chewed and ew ew ew

Me:Hmmm taste uhmmm

Her: Huh?

She was waiting for my response with glowing eyes she looked so cute should I lie? What if she carries on cooking like this but if I tell her the truth I'll wipe that smile and she went through so much work to cook for me at least she's trying

Me:Hmmm it's delicious

She clap her hands giggling

Her:I knew you would like it try this one

She gave it to me

Me:Sure

I looked at it.Is this alive? It's like a leaving thing

Me:Yeeey let me try this one

I put my fork in it's wet it's wet the fork couldn't hold it

Me:I'll use a tablespoon

Her:No use a fork it's eaten by fork

Me:You don't say?

Her:Yes it is

Me:Wow

I tried holding it

Her:I used too mch water instead of oil but its fine

This is not fine. I finally get the fork I forced myself not to spit it bcz damn that was horrible

Her: Try this one more

Me:Sure love

Her:You'll like it like others

Me:Ofcause I will

I forced a smile bcz I got no choice.I took a bite and chewed and no no no no I can't take it anymore I ran

to the sink to spit

Her:Honey are you ok?

Me:You used sugar instead of salt

Her:What? No.Oh yah yah sorry love

Me: It's fine Beab you know what I'm not hungry anymore my stomach is feeling fine already

Her:And all this?

Me:Bye Beab

I ran upstairs I don't want her to change my mind.I went to my room.The food tasting was a disaster.My baby can't cook but I love her just like that.I took a shower then headed to bed.Why isn't she coming to bed? She walked in not looking happy

Me:So what did you do with the food?

Her: Threw it

Me:Ohhhh

She went to the bathroom. She mad oh Lord. She came back after sometime she got undercovers.I should try something she's mad I got close to her

Me:You smell good

Her: I know

Me:Uhmmm ok how about we do something fun?

I kissed her bare shoulder

Her:I'm not in the mood

Me:Are you sure?

I placed my hands on her thighs

Her:Get your hands off me

Me:Come on...

Her:Peter? Peter Jackson!

I got them off

Me:You ain't fare niggar gotta hit

Her: Well niggar gotta chill you didn't even eat my dinner do you know how much work I've put in those pots? How much love?

Me:I'm so sorry

Her:There's nothing you can do just be quiet

Me:Ok ok I won't say a word

Her: Thank you

Then there was silence

Me:Beab come on let's cuddle

Her: fine

I knew she won't be mad for too long.I held her close to me then kissed her neck

Her:You're so warm

Me: You too

She smelled so good

Me:What did you put on?

Her: Smells good?

Me:So good

Her: I got it from a woman outside of the mall

Me:From just a random woman?

I couldn't help but getting hard while her close to me

Her:Yes she was desperate so i was helping plus her

perfumes smells so good

Me:Yah

Her:Is that your dick?

Me:Yah wanna help Daddy out?

Her: No

Me:What? Why?

Her:You rejected my food

Me:Beab no

Her: Yes and I have a headache

I have an idea

Me:I'll get you pills

Her: Go and stop always wanting sex

I took out pills and water I gave her she drank up then we slept.She kept tossing and turning

Me:Are you ok love?

Her:Hmmm are you asleep?

Me:Me? No

Her:Hmm

Me:Are you ok?

It was dark the lights were out

Her: Ohhh I'm feeling hot

Me: Yah?

She got on top of me

Her:You mind?

I was over the moon

Me:I do not at all

Her:Hmmm

Her soft moans killed me.He kissed me then took off my clothes

Her:I want to feel it in

She took off her own clothes I helped her she rubbed my dick on her pussy.Damn she was wet

Me:Wait no Paige

I turned the side lamp on

Her: What?

Me:We can't

Her:Peter I'm horny come on

She was sulking

Me:I drugged you

Her:What?

Me: I used pills to get you horny other than headache pills

Her: Peter not now I felt if I want you inside me now

Me:I'm serious then why you got horny out of the blue

Her:Peter?

Me:I'm sorry I was desperate

Her:I will kill you later for now fix your mass and do it good or I'll kill you twice

Me:Have I ever disappoint? And how can I do that while I know I'll get killed?

Her:Peter

Me:Ok

I turned the lights off I got between her thighs.

Her: I will murder you after this

Me:Ok stop

Her:Ok

I brushed my dick on the clit she got wet.I kept teasing her and teasing I felt her hand too.She slowly pushed it in bit by bit.She moaned out it felt good

Her:Mmmm

She helped me to push it all in and further till it was all in.I did my strokes I was moving slow in and out slow.

Her:Faster!!!

I did as commanded although she'll kill me after this.My strokes went up and up till we both climaxed I didn't stop stroking but I went slow when we were releasing our juice (she's on injection now) I didn't collapse on her I kept on stroking slowly she was also stroking down there and that's what I like. Hearing her moans made me not stop even more I

don't know but something made this so good.When we got done I got off her breathing like fire

Her:I'm tired for killing you now I'll kill you tomorrow

Me:I love you

Her:I don't love you but that was freaken amazeballs

Me:You do love me

Her: Shut up let's cuddle and sleep

We did...she loves me

[12/22, 12:04] Lynne: ×•••× 27 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was woken by a phone ringing.I tapped Peter

Me:Your phone

I said while closing my eyes and in a sleepy voice

Him:Noooo you answer it

Me:No you do it

Him:No you do it

Arggg I'm so sleepy and this phone is making hell of a noise. I reached out to it

Me:Hello

"Hey baby"

I was up instantly

Me:Who's this?

Her:Give Peter the phone

Me:Excuse you little girl

Her:Who are you with attitude?

Me:Who am I?

I laughed sarcastically this girl is testing me huh?

Me: Listen here...

Peter: Beab who's that?

Me:I'll deal with you later.Hey you leave Peter alone or...

I laughed

Her:Girl you had your time with him its mine now

She said with an attitude

Me:You don't know me clearly

Her:Why would I know you? Look here tell Peter sweet cherry called bye bye

She dropped the call.My ears were burning FIRE.Peter was looking at me confused

Me:Sweet Cherry?

Him:Huh?

He knew her I saw it

Me:The last time I checked you were hearing perfectly

Him:She's no one Beab

Me:Peter Jackson! Peter Jackson! Do you know me?

Him:Yes

Me:Now tell me WHO THE FUCK IS THAT

Him: She was one of my girls back then..

Me:She's still is the way I see it

Him: Come on love

He grab my waist

Me:I'm not stupid Peter

Him:I know you're not I'm not with her or anyone else in that matter

I looked at him with small eyes not trusting what he says

Me:You better not be lying to me

Him:Honey...

Me:No leave me alone

I got off him I slept on my chest on my side of the bed.

Him:Beab?

I didn't answer him. He came over me and kissed my bare back

Him:Are you mad?

I didn't answer

Me:Get off me

Him:Babbbe?

Me:Peter get off

Him:You're still mad I can't

He kissed my shoulders

Me:Peter stop

Him:You're not mad?

Me:I am actually very furious.Who does that chick think she is?She got some nerve she better pray I don't cross paths with her bcz...bcz I'll show her hell she's going hell anyway

Him:Oh love don't mind her it's nothing

Me:Nothing? Your face is nothing. Peter I don't trust her especially that Kelly too I swear if...I better not say things

Him:Oh my...

Me:Arg get off

I said getting up

Him: Paige come on

Me:I should come on? Yah right

Him:It's nothing

Me:She called at 6 in the morning what if that was me

Him:I'm sorry

Me:Hell yah you're sorry

Him:I'm not seeing those girls anymore I love you I'm committed to us

Me:Are you?

Him:I am

Me:Hmmm

Him:Now come to bed

Me:No

Him:Come on Beab

He pulled me to him I was pouted still angry

Him:Forgive me will you?

Me:You're sure you're not seeing those girls?

Him: I'm sure

Me:I trust you

Him:And I love you

Me:I love you more

We kissed he grabbed my butt

Me: No I want to sleep

Him:Beab come on

Me:You're going to work soon

Him:I got 10 to get ready

Me:So get up

Him:Let's make that 10 minutes beautiful

Me: No

I said laughing

Him: I'll be quick

He threw me to bed

The rest is history

•

•

•

Now I was alone in the house I heard a knock. I went to open I saw no one only a red box with a letter. I picked it up I got inside. I went to the couch I read the letter

[Hey beautiful I brought you something,something I thought you'll like. The colour reminded me of you I hope you like it.Your true love. R]

Who is this?I opened the box on my God.It was a beautiful blue tight long dress.With black heels and some jewels they looked so beautiful. wow who is this person I rushed to the window to look if that person is watching or not.I saw a car that was facing at my door drive away.With a white man wearing dark shades at the back then he pulled the window up.Maybe that the guy.How does he know me always buying me stuff.

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

I'm love sick LOVE SICK I tell you.I don't have courage to yell Paige how I feel and surely she'll reject me.I went to a bar after her house.

Me:Something strong my man

A lady comes up to me

Her:Hey handsome

Me:Hey

Her:Looking for company?

Me:Was I?

Her:You looked lonely

Me: I'm love sick

Her:Ohw what happened?

Me:The woman I love with my whole heart loves another man.I love her so much I've been after her for so long but never had the guts to tell her how I feel

Her: Oh poor thing try your luck

Me:There is no luck no girl ever see me attractive

Her:I see you attractive

I laughed lightly

Me:You do?

Her:Yes

Me:That's great but I want her to see me attractive.I've been let down many times by girls if this one rejects me I swear I'll kill myself

Her:Don't do that

Me:I wouldn't be able to breath with the guilt that I would be not good enough for her

Her:I'm so sorry

Me:I gotta go... here

I lend her money and I paid up

Me:I needed to let that out of my chest thank you for listening

Her:Welcome

I left

Me:Take me back to my house

I said to my driver he drove off.I was looking at the window thinking about Paige. I love her and that's it I can't change it.While on top of those thoughts I saw a guy being mugged

Me:Wait stop!

My driver stopped. 4 men took the guys belongings and stabbed him I rush out

Me:Hey!!!!!

I pulled out a gun one of'em shot me in my shoulder first then they ran.My driver helped me up we ran to the guy who was half dead

Me:Let's take him to the hospital

We took him.He was popping alot of blood

Me: Faster Faster!!!

I held his would with my jacket to block more blood coming out.I look at his ID that was in his pocket luckily they didn't take it.His name was Chris

Mahone.He doesn't even have a cellphone. How can I contact his family? Wait! Mahone? Isn't he Paige's Brother? Well I know everything about Paige yea yes it's her brother oh God.

Me:Drive faster he's unconscious we may loose him...hurry!!!!!!

•

•

•

To be continued...

[12/22, 12:05] Lynne: Continuation (It's a favour I'm tired and my phone is shutting down)

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I was watching TV. I should get a job I can't watch TV the whole day at all.My phone rang

Me:Hello

"Am I talking to Paige Mahone?"

Me:Yes who's this?

"Its the Doctor in *** hospital your Brother Chris Mahone was stabbed and he was admitted just now"

Me:Oh no I'll coming now

My heart sank.Oh God

I took my keys and sent my Mom a text.I can't call them now.I walked in the hospital panicking I went to the receptionist

Me: Hey can I plea...

Her:Firstly calm down

She said calmly and annoyed while chewing a gum

Me:I need to know where Chris Mahone's ward

Her:Ok... Let me check

Click...*Click*...*Click* She's taking forever

Me:Lady!!?

Her:He's still in the...

The phone rang

Her: Sorry I gotta get that

Me:You're not getting anything don't piss me off where is he?

Her:He's still in the emergency room he was badly hurt

Oh God.I rash to sit on the cold chairs panicking.

"Paige honey"

Me:Mom

We hugged

Her:What happened?

Me:I still don't know Mom the Doctor called me

Dad:Its ok sweety

Tears burn down my cheeks

Dad: Shhh don't cry

He hugged me brushing my back.

•

•

•

Me:They are taking a lot of time Mom

Her:Let's wait a little longer baby

"Mahone?"

We rushed to the Doctor

Me:How is he Doc?

Him:Stable for now if that man didn't arrive with him on time we would have lost him

Me:Thank God can we see him?

Him:No not today he needs time to rest

Mom:When can we see him?

Him:Tomorrow at 12

Me:And where's the man that saved my brothers life?

Him:In the other room cleaning his wound he was shot

Me:Oh no can I see him?

Him:Yes follow me

Me:I'll be right back Mom

I walked away with the Doctor we got into a room

Him:He's in here

Me:Thank you

I saw him sitting on the hospital bed shirtless I saw bandages on his shoulder.His facial expression changed I didn't know if he knew me or what

Me:Hey

Him:Hey

Me:I'm Paige

Him:Romeo

We handshake

Me:The guy you saved is my brother

Him:Oh really? How is he doing?

Me:Good thanks to you

Him:I did what any other should would have done

Me: And I thank you I don't know how to repay you

Him:It's ok

Me:Its not you got shot bcz of him

Him:I should go

He got off the bed he almost fell I held him

Me:You'll hurt yourself

Him:I'm OK

Me:You're not let me take you to the chair hold tight on me

He did I went to sit with him

Me:How about now?

Him:I want to leave

Me:I'll call a nurse

Him:Thank you

Me: Thank you

I hugged him lightly

Me:What you did was very Kind

Him:Welcome

I walked out

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

I'm head over heels with her oh God.No one understands no one can.It was hard to breath the same air as she was I couldn't blv I was seeing her I couldn't blv we hugged.Oh I'm dreaming

•

•

•

After that I went home to Nev

Him:Boss man what happened?

Me:What happened to the girl Nev and stop being noisy

Him:It's just I worry about you Boss man

Me:Nev?

Him:Sorry Boss man the girl got no agenda Boss man

Me:No agenda? Is she really pregnant?

Him: Yes

Me:Hmmm And marrying Peter is her idea?

Him: No her Parents forced her since she's the daughter of a priest

Me:Oh wow a daughter of a priest who's a model sometimes they post half naked in magazines

Nev:Yes Boss man

Me: I wasn't asking

Him:Sorry

Me:Anyway when you get a chance get all the cameras at Peter's house

Nev:But Boss man?

Me:Nev pls

I walked away

•

•

•

My phone is shutting down sorry

[12/22, 12:05] Lynne: FUTURE (more to come)

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Why I keep seeing this man in my dreams who is he?

Aunt: Paige my baby can you get me milk and few groceries we've ran out

Me:Yes Aunty

I took some money in out pot on top of a fridge.That's how we save.After that I went to the mall.I walked in then I saw the man in my dreams. He was walking with a lady and a baby girl.I want to know my past I want to know who am I? I'm going to

this man.I ran to them I tapped his shoulder he quickly turned.It's him it's him my mystery man

Him:How can I help you?

My excitement fade. He doesn't know me

Him:Lady can I help you?

Woman:Baby who's this?

He doesn't know me.My heart sank I couldn't hold my tears they fail me.

Girl:Daddy who's this?

Him:I don't know sweety let's go

I didn't say a word I was just shocked. I look at the little girl.I felt like I know her but from where?

Him:Get away here

They getting rid of me bcz I was becoming weird

Woman:Peter let's go leave her

Him:Why's she's looking at me like that?

Her:We're getting late

Girl:Yes Daddy

They hop in the car.I was still looking at them confused. The only person I'm able to see is that guy in my dreams. Who am I really? Why that guy seems like I know him and that girl too. I cried. My heart is broken.Will I know who am I? Was I even important to my previous family well if I had one.Why they never look for me

[12/22, 12:05] Lynne: ×•••× 28 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was woken up by Peter's phone.

Me:Peter!!! Phone!!!

Him:Answer it

He said in a sleepy voice

Me:Argggggg

I answer it

Me: Hello?

"Where's Peter?"

Me:Sleeping

"What about the wedding?"

My brain started to function right away

Me:I'll uhmm...tell him

I dropped the call

Me:Peter?

Him:Let's cuddle

He held me tighter to him

Me:Peter

Him:What?

Me:You're getting married today

He stood up still

Him:Shit! Today I forgot

I just wrap my rope and wore my Slipper's

Me:I'm hungry

Him:Beab?

Me:What?

I'm not pleased with what is going to happen but I got no say

Him:You're coming?

Me:No I gotta visit my brother

Him:Can I take you?

Me:No I got a car thank you

I walked out. I found Maria cooking

Me:Hey

Her: Morning how are you feeling?

Me: Not great

Her:What's wrong?

A guy walked in without knocking

Me:And you?

Him:Where's Peter?

Me:And who are you budging in here like you own the place?

Him:And who are you?

Me:Peter's WIFE and you?

Him:Kelly's brother

Me: That makes alot sense he's upstairs

Him:He's getting ready?

Me:Yes

Him:Peter!!! Let's go man! Don't dare stood up my sister!

Me:Hey! Who do you think you are yelling here?!

Him:Peter love feisty women huh?

He said walking to me

Him:What's your name?

He bite his lower lip.

Me:Arg ew

I pushed him away

"Stay away from my woman Lebo"

Him:Sorry bro

He chuckled while giving me a side smile then he looked at my legs.My goun exposed my thighs I rash and hid them

Peter:Ok let's go you've seen enough

Peter:I love you Beab

Me:I love you too

I said not meaning it

Lebo:She's too hot to be your wife

Me:Glad you wouldn't say the same to your sister?

Him:Hey leave Kelly out of this

They argued walking out

Maria:What is happening

Me:Kelly is pregnant he has to marry her today

Her:And what's up with you?

Me:He's marrying her

Her:I thought you didn't

Me: back then now is now.Whatever that Kelly planned will back fire

She laughed

Me:What?

Her:Jealous

Me:By claiming what's mine? So be it...

[12/22, 12:05] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After that I went to check on my brother.

Me:Can I see Chris Mahone?

So yah I was let in. I found him surrounded by machines my heart broke.I went to sit next to him

me: Morning brother

I held his right hand

me:Pls get better will you? I miss you so much I know I wasn't visiting often at home and I'm sorry

Tears fell down my cheeks. My heart was breaking.I kissed his hands then I heard footsteps coming to

the room and they stopped.I looked at the door

me:Oh hey Romeo right?

him: Hey yes it is

I wiped my tears

him:I came to see how's he doing

me: Nothing has changed he's still lying here

him:I'm so sorry

I stood up

me:How could ppl be so cruel?

him: They were just cowards

me:Now my brother is fighting for his life

him:He'll wake up

me:I want him to wake up now

he came close to me

him:All in due time

i dropped a tear again

him:Don't cry

he said wiping my rear with his thumb

him:Don't cry you'll die of a broken heart

me:Is that possible?

him:Yes and your brother needs you

me:Yah he needs me and I need him more

I looked at his arm

me:Oh I'm sorry how's your arm?

him: Getting better

me:That's great

him: Go home and rest

me:No I'm staying with him

I said looking at Chris

him:Ok be well

He walked out

me:Wait

he looked at me

me:Thank you?

him:It was only pleasure

I smiled he walked out

•

•

•

After 2 hours of me with my brother.I was holding his hand I even shared few naps.Kim walked in

Her:Hey girl

me:Hey

Her: How's everything?

me:The same

her:I'm so sorry...I brought balloons and books I know he likes reading and I brought Flowers I know he lights red roses...

I just laughed at this serious moment

her: Don't laugh

me:You know him so well

She blushed

her:Stop

me:When will your obsession with my brother end?

her:I'm not obsess

she said placing things on the table and letting the balloons fly to the ceiling

me:You still like him really?

she likes him

her:No I just cared sorry if it's a crime

Me: Ok I'm sorry don't get mad

her:Stop accusing me of liking your brother

me: I won't sorry

her:Anyway he still likes love stories? bcz I bought a love story book I was debating on getting him something else but ..

me:Kim it's ok

her:Hooo ok

I wanted to laugh she's even tense though my brother is lying here unconscious it's not like he can

see her

her:When will he wake up?

me:I don't know

she looked down

me:Kim talk to me

her:It's nothing

me:Ok...I'll go and use the ladies room

her:Ok

I left leaving her with him.I washed my face then dried it I had no make up on.After that I went back to them.But what I heard made me to ears drop

"...i love you there I said it..."

that's Kim OMG he's talking to Chris.I knew she liked him

Her: Pls don't leave I haven't tell you how I feel about you. Paige is now suspecting something I've always kept my feelings to you to myself.From the first day I saw you at the library you captured my heart and that's when I also met my best friend Paige. I slept

thinking of you ever since that day I've always been thinking about you.I know maybe you have a girlfriend or something but its cool.Although it hurts that your not mine but as long as you're happy that eases my heart.

she laughed a little

her:I'm such a coward I'm talking to you unconscious you can't even hear me even if you do you don't even know me.You know me as Paige's friend or some little girl but I can be matured and be the woman you want.I should stop talking you can't hear me.

I took a pick.She kissed his cheek.Sooo much cuteness I've never seen her being so emotional or putting her heart out.I walked in

Me:He heard you

She quickly looked at me

Her:Paige

me:He heard you don't worry

her:You had no right

me:To know what I already know but that was very

deep

her: I gotta go

me:Kim it's ok

her:I'll call

she left.What's wrong now?

•

•

•

After that I went to the house. No one was home. I took out my yogurt I ate it then went to sleep I was tired.I looked at myself in the mirror.I'm getting fat evey minute Paige gotta hit a gym and got to get a job. Bcz no man should support me.Anyway I slept like a baby.I woke up very late I looked beside me.Peter is not back.I turned on the lights since it was dark.I walked downstairs I saw Peter drinking a beer sitting on the couch watching a TV.

me:Beab?

He didn't say anything nor look at me.

Me:Beab?

still nothing.I walked to him

me:Peter?

him:What?

me:Why aren't you answering me?

him:I'm watching a mat....Yesssssss he scored!!!!!

He was yelling

him:Beab move a little.Yes! Yes! I should call my boys bcz I was right

He laughed.What happened to him?

him:This is called for a celebration

me: You need to shower first and you smell beer ew

him:Come on Babe

He said grabbing waist

me: Peter no

him:I missed you

he kissed my neck

me:I'm hungry

Neck kisses are ticklish to me

him:You smell so good

me:Peter no you're pulling my dress up

I laughed

him: Don't mind it you're taking it off anyway

me:Stop

I laughed way more he stopped and looked at me

him: Come on

me:Didn't we get intimate this morning?

him: No

me:No? That's not good

him:I know my love it's not healthy

me:At all

we laughed.I pushed him to sit down

him:I'm liking where ever this is going

me:Shhh just enjoy

he laughed like an evil person

him:This is great

I walked to him he was touching my thighs getting my dress off.I leaned to kiss him then pulled my dress up and getting on top of him

him:I'm hard already

me:Really?

him:Yah

I unbuttoned the 3 buttons of my dress on the upper front revealing my cleavage.He held my ass then squeezed it.I moaned kissing him

him: Damn

I kissed his neck

him: Where does this Paige come from?

I was grinding on his D.

me: You really wanna know?

him:Actually yah but not now

I laughed unbuttoning his shirt

him:May this moment never end

I looked at him.

me:Let's get to the good part

him:Yes yes

I smiled taking off his belt his D was already poking me. I unzipped his trouser.That feeling I'm doing all this looking at him he was also looking at me with red eyes.I pulled his D out and rubbed it.He was enjoying it he was biting his lower lip.I was rubbing it further it went harder he grab my waist tight to him.I stand on my knees on the couch then slid it in slowly while I was also pushing down my waist then let go.He closed his eyes and rested his head.It felt amazing

me: Mmmmm

him:Ahhh slowllllly

I went slowly while holding on his chest.I didn't change my stroke I went on the same Pace. We then looked at each other I licked my lips he leaned in for a kiss.We kissed then he rested hi head again. I

looked down.I saw him entering me in and out

him:Faster

I went faster

him:Faster!

I went faster I was breathing heavily he was holding my waist while my stroke was changing.

me:Ohwwwwww shiiiiit

him:Fuck! Faster!

How faster God!!!? My ass was clapping on that D

me:I'm gonna cum! Ohw God

him:Yes! ahhhhh fuck

My ass clapping was even louder than my moans.I finally came we both climaxed

him:Ahhhh fuck

me:Ahhhh yes mmmmm

I was going slow on him yet deep. I was moving my ass back and front than up and down.

him:Ahhh shit

he filled me up with his sperm.My pussy was filled till he pulled out

him:I love you Beab

me:I love you too

we kissed while he was slamming his D on my fire breathing cookie....

•

Goodnight lovies

[12/22, 12:06] Lynne: ×•••×29×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up my body hurting.

Me:Peter wake up!

I said shaking him

Me:Peter!

Him:Let's cuddle

He said kissing my neck

Me:No no no cuddles

I got out of the bed.

Him:Beab where are you going?

Me:I'm hungry Peter and you should wake up too you'll be late for work

He set up rubbing his eyes

Him:What time is it? Beab come on don't go

Me:I'm hungry

Him:You're always hungry

Me:Bcz a girl gotta eat

Him:No morning something?

He said giving me nasty smiles I just laughed

Me:You sexed me like crazy last night no thank you

I put on my sleeper's

Him:I sexed you? What I remember is you grinding on me

Me:Shut up

I laughed he came to me

Him:Come on

Me:How many times did we hit it last night

We looked at each other then laughed

Him:I don't remember

Me:Me either

We laughed we are so crazy

Him:I know 2 times in the couch when we took it here I lost of count

Me:It wasn't 3 times in the couch

Him: 3 no no not 4

We laughed so hard till my stomach hurt.

Me:I'm hungry Peter no leave me alone

Him:Pls

Me:No

He came to touch my ass then kissed me. He looked

at me then brushed my cheeks

Him:Thank you

Me:For what?

Him:For marrying me and i thank especially our Grandparents for forcing us into this marriage. I never thought I'll be in love like this.I love you so much.

Me:Awww I love you too so much

We kissed then broke it

Him:Don't ever leave me ever I'll die

Me:You won't die

Him:But I couldn't live without you.Without your lips? Touch? Smile? Beauty? Body? Everything about you

I found myself smiling like a fool

Him:You complete my love,the mother of my children my Queen

Me:Me? A mother? No

He laughed

Him:You will be one day.You will carry my heir

He said placing his hand on my belly

Him: And I will teach him soccer, cricket, rugby,baseball all kinds of sport and girls too...

Me:Woah woah woah hold on no son of mine will be taught girls and by you who said its gonna be a he? And who said I'll get pregnant? I'm not pregnant

Him:Not yet

He pecked my lips

"Peter!"

Me:Is that Kelly?

Him: Arg yah

She walked in the room

Her:Pet...!!!! Paige? What are you doing here?

Me:I live here

Her:I mean in Peter's room?

Me:Beab why she's asking....

Her:"Beab?" What is going on here?

Peter:Me and Paige are together

She laughed clapping hands

Her:I see you didn't waist time Paige Mahone

Me:Why you're here Kelly?

Her:To talk to my husband

Me:MY...!

I wanted to slap the shit out of her but she's pregnant and I'll seem like a bad guy to everyone

Me:I forgot OUR husband

I walked away

Peter:Beab where you're going?

He held my hand

Me:I can't stand this where are you coming from anyway

Her:Tell her Peter what happened yesterday

I looked at Peter if they fucked I'm killing someone!!!

Peter:I did nothing

Kelly:Oh no well I'll tell her

Me:Talk!!! I'm running out of patients

Kelly:Our dear husband drugged me

Me:What?

Peter:It wasn't something harmful why making a big deal about it?

He said looking away

Me:Kelly just talk

Her:He drugged me on my special night we didn't make love last night like normal newly weds

Me:I already know that

Peter:Oh she knows

We said looking at each other laughing

Kelly:What's funny? He drugged me and I'm pregnant

Me:What did you use Peter?

Him:Sleeping pills

I couldn't hold the laughter we both burst out laughing

Her:Is there anything funny?

Me:Oh there is so you slept the whole night?

Her:Yes I did!

Me:Thank God you did you wouldn't bare the noise from last night

We laughed

Her:What are you talking about?

Peter:I'm hungry anyone hungry

Me:Oh I am

Kelly: Whatever fat pig

Me;What did you say?

Her:Fat pig

I went to her Peter stopped me

Peter: Kelly get out!

Her:You'll pay for sleeping with my man

She said walking out

Me:He was never yours bitch!

Her: What goes around comes around piglet

She walked out

Me:I kill you!!!

Peter:Paige stop

Me:She's threatening me

Him:Don't encourage her let her be I'm with you and you alone

Me:But you once loved her

Him:Yes once

Me:What makes you think you won't fall in love again?

Him: Pai...

Me:Let's leave it Peter.It's pointless talking about it she's the mother of your child

I walked away

Him:Paige don't go

I walked out

•

•

•

After that fight at the house I went to eat out.I went to Burger King I ordered my order came I started eating.Jason came to sit opposite me

Him:Hy

I nodded my head

Him: So how are you?

Me:I'm not in the mood for anyone pls

Him:I'm sorry what's wrong

I did answer

Him:That husband giving you problems? Leave him I'm back now

Me:Lucas just leave me alone

I said calmly to him

Him:Just talk to me.I here for you...you know I still love you I've never stopped loving you.

He took my hand to his the hand that has a ring

Him:Divorce him I'm here

Me:SHUT UP JASON!

Everyone was looking at us

I stood up

Him:Paige

Me:Leave me alone I don't love you.You left me

I left my bill then walked out angry.Tears were threatening to come out.I went to sit outside of the chairs far from the restaurant.Why am I crying? I felt someone touching my shoulder I looked up

Me:Romeo

Him:Hey

He set next to me

Him:Don't cry

Me:But I'm heart broken

I attacked him with a hug I cried he brushed my back

Him:It's ok

I cried till I had hiccups. I broke the hug sniffing

Him:How do you feel now?

Me:That I cried it all out I feel better

Him:Can I take you home?

Me:Its ok I'll start at the hospital

Him:Promise you won't cry anymore?

I smiled

Me:I promise

Him:Ok be safe

Me:You too

He got into a car and left.I went to my car I drove to the hospital.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I was about to walk out of my room when Kelly called my name

Me:What?

I said annoyed

Her:Since we're alone I thought maybe you and me could hit things off

She said walking to me and touching my shirt

Me: No ew I love my woman

Her:Paige? Really? Does she give you like I do?

Me:Get off me

I moved back

Her:I'm carrying your child!

Me:Are you?

Her:What are you trying to say?

Me:We'll see when you give birth

Her:What?

Me:Let me be Kelly

Her:Are you doubting your own child? Wow

Me:I'm late for work Kelly

•

•

•

I'll post later I'm busy

[12/22, 12:08] Lynne: ×•••× 30 ×•••×

•

•

•

Next day I woke up early.I went to drink water at the kitchen.

"You up early"

I turned to look at Kelly then went for another glass

Her:Hooo drained

Me:Yes you know how Peter is.He doesn't get enough

I said eyeing her she chained right away

Her:What's that suppose to mean?

"Paige!"

Peter shouted in a sleepy voice

Me:Heard that? My man needs me.Coming babe!

I shouted back

Her:Whatever

Me:Oh I almost forgot....it's huge

I whispered to her ear she got mad

Her: What's huge?

Me:You know exactly what I'm talking about

I walked upstairs laughing. I got in the room I found Peter awake

Me:And you?

Him:Where were you?

Me:Getting water

Him;Hmmm

Me:Why asking? Don't say you missed me?

Him:No I didn't

He sounded a little sad

Me:Come on Beab don't be sad

I climbed on his laps I faced him

Him:I'm not sad

Me:Then why you got that look?

Him:No get off I need to pee

Me:Serious?

Him: Yes serious

Me:Hmmm

I ran my fingers under his vest.

Him:Paige pls

Me:Stop being mad

Him:I'm not I need to pee

Me:Do it on me

Him:What?

Me:You know what I mean

Him:You're so dirty

Me:I'm not

I said laughing

Him:What are you trying to do?

Me:Nothing

I pulled my night dress up to my waist

Him:Oh shit no Paige

Me:No?

Him:Yes

I grind ontop of his boxer's

Me: No?

He groaned

Him: Noooo

He was even laughing in between I gonna tease the shit out of him.I kissed his neck

Him:Paigggge

He groaned my name out

Me;What?

I said between the kisses

Him: Stop?

He laughed

Me: Your body is saying the opposite

I said scratching his back while moving slowly on his D.I felt it harden.

Me:Do you still want me to stop?

I looked at him he smiled looking away

Me:Ok I'll stop

I got off him.I teased him enough. I took off my goun then walked in the bathroom I went to the mirror.Gosh ny face! Where are my creams? The bathroom door burst open. I looked at the door Peter was there with a side smile.

Me:Can I help you?

He looked at me then walked to me

Me:Ok someone wants silent treatment

He came on my back then moved the hair off my

shoulder and kissed my neck.He moved my night dress up then got close to me. His D was hard as a rock I felt it on my bum.He then made me bow a little.He brushed my ass then moved his waist around.Is he gonna fuck my ass? HELL NO

me:Woah woah wait hol'up

I pushed him

Him:What?

Me:Where you gonna fuck my ass?

Him:Ahhh yes

Me:Ahhh no ...Your not fucking my ass

Him: Why not?

Me:Bcz I don't want too

Him:Paige?

Me: No Peter no you ain't fucking my ass

Him:I thought you were down for whatever

Me:No I'm not Peter no not my ass not my poor ass poop by my ass no what if it hurt? No

Him:Paige come on

Me:No you come on what if I fuck your ass huh?

Him; What!? No

Me: See no

Him:You're a girl

Me:Boys get fucked in the ass too Sir

Him:Well yah but not me girls get fucked all the time

Me:Yah not me

Him:Just once I'd love to get some of that you know

Me: Peter no

Him: Why you're so stingy it's just ass?

Me:My ass I use it for poop here is your pussy and stop complaining

Him;I don't want it

Me:Oh really?

Him:I want ass

Me:Suit yourself then

I tried walking out he stopped me

Him:pls Beab

Me:Pussy?

Him:Ass

Me:Forget it

Him:Paige don't do this to me

Me:I'm doing nothing

Him:Paige I'm horny

Me:I stopped a long time ago

Him:Fine fine I'll take the pussy

Me:Here

I said lying down

Him:Ass?

Me:You clearly not horny so I should sleep

Him:Fine fine I'm sorry

I got under covers

Him:Beab come on I'll take whatever your offering

even mouth

Me: Peter you're so dirty

I laughed

Him:Pls

Me:I'm no longer in the mood

Him:What am I going to do?

I laughed at what I was going to say

Me:Give yourself a hand

I burst in laughter

Him:Tell me you're joking

Me:I'm not

Him:Paige

He got under covers with me

Me:Don't touch me

Him:Come on

He tickled me his phone rang

Me:Stooop your phone

I was laughing he took his phone

Him:Hello

...

Him: Can't it wait?

...

Him:I'm coming now

He dropped the call

Him:Now I'm leaving without getting none

Me:We would have done few rounds by now

Him:And I regret it

Me:Next time listen to me

Him:I hope I get it from behind after work

Me:From me? Oh forget it

Him: Why you're so evil?

Me: I'm not evil

Him:You are...Ass? Just ass? You're evil

He walked to the bathroom I laughed till my stomach

hurt

•

I'm busy for the moment buy I'll continue later

[12/22, 12:09] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

I was on my phone the whole day and I have been thinking about finding a job.But no luck I want to get out of the house.Anyway I craved my yogurt I blv I left some in the fridge.I ran to the kitchen Kelly was watching TV I thought she already left but ain't my biz.I went to the fridge I couldn't find my yogurt.Where is it? I know I left it here.I went to the lounge.

Me:Kelly didn't you come across my yogurt at the fridge?

Her:Are you accusing me of eating your yoghurt?

I don't want to start a fight I'll handle this

professionally

Me:No Kelly I'm asking if you didn't see it?

Her:Well then No Paige

Me:Ok

I went to my room. Heck yah she ate my yogurt but I'll let it slid and I should go from this toxic house.I took my things then walk out

Kelly:Where are you going?

Me:Listen Kelly stay in your lane and bitch I stay in mine

Then I walked out with so much confidence. I drove to the hospital I should really spend sometime with brother. My phone rang it was Dad

Me:Hey Dad

Him:Hello princess how are you?

Me:I'm awesome and you guys?

Him:Not good we are coming from the hospital

Me: Dad is everything okay?

Him:No nothing is worse just the same situation

Me:It will change father

Him: I hope so

Me:It will

Him; Ever since you got married you left us for good

Me:No Dad I didn't

Him:Then come by and visit

I giggled a little

Me:I will Dad

Him;That's my princess

Me:Love you Dad

Him:I love you more

Me:Bye

Him:Bye

We dropped the call. So I continued driving to the go in completely silence thinking about my marriage.I never thought I'll marry someone and actually fall in love this is insanely awesome!!! Oh God just thinking

about him makes me feel type away.My whole body reacts I can feel his touch, kissing hmmmmm.I felt hot instantly hooo I should focus on the road you don't want me causing an accident now do you? So yah.I drove to the hospital I went to his ward.His door was open I saw Kim holding Chris's hand looking so emotional. I should not interrupt she really loves him.Kim never cried let me say I've never seen her cry this is a first. She was kissing Chris's hand,rubbing on it.And talking but I couldn't hear.I should let her spend time with him.I walked away I went to sit at the hospital chairs.I stayed there for a lil while I was deep in my thoughts a man behind me shouted on the phone.

Man:Find me a PA soon and stop telling me stories

...

Man:You got 24hrs Mr!

He dropped the call angrily. He needs a PA and I could be.I mean I can work with him I really need a job actually desperately need one.I turned myself

Me:Hello

He also turned

Him;Are you talking to me?

Me:I'm Paige

I said handing my hand smiling but he just looked at me with "who are you? And what do you want?" Look.

Him:What do you want?

Me:I couldn't help but over hear your conversation on the phone just one

Him:Like sticking your nose where it doesn't belong right?

Oh he's rude

Me:Sorry Sir I was trying to help

Him: Help like what? Why daughter is injured there young lady I got no time for this chit chat

Me:Shoot me for trying to help Sir!

I said moving my head then set probably on my chair. I need that job though...

"Who said you are?"

I turned

Me:Paige... Paige Mahone

Him:Unemployed?

Me: Yah

Him:Here's my card

I took it

Him:Well talk in my hotel

Me:Excuse me

Him:Well have some chit chat

He touched my chin I got him off

Me:I wasn't meaning that

Him:Then what do you mean

Me:Woah do you think I would sleep with you?

Him:Dressed like that? Yes

Me:I'm married Sir for your information

I said showing him my ring

Him:The ring that you bought to make the boys go

away? I know your tricks

Me: Wow

I threw the card on his face

Me:Jerk Ass!

I walked away.How dare he?I walked to my brothers ward and there was no one.Where is Kim? Maybe she left.I went to sit next to my brother.

Me:Hey big bro

I held his hands then laid my head on his hand and I went sleepy.Next thing I feel someone squeezing my hand. I didn't mind it but it kept on squeezing it. I woke up.It was Chris he's waking up! Tge machines beep.I was so lost.What should I do? I started Calling Doctors and nurse's.

Me:Chris I'm here don't panic

I said crying then Doctors came in rushing

"Ma'am pls leave the room"

Me:Can't I stay...

"No you can't"

I was escorted out.The machines kept beeping oh Lord save my brother I don't wanna lose him.

•

•

•

After what felt like forever a Doctor came to us.I was with my family and Kim.I didn't bother calling Peter bcz I know he's busy

Me:Doc what happened?

Doc:He's stable and all but will have to remain in the hospital until he recovers

We all breathed out heavily we were holding our breathes.

Dad:So is he awake?

Doc:Yes he is awake

Mom: Him staying here is not a big deal we are completely ok with it

Me:So can we see him?

Doc:If only you don't pressurise him he needs time to clear his mind.Bcz he heard something shocking that's why he was like that

Me:What do you mean Doc?

Doc:His body reacted to bad news his heart started to panic he has been fighting to wake up for a while.We really thank the person who was with him.I blv you Ma'am

He said to me

Me:Me? No no I said nothing other than greeting him

Kim:We would love to thank you Doc can they see him now?

Doc:Yes pls follow me

My parents followedi I stayed with Kim

Me:Kim what happened?

Her:What do you mean?

Me:You and Chris in the room?

Her:When?

Me:Today?

Her:I wasn't here today I was...

Me:Pls don't lie

Her:I swear

Me: You woke him up but what did you say?

Her:I'm running late I'm taking my little sister to the park I gotta go

She left.Why she's so secretive? Anyway I went after my parents. I found them laughing with Chris I'm so happy he's ok.

Chris:Sis

Me:Big bro

Him:Come and give big bro a hug

We hugged

Him:I missed you

Me: I missed you too.

Him:And who came with these?

Asking the things Kim bought him

Mom:Who really?

Chris:She bought my favorite book I actually have this one but I love reading it over and over. Did you bought'em Sis?

Me: Ahhh...yes yes you got me

I said faking giggles

Him: Wow thank you Sis your the best no one knows me like you do

Me:Yep no one

I faked giggles again.

Dad:Good seeing you son but we gotta go to work

Chris: Yes Dad

Mom: I love you baby

He kissed Chris's forehead

Us: Bye

Them:Bye

They left

Chris:Where's Kim?

Why he's asking her?

Me:Uhm she's at home

Him:Wasn't she here a couple of hours ago?

I struggled uttering words

Me:Well uhmmm yes

Him:She was the one who was here right?

Me:I don't know

Him:Oh

Me:What's with you and Kim?

Him:Nothing it's like I felt her presence

Me:Since when you care about Kim

Him:Since the day we...I mean uhm I...I...

Me:Chris? What are you saying?

Him:Nothing can I get water?

Me:Peter what happened between you and Kim?

Him:I didn't see it was her I swear

Me:Chris?

Him:Pls don't confront her

Me:No I won't

Him:We kissed but once

Me:How? Where?

Him:In a club it was very dark you barely can see anyone so I grab this chick and started kissing her then I noticed her after a long time plus her perfume was recognisable

Me:And Kim didn't tell me About it

Him:She was so embarrassed Paige she ran away since then she never acted cool me around. She acts nervous or she leaves

Me:Why haven't you talked about it?

Him:I tried she can't stand me

Me:When did this happen?

Him:Years ago when you two started becoming friends

Me:Woah woah you're saying my friend and you kissed 2 years ago and you never talked about it?

Ever?

Him:Yah

I laughed

Him:Why you're laughing

Me: How you two are scared of each other

Him:I ain't scared of no girl

Me:Hoooo right?

Him:She was here that means she cares about me

He said with glowing eyes

Me:This can't be for real 2 years? Wow brother

Him:Shut up

I laughed even harder

Me:I'll talk to Kim and say it's ok maybe she didn't want me hearing about this "lovin"

I laughed

Him:Don't you have some chores to do like cooking

He laughed

Me:Nothing wrong with my cooking just some ppl don't appreciate it

Him:Yah right

He kept on laughing

Me:I'm leaving

Him:No no wait have you cooked for Peter yet?

She said holding he's laughter I was so bored

Me:Yes I have

Him:What did he say?

I just looked at him annoyed

Me:He didn't like...

I didn't finish he laughed so hard

Me:It ain't funny

Him:It is

He laughed

Him:How about Cook for the while family?

Me:One day you'll miss my cooking

Him:Ahhh no I won't Sis you need extra lessons on cooking

Me:Shut up Chris infact I'm leaving

Him:Ey don't leave

I took my bag and stood up

Him:Tell me more

He was laughing holding on to his belly.I walked out.Stupid

[12/22, 12:09] Lynne: ×•••×31×•••×

•

•

•

"Wakey wakey"

Peter whispered in my ear

Me:I was sleeping Peter

Him:I bought you something

Me:Can't I have peace pls just for once in this house?

Him:Come on

He started kissing on me

Me:Ok ok I'm up

I opened my eyes Gosh I'm tired

Him:Get up Beab

I set up

Me:What?

Him:Breakfast in bed

Me:Seriously Peter you woke my beauty sleep for this?

Him:Hey don't get mad I was trying to be romantic

Me: I'm sorry my love it's cute

He curved his lips making a sad face that made me laugh at him

Me:Stop making that face

Him:You yelled at me

Me:I didn't... Love I'm so sorry sweety

I said crawling to him

Me:Don't be sad if you get sad I get sad too

I said brushing his cheeks I also made a sad face

Him: OK I'm sorry

We pecked lips

Him:I love you

Me:I love you too

Him: I bought cream too

He said ducking a strawberry inside the cream then made me bite

Me:Delicious

Him:Like you

He tickled me

Me:Peter noooooo

He kept on tickling me he stopped after a while I catch my breath

Him:Great warm up

Me:My stomach hurts Peter

I said hitting his arm playfully

Me: When are we hitting a gym though?

We dug in eating

Him:Gym? There's noway you're hitting a gym

Me:Why not?

Him:I'm not loosing all this Beab noway look at you

He brushed my legs with his finger

Him:So smooth my love

He kissed them

Me:Pls stop I'm still asking why not?

Him: I told you I like you this way

Me: But I don't

Him:Paige

Me:Peter

Him:Give me a kiss

Me:I'll see myself obes with you not seeing anything

wrong

Him:You're fine I actually got a thing for fat women

What did he say?

Me: You got a thing for FAT women? Be specific PETER

Him:I meant to say chubby yah chubby that's the word

Me:I'm fat Peter?

Him:Honey no you gained weight in the right places love I mean look at you I love your ass that's why I would love to...

He bite his lip then get on top of me

Me:What?

Him:I want it from the back

He whispered

Me:I thought I already said no

Him:It won't hurt

I gave him eyes

Him:Ok maybe a little

Me:Peter pls you should go to work

Him:I'm off today

Me:Oh you don't say

Him:Yep let's take a shower together

Me:Let me finish this up first

I said stuffing my mouth with the bacons, eggs,toast,strawberries everything that was on my plate

Peter:My love slow down

I stared at him

Him:Sorry

•

•

•

We were watching a movie in the leaving room when Kelly showed up.

Her:I never thought you 2 will ever be together

We were cuddling

Me:Yah

Her: You look cute though

Me:We are watching a movie if you don't mind

Her:Oh sorry

We heard a knock Kelly went to open. Me and Peter were still watching the TV

Kelly: Can I help you?

"I got a package for Mrs Jackson"

Kelly:Oh I'm Mrs Jackson

"Paige"

Her:Ohhh PAIGE door!

She walked back to her seat I went to the door

Me:Hello

"Hey"

Me:I'm Paige

"Package for you"

He gave me a beautiful pink box

Me:Oh thank you

"Oh and this"

He gave me a box of chocolates

Me:Thanks...uhm wait who are you you don't look like a delivery guy

Him:uhm...

He ran away.

Me; Oky

I shut the door then went to sit down

Kelly: Someone got an admire

Me:Shut up

Peter:It's from who?

Me: I'm trying to find out

I said opening the box

Me: Ohhh

Peter: Another box?

There was another box inside the box.I opened the other one there was another box then opened another the was another box.

Kelly: This may take a while

Me:I've never seen anything like this before

I laughed.This went to till I opened another box to find a folded letter. I read it [I heard your brother woke up yesterday I wanted to be there but I was stuck up at work.I'm really happy for you I hope you have a great day. Love:Romeo]

Me:That is so cute

Peter:"Love:Romeo" really?

Me:Oh stop being jealous Beab

Him:No I'm not

He said cleansing his teeth

Me:Calm down

Him:Open the last box bcz I bet it is since it's very small

Kelly: Maybe a promise ring

Me:You would glad huh?

Her:Very

Me: You're so evil

Peter: I'm running out of patients Paige open the box

Me:Ok ok

I opened the last box

Me:Wow

Peter:Earrings

Me:Ain't they so beautiful oh Romeo is so cute

Peter:Hmmm actually who is this Romeo?

Me:I don't know his last name but he looked like one of those business man not like you my love

Peter:What are you trying to SAY Paige?

Me:Ahhh you look great too my love but he looked like a...uhm like one of those guys in movies who are business man and have illegal business on the side

Him:What? Describe him

Me:Tall very tall than me,light beard,nice hair,

beautiful light skinned if I should put it out there

Him:No you should not

Me: Sorry he's light skinned he's very cute I'm so sorry love but he is cute

Him:What car was he driving

Me:Oh he wasn't driving someone was driving him he....

Peter stood up

Me:Peter?

He left

Me:He's not cute!!!

He didn't come back

Me:Oh God

Kelly: He's so mad

She laughed

Me:Be glad I haven't tell him about you and Leon bcz you might regret doing that although you don't but that information is useless now he doesn't love you

anymore

Her:I didn't know you got evil in you too

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Romeo is seriously pressing my buttons. I drove to his house the guards wouldn't let me in

Me:Romeo! Romeo! Come out let's talk like real men

Nev walked out

Him:Let him go boys

They let me go I walked in I was fuming with anger

Me:Where is that Boss of yours? Huh? Romeo!!!!

"Shhh you'll wake my beautiful princess up stares"

He turned around the chair

Him:Its been a while Mr Jackson

Me:We need to talk

Him:Care to explain?

Me:About my wife

Him:Which one?

He laughed along with Nev

Nev:Yah Boss good one

I looked at Nev

Him Sorry

Me: You know very well which one

Romeo: The one we are both interested in?

Too bad he's far from me I want to punch him in the face!!!

•

•

•

To be continued....

[12/22, 12:09] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I've been in my room for a while now.Peter ain't taking any of my calls nor text I hope he's not mad.It's dark outside now I'm very worried about him.My Mom called

Her:Hey honey

Me:Hey Mommy

Her:You sound down

Me: It's nothing Mom so how are you guys?

Her: We are missing our cute daughter that's all

Me:I miss you guys as well

I took a peek on the window no one was showing up.Peter is making me worried.

Mom; Paige is everything fine?

Me:Yah yah ofcause...uhm I gotta go Mom

Her:Ohk I love you

Me: I love you more Mom

I dropped the call.I kept on passing up and down like a mad woman thinking about Peter.is he OK? Where ever he is.The door opens up

Me:Peter

Him;Her honey

I ran to hug him he looked exhausted

Me:Are you OK? Are you hurt? Oh my love

I kept on turning his head and body around

Him:I'm fine Beab I'm tired

Me:Ok I get it you do look exhausted... Let me run a bath for you ok?

He nodded

Me:Wait

I walked to the bathroom. I a did bubble for him.

Me:Bubble bath done my love

He got up

Me:I'll help you

I escorted him to the bathroom

Him: How about you join me?

Me:I already showed love

Him:Why?

He sulked

Me:Bcz I needed too...Get in Peter stop asking so many questions

Him:Fine help me take my clothes off

Me:You're tired not dying

Him:Pls

Me: ok

I took off his Shirt

Him: Soft hands

He placed my hand on his chest

Him:Magic touch

Me:I would like to see you magically getting on that bathtub and start bathing

Him:Yes Ma'am

He got in and started bathing.

Me:I'll go and lie down

I walked to my room I was on my night dress I just laid on top of the covers.I was about to doze off to lala land when I felt a heavy on me I opened my eyes

Me:Peter?

Him:Hey babe

He kissed my back

Me:I'm trying to sleep

Him:I know

He kept on kissing my neck

Me:Peter you're wet

"Peter! Peter!"

Kelly walked in yelling Peter's name

Peter:What?

Kelly: The baby

Peter:Is the baby OK?!

Her: Yes but come here

Peter:Just talk

Her:The baby is kicking Peter

Peter ran to her then placed his hand on her belly.I set up

Peter:I felt it too

He was happy I heard it in his voice

Kelly:Best feeling ever

Peter:Oh he's gonna be a boxer I tell you

Kelly:No it's a she

Peter:No he's a boy I feel it

They started laughing and saying things I didn't understand.After a while Kelly left

Peter:I felt my baby kicking babe

Me:I'm happy for you

Him:You don't sound happy

Me:I am

Him: I know you don't trust Kelly but so do I.I need a DNA test when the baby is born

Me:I didn't say I don't trust Kelly

Him:Beab...

Me: I'm tired Peter

I got under covers

Him:Beab don't sleep mad at me

I didn't reply

Him:Paige?

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

Peter thinks lying I mean how evil does he think I am? Bcz this is his baby I swear to God it's his I would never lie like that. I've slept with him all this time no one else.It hurts when he says he want's a DNA test.

I swear when it comes out positive he'll be sorry he'll beg for my forgiveness. Now all I have to do is to make sure that hoe Paige doesn't get pregnant too.I was hurt seeing them like that just now.In bed Peter kissing her it hurts.It hurts way more that they even fucked and not mother fucken once.Paige took everything from me by one stupid dick she needs to grow up.By the way her dude was the one thirsty bcz she wasn't good enough.She better just swallow up that and move on but far away from my Peter.I'll use this baby as bait from now on.And Paige can't get pregnant at all that would be a mass.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:10] Lynne: ×•••× 32 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up it's Saturday and it's hot.I feel like hitting

the beach with my friend if she's not still angry.I took my cell I called her she answered after sometime

Me:Heyyy

Her:Paige

Me:Soooo? Don't you feel like going to the beach?

Her:No

Me:Come on

Her:Bu....

Me:Pls I beg you we can go to that place you like

Her:What place?

Me:That boring place near the beach

Her: But you hate it there

Me:I got no choice

Her:I feel like drowning myself on my pool

Me: Are you insane no...look let's meet there in 2 hours I miss you

Her:No...

Me:Don't be late

I hung up before she could say further.I want her to be there just to clear our mind and talk about her and Chris she got a lot of explaining. She lied to me for this long I'm her best friend at least I deserve to know.

"Morning my love"

Me:I'm going out today

I said taking out my bikini's

Him:Where?

Me:To the beach with a friend of mine

Him:Friend?

Me:Yes with a friend

Him: But I didn't know you had friends

Me: Bcz I never told you about her and you've never met her

Him:Oh so you'll be gone the whole day?

Me:Yep...after the beach we will head to her house

and probably spend the night with her

Him: Why?

Me: Bcz I miss my friend we got a lot to catch up on

Him:Are you still mad about last night?

Me:About you playing a romantic couple with Kelly in front of me last night? No no not at all

I said going through the closet looking for suitable bikini

Him:Paige come on

Me:Ahhh this would be perfect

I pulled out matching pink bikini

Him:What's that?

Me:Bikini

Him:You ain't wearing that with these thirsty beasts out there

Me:Peter?

Him:No no put it back

Me:No Peter they are actually new smell they are

fresh

Him:I ain't smelling shit and you ain't going nowhere wearing that

Me:Quit being jealous it's a bad colour on you

I walked to the bathroom

Him:Pa...

I shut the door. He's so jealous yet cute.Anyway I took the shower then wrap on a towel I went back to the bedroom.He was on the bed looking like he'll about to cry I wanted to laugh

Him: Paige don't do this

Me:Do what?

Him:Wearing this...ppl we'll see my assets MY ASSETS Paige I own all of that

I looked at him.He was specifying the words

Me:Wow Mr Jackson not so long ago I was fat to you

Him:Come on you ain't fat it's just you're fat to be modelling

I looked at him shocked HOW DARE HE!!

Him:No no no no no my love don't take it the wrong way

Me:I should not? You just called me fat!

Him:My love no

He came to me

Him:You're so sexy flawless smooth skin

He brushed my shoulder then kissed it

Him:Small waist

He touched my waist then pulled me to his body then looked at me

Him:And perfect booty

He spank and grabbed my ass roughly

Me:Peter?

I laughed

Him:You're beautiful my love

Me:Them I'll totally wear that bikini

Him:What? No

Me:There won't be any men

Him: Really?

Me:Maybe few

Him: No no no

Me:And the waiters count too

Him:What waiters?

Me:At that place uhmmm I forgot it's name but yah it's near the beach

Him:You'll behave?

Me:I've always behaved even if a hot shirtless guy passes by I won't look

Him:Paige!

Me:Sorry I won't even look at any man

Him:If a man approaches you what do you do

Me:Run away

Him:Good girl

I smiled

Him:Now go and make me proud

I smiled he went to the bathroom.He's not for real though right? Anyway I wore the bikini with white filas and put everything I'll need in my small Gucci bag.I did my hair and make up.Peter came out after a little while

Him:What? Hell no! I changed my mind

Me:What?

Him:Cover yourself

He gave me a swimsuit cover

Me:What?

Him: Come on wear it

Me:Peter?

Him:Wear it Paige

Me:You're making my life a leaving hell

Him:That's my job now wear that now here and right now

Me:Aaargggg fine!

I wore white swimsuit cover.He walked to me then tied it

Him:There we go

Me:I look like a Granny going to her 87th birthday

Him:A hot Granny

Me:Ew

Him:That's not a bad thing

Me:To you

Him:You're free to go my love take care

He kissed my cheek

Me:Peter..

Him:Don't you dare to tak that off!

Me: Yah yah

I walked out.This is not comfortable at all

Kelly:Ohhh where is the Granny heading too

Me:Save it if you still want your teeth full

I walked out then to my car.I drove off on the road I called Kim

Me:Girl

Her:I'm heading there where you at?

Me: Heading there too

Her:Ok

I dropped the call. I drove till I reached my destination. I took off the ugly thing I don't know why I have it. Anyway I walked in I went to sit at the bar

Me: Hey

Him:Hey

Me:Can I have uhmmm...know what surprise me with a cocktail a special one

Him:Yes Ma'am

He did his thing mixing type of fruits

Me:No alcohol pls I don't drink

Him:Nonalcoholic is it

I smiled he then started shaking the mixtures

"Hey girl"

Me:Hey

We hugged

Me:What will you order?

Her:Can I get him he's yummy

We laughed

Me:You can not

Her:Why not isn't he on the menu?

Me:No

Me and the waiter laughed

Her:Why not?

Me: Bcz he's a person and a waiter to serve us

Her:Hmmm ok ok fine I'll just suck that up then

Me:Oh Kim

We laughed

Her:Where is the manager of this place? He should put you on the menu he'll get a lot of customers I'll

be the first one

She winked at him

Me:Kim stop the poor guy is mixing me my cocktail

Her: Oh sorry

We laughed

•

•

•

I'm sleepy sorry

[12/22, 12:10] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After that me and Kim went to take a walk on the beach enjoying the sun and the fresh air.We were eating ice cream.I thought it was a right time to pop up the question

Me:So you and my brother huh?

She paused a little

Her:Huh?

Me:You and my brother

Her:What's with me and your brother?

Me:I should be asking you that?

Her:What do you mean Paige?

Me:You have history with him and you never told me

Her:History?

Me:Kim pls

Her:I gotta go

She turned

Me:Oh no you don't

I pull her by the arm

Me:I'm not mad Kim actually I'm happy for you.Look,Chris told me everything

She looked shocked

Her:Everything?

Me:Yes don't worry I know about the kiss

She looked away

Me:It's OK...I mean you like him he likes you so who am I to stop you

Her:He said we kissed?

Me:Yes and it's ok

I pulled her for a hug

Me:This is awesome you should talk to him you know or he should talk to you? I don't know friend

Her: I want nothing to do with Chris OK?!

She yelled

Me:I thought...

Her:YOU thought nothing Paige infact stop thinking and leave me alone.If this was your idea of going out it was horrible

She left me there shocked.I don't understand her.I should stop stinking my nose in ppls business. Whatever...

•

•

•

After that horrible day I had I went back to the house.I opened the door the lights were on since I went home late.I got in Peter was watching soccer there was no site of Kelly thank God I don't want her drama,actually I don't want anyone's drama now I'm tired my body wants to relax.

Me:Hey Beab

I closed the door behind me.He looked at me

Me:What?

Him:Nothing

Then he focused on the TV I went to sit on his couch.I laid down I placed my feet on his laps.

Me:Beab pls rub my feet

Him:Ahhh no

I looked at him

Me: Why not?

Him: I'm watching a TV

Me:And I can't see that?

Him:Why you're here this late?

Me:What?

Him:You left here in the morning what time is it now?

I set up I looked at him

Me: I was at the beach

Him: Beach? Really?

Me: What do you mean Peter?

Him:Check your phone

Me:Wha...?

Him:Check your phone Paige!

I sighed then took out my phone on my bag.Ohhhh shittttt!!! 41 missed calls 20 messages how in the world didn't I hear them? Oh my phone is on silent but but .... But how?

Him:I called you Paige and you didn't answer

Me:Beab...

Him:I need to lie down it's been a long day

He stood up and left.Oh God what have I done? I didn't realise my phone was on silent.

Me:Peter?

I ran after him I walked in our room

Me:Peter Beab I didn't realise it was on silent

He get the bed ready

Me:My love?

Him:I'm tired

Me:I'm sorry

He got in the bed. Oh I messed up big time oh God.

Me:I was at the beach Beab alone at that place I always forget it's name. I swear Beab

I wanted to cry bcz he was so sad. I thought I should take a quick shower then to talk to him. And yes I did I took that shower and get on my night dress.I got under covers

Me:Peter? Can we talk about this don't go to sleep angry at me

He was facing the right side our bed is pointing north.

Me:Sweety?

I crawled to him I ran my fingers on his back he sooo freakin smooth but Paige get your shit together

Me:Peter?

I called his name softly

Him: I'm trying to sleep Paige

Me: Beab I know you're mad but pls let's just talk

I was brushing his back damn he was so smooth.He turned then faced me

Him:Hurry

Me:Uhm I was at the beach...

Him:Stop with the beach pls

Me:But I was the day didn't go as planned with Kim she left before we could even start the day

Him:You were by yourself the whole day?

Me:Yes and I'm exhausted

I sad brushing his abs were he working out? He got some few muscles going on and I ain't taking about his skin what did he moisturise his skin today he's sooo damn fine I can't get my hands of him! Lord thank you for...

"Paige you ain't listening to me!!!"

I got my hand off him then pulled my head to my senses

Me:Sorry love

I did a ridiculous smile

Him:Can you be for real bcz I'm hurting

Me:I know Baby and I'm sorry

Him:I was starting to worry about you and not knowing where you were got me very worried

Me:I'm soooooorry

I touched his abs again ok my baby is fine y'all I was smiling like a fool

Him:Paige?

Me: Huh?

I looked up to him biting my lower lip

Him:What are you doing?

Me:Uhm nothing

Him: Let's sleep then

He moved away from me

Me:Just like that?

Him: What do you mean?

Me:No goodnight kiss and cuddles or something wayyy more interesting

I said getting close to him

Him:Ahhh no bcz I haven't forgiven you yet

Me: What do you mean now?

Him:No little girl

He slept

Me:But?

Him:I'll forgive you tomorrow

Me:Have you seen how hot you are tonight and you're punishing me

Him:I saw how you were looking at me

Me:I need you Bro

Him:Sleep Paige or you'll have eye bags

Me: Eye bags? You're right and I will hate that to happen but Love just cuddles.You just holding me will feel like a dream

I said smiling to myself.He turned to look at me with his small eyes looking so fucken sexy!!!!! He licked his pink lips then smiled I swear I literally wet myself

Him:Ok let's cuddle

He held me from the back then he kissed my neck I giggled.He smelled amazaballsssassss!!!

Me:Does this mean you forgive me?

Him:Don't push it

Me:Ok

•

•

•

Sorry guys for taking time to post and posting short inserts my phone is giving me problems

[12/22, 12:11] Lynne: ×•••× 33 ×•••×

•

•

•

Me:Peter!?

...

Me:Pete...!?

Him:I'm here

He came back with a tray full of food

Him:Oh you're up

He said smiling

Me:Hooo what did I do to deserve this kind of

treatment?

He set down then started eating! What the fuck?

Me:Peter?

Him:Hm?

Me:Isn't that for me?

Him:What for?

He look at his watch

Him: Oh I'm gonna be late...what am I going to wear? Did you see the weather outside? It's raining cats and dogs there

He ate his plate

Him:This fruit salad is a bomb

Is he serious?

Him:Oh you should ask Kelly to make you some too...

Me:What did you say?

Him:Beab pls I'm not up for arguing right now

Me:Wha...?

He got up

Him:I'm taking a shower and don't you dare touch my fruit salad

He left.What the hell is going on here?I went to look at the window

Me:Oh God how am I suppose to go out in this rain? Oh wait...I can't i'm stuck in HERE!

Oh Gosh.I went to my closet I took out my black tracksuit with my fluffy boots.I set at the edge of the bed Peter walked out of the bathroom

Him:I hope you didn't eat my salad...

Me:No I didn't EAT your salad.Why eating salad it's cold?

Him:It's sooo good

He set down eating it

Me: Arg I gotta take a shower

I went to shower leaving him eating salad.I mean duhhh at this weather? I don't mind the fact KELLY made it I'm OK really.

•

•

I was at the lounge watching TV when my phone rang and it was Peter

Me:What?

Him: Ohhh what a warm welcome my love

Me:What Peter?

Him:I'm coming

Me:You've never informed me when coming what's special today?

Him:Bcz I left and you looked really angry...anyway...

Me:Anyway anything Peter Gosh

I dropped the call

Me:Argg!

"Trouble in paradise?"

Me:None of your business

Kelly:So rude

She set down with a huge smile on her face

Me:You're suffocating me Kelly leave!

Her:Woah woah hold on girly.Watch your tone with me

Me:Are you talking to me?

Her:No behind you...ofcause I'm talking to you dummy

Me:I'm not in the mood for your bull shit ok

Her:mmmm

Me:Idiot

Her:Hey hey watch it

Me:Piss off

Her:I see you grew some balls

Me:Be glad you're pregnant bcz I would have killed you a long time ago

Her:Oh pls

Peter walked in.He took off his jacket and hat.

Him:Hey Baby

Kelly:Hey sweety

I looked at her

Peter:Not you Kelly...Hey my love

He pecked my lips I didn't

Him:Sooo how are you doing so far?

Me: How am I doing? Am I admitted to the hospital but I don't know? Peter how am I suppose to do huh? Suck here with this lunatic of baby mamma of yours and you know what I need sleep!

I was shouting I'm sick and tired of leaving here

Him;My love don't be like that

He held my hand

Him: I came back from my job to be with you

Kelly: Completely waist of your precious time

Me:Shut up pimple face

Her:Fuck off

Me:Same to you

Peter:Stop fighting jeez! Just act like a normal family

pls...

Me:A normal family?

Kelly: A family?

Peter:Yes a nice happy family pls for the sake of my visitor

I was completely lost

Me:I don't care about your visitor ok this is not a zoo my ppl keep coming here I had enough of this kangaroo

Kelly: Did you call me...?

Me:Yes...yes I did

Her:I'll get you for this

Peter:Ladies pls! Pls just get along she'll be staying here for a week then she's gone ok?

Me:Wait a minute..."She"?

Him:Yes

Me:What?

Him:She's a good girl

Me: She's your sister? Pls tell me she's your sister

Him: Uhm...

He scratched his head

Me:Oh she's not isn't she?

Him:Well no but she's a good friend.don't worry

Me:No I'm not worried

Him:Ok she's at the airport can she come?

Me:You already said she can come to her right?

Him:Actually no she just asked me I said I'll ask my wife first

Me:You said that?

Him:Yes my love I'm married I can't decide on my own

Me:Peter? Am I written "STUPID"? on my forehead?

Him:No sweety

Me:You said we should behave your visitor is coming you haven't asked me then so pls she can come you already decided on that

I walked away

Kelly:Stop being hard headed he said she's a friend

She laughed

Her:And he's totally banging her

Peter: Shut up Kelly

He ran after me

Me:What Peter?

Him: My love don't worry she's seriously a friend I promise you I've known her my whole life I grew up with her she's like a sister.I would never betray you I love you

Me:Hmmm

Him:Come on say it too

He said kissing my neck I pushed him off

Me: No

We heard a knock

Kelly:That's probably her

Peter went to open I also went to the lounge. She

walked in and NO NO NO NO NO NO there's noway on earth I'll ever trust this girl!!!!

" Hey everyone "

She said while chewing a gum and smiling

Her:Hey bro

They hugged

Her:You've been working out hmmm

She said squeezing his shoulders

Me:Excuse me

I got her off

Me: Hy

Her: Hey

Me: Paige his WIFE

We handshake

Her:Carolina his childhood friend

I faked a smile I DON'T LIKE HER.And what she's wearing she got fashion sense that I don't deny but cover your assets in front of my man he get easily

attracted

Her:Anyway ohhh um tired Peter can you show me my room

She winked at him

Me:I'll show you

Her:No Pe...

Me:I'll show you

I kept a straight face but shouting

Peter: Have fun ladies

We walked away

Her:So much rain huh?

I was looking at her outfit.She got jean bum shorts that shows almost your whole ass and small crop tee more like a bra all her boobs are out. She got red heels on and her hair is blue WHO MAKES THEIR HAIR BLUE!?!???!!!! She got rings all her face on the lounge,eye brows, lip man how did Peter become friends with her?! Her phone rang we were on her room

Her:Close the door quick

Me:Excuse me?

She closed the door she answered the call

Her;Hmmmm heyy

She sounded like a person moaning what the fuck?

Her:Hmmmm tonight phone sex I promise

She giggles.Phone sex? What kind of craziness is that?

Her:I'm already wet stop

She moaned that got me very uncomfortable.I walked to the door

Her;Hey wait

I looked at her

She ran to me

Her:Sorry about that the call the cell caught me off guard. Uhm thanks for everything

I faked a smile I walked out she tapped my ass I looked at her.She was smiling and biting her lower

lip

Her:Peter got a real deal and two chicks in one house I would love that luck

She closed the door I was so shocked Peter walked to me

Him:So?

Me:She gave me weird smiles

He laughed

Him;He likes you

Me: Huh?

Him:She's bisexual she get along with men and women and I think she likes you

He walked away laughing

Me:What?

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:11] Lynne: ×•••× 34 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was at Burger king I'm meeting my Mom here.I can't wait to see her I miss her alot.She immediately walked in after me

Her:Hey sweety

Me:Hey Mom

She set down

Her:Shall I say you're gaining weight and glowing

She was so happy and giggling I was annoyed ppl should stop saying I'm fat.She kept on pinching my cheeks

Me:Mom?

Her:What honey admiring my sweet sweet daughter actually my only daughter

Me:Mom stop pls

Her:Ok ok your Dad should see you he would be so

proud. So Peter is treating you well huh or he already planted a seed on you too?

Me:Mom pls I'm on pills ok I'm very careful

Her: Pills?

Me:Yes Mom pills can we pls change the topic now?

Her:Honey pills ain't 100% safe

Me:Nothing is 100% safe Mom can we talk about something else that's less irritating?

Her: Whatever but you should see a Doctor you might never know

Me:Mom I hate kids

Her:I know you do but you might never know maybe you'll love your own

Me:Mom how will I have a peaceful night with that thing crying over nothing? My body and face comes first I can't even change a dipper

Her:Woah hold on a little you know Kelly is expecting a baby so so does you,you will be that child second Mom

Me:Me? Oh no thank you I wasn't there when they were making that baby

Her:A child is beautiful Paige you'll see when yours is growing inside you

Me:I'm not pregnant nor ever getting pregnant

She laughed

Her:One day you'll want the whole soccer team

Me: Not cool Mom

Her:Ok ok sorry

We laughed

•

•

•

After that lunch with Mom she rushed back to work.I was getting ready to leave too but someone set on my table

Me:Romeo?

Him: Hey

Me:Hey

Him: I see you were leaving

Me:Yah

Him:I would love to give you a ride

Me:I'd love that too but my car is here so Yah

Him:I can tell my uhm friend to follow us with your car while you hop in mine

Me:Thanks but no I don't think my husband we'll agre...

Him:I beg you pls

Me: OK ok fine but this once

Him:Thank you

I smiled taking my things

Him:Need any help?

Me:You can help me with this actually

I gave him one of my bags we walked to his car a guy came out

Me: Do I know you?

Guy:Me? Pshhh no

He giggled

Me:Oh maybe I'm mistaking you with someone I know

Guy;Yah that must be it

Romeo:He's a friend of mine his name....

Guy:Nev

Me:Pa...

Nev:Paige

He took my hand to his

Him:Paige Mahone

He kissed my hand

Me:Oh you're such a gentleman

He laughed while dramatically fixing his shirt and eyeing Romeo

Romeo: He'll be driving your car

Me: Ok here are my keys

Nev:Thank you

I pointed my car he went to it.Romeo opened the door for me I got in he did as well. While in the car

Me:So you got ppl driving you were ever you want to go?

Him:Well yah but I'm not that going out kinda person I usually go maybe 2 or 3 times a week

Me: Ain't you a business man?

Him:Yes yes I am I'm a business man but I work in my house

He's really strange what about meetings?

Me:Ohhh maybe that's cool

Him:Yah...

We arrived at the house

Him;Oh we've arrived

Me:Yes indeed.Thank you so much for the ride and company I really needed that

Him:You're welcome any day anytime anywhere

We laughed

Me:I gotta go

Him:Yah

He opened my door I got out

Me:Bye

Him:Bye

I closed the door then went to my car Nev got out

Him:Your car is actually comfortable

Me:Oh thanks

Him:And smells just like you

I did a weird laugh

Me:Thanks can I have my keys

Him:Oh sorry bye

Me;Bye

He left. I got in my car then parked it and that Nev guy was pretty weird

•

•

•

Romeo's POV

Nev:She totally into me

Me;What?

Him: I know it breaks your heart but the truth is the truth Boss man

Me:Nev don't get ahold of yourself pls

Him:Didn't you see chemistry there? She totally wants me she can't hide it but it's ok

Me:Nev pls stop talking

Him; Truth hurts Boss man but you're a strong lil man you'll survive this it's just a phase to you ofcauae

I can't blv he's my right hand. How in the world did I pick him? How!?

Him:Now Boss move on bcz there's a new guy in town

He smiled?

Me:What town?

Him:You wouldn't get it anyway Paige totally is dying to be in these arms her eyes screamed my name when I saw her they were saying "Nev...Nev...I'm all yours...take me babe" ahhh it's good to be me

Me:Can't this car get any faster I can't stand this!

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:11] Lynne: ×•••× 35 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up thirsty so I went to drink water at the kitchen. I poured a glass then drank up

"Thirsty huh?"

I turned to see Carolina standing by the kitchen

counter staring at me

Me:Yah

Her:Peter drained you?

Me:What? No

Her:Hey don't be shy he's your husband anyway

Me: Yes he's my husband and I'm not shy

She laughed a little walking to me

Her:Yah ofcause you're not.

She pulled my hair back

Her:I see the same exact woman Peter always wanted since he was very little.You're the woman of his dreams in every way beautiful very beautiful hooo and your skin so smooth

She ran her fingers on my arm I quickly moved back from her

Her:Hey don't be shy I won't hurt you besides I don't fuck with my homies girl that's a bro code

I pop my eyes out

Her:So chill you got friends right?

Me:No

Her:Oh come on help a girl out or you got brothers? Ohhh yes yes they must be charmer's huh?

Me:I gotta go to bed

Her: Heyyyy

Me:My brother is taken and so does my friend

Her:Come on

Me:They are dating each other

Her:Whaaat? Really or your trying to keep me away?

Me:I'm serious but Kelly is free

Her:Kelly who? The pregnant lady?

Me:Yes she's beautiful

Her:Yah she is no doubt but she's pregnant I don't do that I don't do pregnant woman

Me:Here goes your luck

Her:It's ok then I'll go back to my boring boyfriend he's though but a girl can't complain huh?

Me:uhm no

Her: And i gotta get ready for my meeting today gotta bounce

She ran upstairs. Damn that girl is creeping me out. After that I went to my room.

Me:Peter Jackson you're gonna be late

Him: 5 more minutes

He said in a cute,sexy sleepy voice

Me:No matter how sexy you sound work is work Mr

I walked to the closet I took out my outfit for today

Him:Hey my love

I looked at him

Me:Hey

I smiled then walked to him I set on top of him

Me: You're so handsome even when you just woke up

Him:I know my love

I hit his arm playfully

Me:You suppose to say thank you my love

We laughed

Him:Well then thank you my love

Me:That's more like it

We pecked lips multiple times

Me:You'll be late for work

Him:What will I do without you?

Me:I have no idea

Him:I'll kill myself

Me:No don't say that

Him:I swear it you're the air I breath Paige I love you so much I swear I'll kill myself if you leave me

Me:You were breathing before me

He laughed

Him: Can you not spoil this moment pls

We laughed

Me:Sorry

Him:Promise me you won't leave me

I smiled

Me:I promise I won't ever

Him:And ever?

Me:Ever and ever

Him:And have our little once

Me:Now you're ruining the moment

He laughed

Him:Sorry but all in due time you'll beg for me to make you a Mom

Me:Ew and change dippers? No thank you

Him: Ok ok sorry

Me: I love you

Him:I love you more

I held his face then kissed him

Me:Promise me you won't leave me either?

Him:I cross my heart

Me:Awwww that's so cute

I did a sad face he pecked my lips

Him:No you're cute

Me:No you are

Him: No you are

Me:No you

Him:Our babies will

Me:Keep dreaming

Him:No it's a vision. I wany them to have your eyes,colour of hair and your skin most importantly your heart

Me:Peter I'm never getting pregnant

Him:You hate taking pills either

Me:Yah

Him: And needles

Me:I did that shit once I'm never doing it AGAIN

Him:And you despise a condom

I looked at him bcz he knows he's lying

Me:Pardon me?

Him:Beab come on you hate them

Me:I hate them I'm taking pills bcz you refuse to condomise Peter Jackson

Him:Hey that shit hurts

Me:Stop lying Peter ok we should start using it too

Him:There's noway on planet earth I'm ever using that I used it once and it hurt my manhood Beab

Me:You were born a liar huh?

Him:No I'm serious

Me:Wow

Him:And my girl back then hated it too it's her fault I'm like this she did this to me blame her she should have refused and put me on my place but she liked it raw now here I am

Me:Stop blaming the poor girl for your selfishness

Him: I swear I'm telling the truth

I laughed

Him:Now I can't go back no no

Me:You've hit every girl raw?

Him:Hey I was a womanizer but I wasn't sleeping with around so I'm clean as a new babies behind

Me:Good to know Sir

Him:Haven't you used a condom before?

Me:I have

Him:The thought of you with another guy kills me don't tell me more

Me:I want not going to

Him:Thank God

Me:They are ex's

Him:I still don't want to know

Me:You'll see them one day

Him:No no I don't want that

I laughed

Me:You're exaggerating

Him: No Beab the thought of another man making love to you no no

Me:You don't know my ex's so who's this man you're picturing me with?

Him:Just some random guy

Me:No picture someone you know

Him:Ahhhh! No no

He said holding his head while closing his eyes

Him:Don't make me do it

Me:Someone you know come on

Him:Oh no I gotta wash my brain

Me:Who was it?

Him:My brother

I laughed till my stomach hurt

Me:Oh my God my stomach hurts

I said holding it

Him:Sorry Beab

He brushed it

Me:Better

Him:stop laughing it ain't funny

Me:Oh Peter I didn't know you're this hilarious

Him:I'm not funny

Me:You are.It's great you don't know my ex's

Him:And why's that?

Me:Well they are soooo...

Him:So what?

I laughing again

Me:Stop making me laugh this hard

I laid on my back

Me:Brush my tummy again

Him:Your ex's are what Paige

He was serious y'all

Me:Nothing Beab

Him:I'm serious

Me:Woah like serious?

Him:Paige?

Me:They are nothing I was joking around

Him:I didn't get your joke

He walked to the bathroom. Is he for real? Like serious? WOW? I thought I was the one childish.I walked to the bathroom I heard the shower. I took off my night dress then walked in he didn't even look at me.How will I start to apologise? I brushed he's back he turned around

Him:What do you want?

Me:Beab your really mad at me?

He looked down

Me:I'm sorry my love

I shifted his focus on me

Me:I'm sorry ok?

Him:Ok apology accepted

Me:Come let me help you out

He gave me soap I helped him he helped me we kissed there and there you know what I mean.Then we got out we wrapped towels on.

Him:Your hair so sexy when wet

Me: Your body so sexy when dripping water

He laughed then picked me up we kissed while making our way to bed.

Him:Who will I get mad at when you're gone and who will beg me?

Me:Don't tell me you were faking

Him: To get on a shower with you? Yes

Me: Peter!?

I hit his arms

Him:We've never showered together before

Me:You should have asked

Him:You would have said no besides don't ever bring up your ex's

Me: Yours is living in the house and carrying your child

Him: Hey that's different ok...besides...

Me: Besides nothing Peter... Where were we?

Him:Oh you want it now?

Me:Are you seriously gonna just interrogate me while horny?

Him:I'm not in the mood

He got up

Me:Peter?

Him: No

Me:You're not for real?

Him:I am

He took out he's things

Me; Even if I'm this naked

I took off my towel

Him: No

Me: Oh I know the problem

Him:What?

Me:Nothing is happening right it's deceiving you

He laughed

Him:No

Me:It is

I put on my towel

Him:Nothing is deceiving me

Me:Yah?

Him;Yah

Me:Show me

He laughed

Him:You want me to get carried away?

Me:So it's true these things do happen

He looked at me

Him:Know what I won't let you talk bad about my manhood like that...boy let's show them we're

always ready for action

Me:Pls

I said laughing

He walked to the bed then crawl to me I was leaning on the headboard.He pulled me to him he took off my towel then his

Me:I guess I was wrong

I said biting my lip

Him:Pay back for saying all those words

I laughed

Me:Don't tell me you're offended

Him: I'm very offended

He brushed my cookie with his D.I let out a little moan he kissed my neck then left a hickey.He kept brushing it then inserted only the head .....blah blah blah you know how it goes I'm not in the mood for that part.Anyway after that steamy hot section he got up then wrap he's towel.He was smiling

Me:Ok ok I'm sorry

Him:Good to know

We laughed I wrap the towel then got up

Him: How do you do it?

Me:Do what?

Him:Leaving me wanting more?

Me:Oh wow your the first person to ever ask me that?

Him: Paige

Me:Sorry sorry...I don't know Beab

Him:Can i last more rounds?

He said on my shoulder

Me: No get ready for work

Him:Ok ok

He got ready

Me: Look at you looking so handsome

Him:My babes will look just like me

Me; Sure they will

Him:Really Beab?

Me:No

Him:I should have hit that by now IF you were not on pills

Me: You're already late for work Peterson

Him:I hate that name

Me:Woah your full name is Peterson?

Him:Yes didn't you know?

Me:Noooo

Him:Shit me And my big mouth

Me: Oh my God I'll start calling you Peterson

Him:Don't you date

Me:Peterson

Him: Paige!

Me:Sorry

I said laughing

Me:Peterson

I whispered then laughed alone.Oh Wow Peterson

that was a good guess I can't blv he's my husband and I just found out his full name and by coincidence

•

•

•

I can't carry on but I tried Isn't that big enough or I'm exaggerating?

[12/22, 12:12] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After Peter left I was all alone and bored in my room.I miss him already but he just left few minutes ago,this is torture.

"Paige your friend is here for you"

Kelly yelled. Maybe that's Kim oh it's been a while. I ran downstairs

Me:Kim?

Her:Hey Paige

Kelly:What happened here? She also betrayed you?

Me:Shut up,let's leave here

I went to her we walked out

Me:Why you're here?

Her:We need to talk

Me:Now you want to talk?

Her:I'm sorry about how I reacted it's just...

Me:It's just what Kim? Just tell me the straight honest truth I deserve that don't I?

Her:Your Bro is a liar OK?

Me:A liar? How? Bcz he's the one who have been honest to me about you guys and you kept it away from me

Her:You won't understand Paige

Me: Make me

Her:Me and your brother once... Uhm...

Me:Kim pls...

Her:We once fucked

He said quickly and looking down

Me:What?

Her:I'm so sorry for lying to you Paige I swear it wasn't my intensions of hurting you

Me:You sleept with Chris and you've never said anything to me?

Her:I'm sorry Paige

She was crying

Me:Then why would my brother lie?

She looked down

Her:He doesn't know

Me:Wait wait...he doesn't know? What is this some kind of a joke? If it is it's not amusing at all

Her:It was dark and we were drunk I only noticed when I woke up in the morning

Me:But...

Her:This is all my fault I'm sorry I've never slept with

your brother intensionally pls forgive me

Me:No don't say that to me. Talk to Chris no one is at fault here.You didn't know you both didn't so you're both victims of that night if that makes any sence.

Her:No I can't do that Paige I kissed him and oh no no

Me:Woah slow down and summarise everything to me

Her:Ok.You remember the party I had at my house years ago when my parents were out of town I was left with my sister?

Me:Ohhhh I've never made it I remember

Her:Yes,so I got really drunk and ended up sleeping with this guy the next morning I saw your brother next to me...naked so was i.I panicked and left I went out for few days.I couldn't stop thinking about him I tried getting him out of my head but I couldn't. One night at a club I kissed him I couldn't hold myself.I was surprised he kissed me back then I ran away ever since I've never talked to him nor look at him in

his eyes I avoid him.

Me:That's why you always have excuses when my parents invite you for dinner or when I do?

Her:Yes and bcz your cooking sucks

Me:Hey don't insult my cooking

We laughed

Her:I hope you hate me now

Me:I hate you for insulting my cooking

We laughed

Me:But whatever happened between you and Chris is your problem you're both adults

Her; What?

Me:Hey don't involve me I got my own love life to take care

Her:I thought maybe you'll help me

I laughed

Me:That's your punishment for keeping me in the dark for all these years

Her:You're evil

Me:I know

Her: But Chris just makes my knees weak

Me:Awww that's sweet but no

Her:Paige pls talk to him for me pls

Me:Know what I'll talk to him

Her:Yeeeey

She jumped up and down like a little girl

Me:Hey what happened to you why you're not at the Model C

Her:I quit I didn't tell you that?

Me:No you didn't

Her:It's been a week now. After you left I got bored alone so I left

Me:But modeling was your dream

Her:Yah but after you left...

Me: Ohhh whatever

We laughed

Me:Ok we'll meet at Burger king at 4 ok?

Her:Ok OK

Me:Ok bye I gotta go and talk to my brother now

Her:Thank you sooo much

She blew kisses

Me:Welcome

She left I got in the house. I'm not talking to my brother they'll talk to each other. I went upstairs I took my phone I called Chris he picked up on the first ring

Me:Brrrrother Dear

Him: Hey Sis

Me:Watchu doin?

Him:Work work work

Me:Oh how about you and me at Burger king today

Him:Oh I miss you so much I'd love that

Me:Awesome I'll pay

Him:Then I'm there

Me:At 4

Him:I won't disappoint

Me:I love you

Him:I love you too

I dropped the call.They better settle their differences and talk like adults Gosh.I slept

•

•

•

I woke up very late I felt hands around me.Oh no Kim and Chris? Oh God I took my phone quickly. 15 missed calls from Kim oh no she called again.Oh my God what happened??? I picked up

Me:Hey Fri...

Her:Really Paige?

She said angry

Me:I'm sorry

Her:Paige it was so awkward no one said anything I'm sooo embarrassed

Me:What do you mean?

Her:Paige you shouldn't have done that and do you know what he said to me?

Me: What?

Her:That I should stop following him I'm nothing but a little girl

She said in tears I could hear it in her voice

Me:What? I'm so sorry

Her:It's ok...it's clear I will never get a chance to tell him how I feel and thanks to you

She dropped the call. What did I do? Trying to set them up? Actually I did but I was only trying to help.

"Beab what's going on?"

Peter said sleepy

Me:Peter just sleep pls

I called my brother it went straight to voicemail.I

called Mom

Her:Hey baby

Me:Hey Mom is Chris there?

Her:He locked himself in his room.What happened to him he was sooo angry

Me:Ok Mom thanks

I dropped the call I won't tell them myself.Oh I ruined everything

Peter: Baby what's going on?

Me;I'm hungry

He held me tight

Him:I'm a meal

I laughed

Me;I need proper food Peter pls

He let me go

Him:Sorry then

I got up

Him:What happened on the phone

Me:I tried playing super hero but failed

Him:What were you thinking beab? Do you look like wonder woman?

Me:Do I Peter? Do i!?

Him:Hey I'm sorry

He laughed

Me:This is not funny at all

Him:You're so cute when mad

Me:I going to eat why didn't you turn the light on?

I turned the lights on

Him:Oh I bought you something

He took out a box

Me:Hmmm I thought food

Him:No open it

Me:Don't tell me you're proposing

He laughed

I opened it

Me: Wow my love

I went to hug him

Me:Its sooo beautiful

Him:You like it?

Me: I love it

It was a silver necklace

Me:Are you kidding? I adore it

Him: Hooo thank God

Me:Why saying that?

Him:I've been meaning to get it for you but debating where there you'll like it or not

Me:I don't care about gifts as long as I have you

Him:That's the sweetes thing I've ever heard

Me:I know

I blushed

We pecked lips

"Excuse me"

Carolina walked in. Can't we have privacy at least in our room?!

Peter:Come in

My phone rang u thought about Chris and Kim I ran to answer it was Chris

Him:What a great sister you are

Me:Chr..

Him:Don't ever look nor call me ever again

Me;But..

Him:I mean it

He dropped the call. So this is for real? Why the HELL did I even interfere in their love lives? You're so stupid Paige.I set down crying

Peter:My love what happened?

Me:My brother hates me

Him:Why?

Me:Can we not talk about it?

Him:Ok can you leave us for a sec Carolina?

Her:Yes sure

She left

Him:Don't cry my love shhhh

He comfort me.Why I'm so emotional about this!?

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:12] Lynne: ×•••× 36 ×•••×

•

•

•

Days later i was in my room getting ready to go out me and Peter are going out I can't wait.

Him:Stop putting that on your face you beautiful without makeup

I smiled looking at him

Me:Really Beab?

Him:I've said that once so pls

Me:Ok OK I'm done

I said giggling and putting my shadow away

Him:How about natural?

Me:Don't push it

Him:Sorry

Me:Now how do I look

I got up turning up around

Him: You look like something I can eat...actually I can

I laughed

Me:Stop it I'm serious

Him:Everything you put on is beautiful on you Beab

Me:Awww

I curved my lips

Me:That's sooo cute

He held my waist I held his shoulders

Me:You're also handsome my love

Him:That I know

I laughed we heard a knock

Me:Oh great

Peter:Come in

Kelly entered

Her:Hey

She smiled what a drama Queen

Peter:Hey can I help you

Her:Actually yes

Him: With what?

Her:I was going to see the Doctor I was wondering if you'd like to come with us?

Me:Us?

Her:Me and my... actually our baby

She said smiling ear to ear looking at Peter I guess

he has to chose

Him:Oh uhm...

He looked at me I looked away sitting down on the edge of the bed

Her:Ahh I'll leave for you to talk but I'll be downstairs

Him:Sure

She left closing the door, silence and awkwardness filled the room

Me:It's ok Beab besides it's your child too

I said heart broken though but I can't take this opportunity away from him

Him:Are you sure Beab?

Me:Yah I'm cool we can do this some other time

He ran to hug me

Him:Thank you

Me:Yah

He kissed my face

Him:I owe you

Me:Don't sweat it

Him: I love you

Me:I love you too

He left my heart broke. I washed my makeup crying I'm so pathetic these days why I'm so emotional? Fuck! I took off my clothes the door burst open I screamed

Me:Ahhhhhhhh!!!

"Oh hello hello"

Me: Carolina

I covered my body with a fleece

Me:What are you doing here

She's bisexual remember?

Her:I came to see you

Me:I'm fine

Her:You're not if you ask me

Me:,You're right.I'm not okay

Her:Need a hug?

Me: Yes

I said bursting crying

Her:Come here

She came with her arms wide we hugged

Her:Let it all out

I cried

Me:She did it on purpose you know

I sniffed

Me:She's evil

Her:It's ok

She pat my back

Me:You're right it's ok

We broke the hug

Her:Yes get the fleece away

I threw it away then went to my closet

Me: Know what I'll wear something else and spend my day at the mall

I sniffed

Me:What should I wear

Her:I don't see anything wrong there

She said checking me out I had bra and panties on

Me:Hey stop looking at me like that

Her:Ok sorry

She took a seat

Me:How about this dress?

Her:No

Me:This one?

Her: Great

I put it on

Me:See? How do I look?

Her:Why did you took off your clothes at first?

Me:I did?

Her:Yes you did?

Me:Oh that's weird...anyway I'll watch a movie now

alone lonely

Her:I can come

Me:Are you my babe?

Her:I can be

Me:Nooooo you can't so I'll go alone

Her:Come on

Me:Nooo thank you

I fixed my hair

Me:I'm ready to hit the road.And tell my sweet babe I'll be back when the night fall

I wore my shades then walked out.I walked outside then to my car my phone rang it was Chris, I'm not in the mood for him I dropped it then turned my phone off then drove off.I drove all the way to the mall I parked my car then took my purse with my phone.I walked inside the mall I felt a tap my shoulder I turned

Me:You?

"Nev"

Me:Ohhh Nev I forgot your name

Him;It's cool it's not a popular name

I faked a smile

Him:So where were you heading?

Me:To watch a movie

Him:Alone?

Me:Yah

Him:Can I company you?

Me:No you must have better things to do...

Him:Not at all actually I got nothing to do today...pls

Me:Uhmmm...

Him: I'll pay for the movie and snacks

Me:Ohhhwk

I want to be alone ppl!!!!

Him:Let's go then my Queen

Me: Uhm ok

We walked to the cinema we looked at the movies

Him: Which one?

Me:Uhm "crawl"

Him:Hmm great we'll watch it

He bought tickets we went to the snacks bar.I ordered popcorns, chocolates and a drink he ordered popcorns and drink he actually paid he's a gentleman. Anyway our movie was about to start in few minutes we entered the theatre we set down

Him: This feels nice

I smiled

Him:You don't look happy

Me:I'm ok

Him:Ok if you say so

Me:The movie is about to start

Him: Yah

We focused on the screen

•

•

•

We watched the movie then got out

Him:That was great

Me:Yah thanks for cheering me up

Him: So you were sad

I giggled a little

Me:Yes I was

Him:It's good seeing you happy

Me:Where's Romeo anyway?

Him:Uhm around

Me:Around?

Him:Yah at his house

Me:Ohhh

Him:Yah

Me:And I better go it's gonna get late although I was planning on staying late

Him:Ok bye

Me:Bye I walked out then to my car.I drove home

•

•

•

Nev's POV

I actually had a date with Paige Mahone Boss won't like this. I drove to his house just to give him a heart attack.After a few I arrived I walked in then to his study

Me: Hey Boss I knew I'll find you here

Him:What is it Nev?

Me: Nothing

I said smiling and fixing my shirt

Him:Nev talk

Me:If you insist.I had a date

He laughed

Him:Yah right

He set on his chair

Me:Hey don't laugh my date was beautiful

Him:Who agreed to go out with you?

Me:Actually she asked me

Him:What?

Me:Yes she came to me and asked me out

Him:Is that someone I know?

Me:Yes

Him:Go on

Me:Paige Jackson Mahone

Him:Her name is Paige Mahone don't include that name or I'll lose it and secondly Paige will never go out with you

Me:Never?

Him:Never

Me:I smell her perfume

Him:Nev don't have something else to joke about this ain't funny

Me: OK Boss

I walked to him

Me:Smell my shirt

Him: Oh pls

He looked away

I got close to him

Me:Hmmm smell that? It's her

He got up

Me: I think Boss it's time you admit that I beat you and Peter at the same time

Him:That's not her perfume

Me:Deny it all you want or you want to smell her lip gloss on my lips

I pouted

Him:There's no way in hell she kissed you

Me:She did her lips were sooooo soft Boss

Him:I need to work leave in Peace

Me:No need to get all worked up now Boss and in top of all she didn't even forget my name and you

forgot it 5 times do you see how important to her?

Him: NEV!

Me:Nahhhhhh I'm kidding Boss man

Him:No you're not

He was so mad he was facing the window

Me: Calm down Boss man

Him:You dare to lay your hands on my woman Nev?

He said calmly now I'm scared bcz he's mad

Me: I'm joking around Boss man I didn't kiss her

He looked at me

Him:You spent some alone time with her that counts

Me:Ok I asked her out she refused first I insisted she finally agreed then we went to watch a movie...

Him:How close were you to her?

He got close to me

Me: Far very far Sir

Him:Go on

Me:After the movie we left the theatre then she said our goodbyes she went to her car

Him:Is that all?

Me:And she forgot my name

Him:Aha I knew she did

Me:And she asked about you?

Him: She did?

Me:Yah

He smiled

Him:She did

Me:Is that a smile?

He made a straight face

Him:No I'm not smiling now leave my property Nev

Me: How greatful you are

Him:What's that?

Me:Nothing

I ran out hoooo

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:12] Lynne: ×•••× 37 ×•••×

•

•

•

Peter slept mad at me last night I mean HELLOOO I came back didn't I? Besides he was playing happy family at the Doctor yesterday he better not start with me.It's the next morning and I'm feeling a little nauseas I feel like throwing up.I felt sun rays on my face I woke up then put on my slippers I walked to the bathroom I brushed my teeth but nothing seemed better I just got worse.I went to the toilet sit I kneeled down I spit my head spined.

"Beab are you ok?"

Me:No

I said in a low note my body was weak

Me:Babe I'm not feeling too good at all

I got more weak he ran to feel my forehead

Him:You're hot

He felt my whole face

Him:Beab you're burning up

Me:I'm dizzy

I got dizzy

Him: I'll take you the hospital

Me:Wait

I vomited something very disgusting

Me:Ewww it smells

Him:You're disgusted by your own vomit really Paige ?

Me:Woah another one coming

I vomited again I ended up crying

Me:This shit stinks

Him:Not now Paige

He gave me a cup of water I rinsed my mouth

Me: Ew my mouth smells horrible

Him:How are you feeling now?

Me:Like seeing a Doctor

Him:Let's go

Me:Carry me be a gentleman man for once in your life

Him: Arg!

He picked me up

Me:Hey watch it don't pick me like that

Him:Stop talking Paige!

Me:Ok ok

We walked out

Carolina: What happened?

Him:Just a little drama

Me:I'm dying Carolina

I said weak

Peter:You're not dying jeez!

Me:I am did you see what I vomited?

Him:Oh God ...Carolina help me with the door pls

She opened the door we got out

Me:I'm seeing the sun for the last time

Peter:Shit you're heavy

Carolina opened the car door

Me:I see the light

Him:That's the outside bulb Paige Jackson stop exaggerating

He got me inside the car

Me:You're shouting at me can't you see I'm seeing heaven ...oh Bye Carolina see you on the other side it's a shame I wont say the same to some ppl Peter drove the car in high speed

Me:Are you trying to kill me!?

I said balancing

Him:I thought you were already dying

He didn't slow down

Me:Peter!!

Him:Sit belts on woman

I did but struggling to

Him:We'll be there in a minute

Me:Do you want a ticket or what?

Him:I don't care my wife is sick and I'm taking her to the hospital

Me:Your wife will arrive in a coffin in that Hospital

Him:We're already there hold on

Me:I'm holding on

I screamed when he did a turn

Me:Ahhhhhhh!!!!

Then we arrived I got a little dizzy again

Me:I'm dizzy again

I got sweat right there. He got out then came to my side he opened the door

Him:Wanna vomit again?

Me:Yah

I vomited on the flowers next to the car

"Hey! I just waterd those!"

Me:Ooops! Sorry

I said wiping my mouth

Peter: Sorry Sir

We walked in a hurry to the hospital giggling

Him:You'll get a beating from that old man

Me: I'm not at fault

We laughed one time I'm weak the next it's something else oh Lord.

Peter:Doctor pls!

Two nurses came to us

Peter: She's not feeling well

Me:I'm vomiting none stop and..

"Doctor!"

An old man came to us and I was given a wheelchair

I set down

Peter:I'll go with her

One of the nurses

"No Sir I can company you... Here"

Me:Hell no Peter let's go

He won't entertain bitches he must come with ME.
We went to the Doctors office

Him:So what's the problem?

Me:I'm dying Doc

Peter:Really? Paige

Me:You see Doctor what I have to deal with everyday?

Peter: Hey don't turn the tables

Me:Oh pls

Doc: Are you related?

Us:What? Nooo

Me:Ew

Peter:You will be surprised actually she's my wife

Me:Yes it's totally unexpectable

Doc:You argue like relatives

Me:Doc I'm dying here do your job

Peter felt my forehead

Him:She's calming down now Doc

Doc: Ok let me see

They laid me on the hospital bed Doc did all thats necessary he even took my blood for what I don't know. Now we were left alone in his office

Me:Oh my arm hurts my love

Him:Oh sweetie let me see

Me: Here

He rub my arm

Me:Ouch slow down a little

Him:Sorry Beab

We pecked lips

Him: I love you

Me:I love you too and I hope it's nothing serious

Him:You're fine my love don't worry

Me:But I'm scared

Him:I'm with you all the way

Me:Thanks Beab

Him:That's my job Beab like I said at the alter

I smiled

Me:You meaned those words?

Him:Every single one of them

I smiled

Me:But you didn't love me then

Him: I mean them now

We pecked lips

"I'm back with the results"

Me:Yes Doc

Him:Uhm so it says here... Uhm so Mr and Mrs Jackson congratulations

I looked at Peter

Peter:What do you men Sir

Him:She's pregnant

Us:What!?

Mine was more like shocked Peter's "What?!" Was more like a happy WHAT

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:13] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Me:No no Doc...

Doc:I'm not mistaking Miss look here

I took the paper in his hand more like snatching it

Me:Hell no

Peter: Thank God

He kneeled down thanking God is he for real? He was even laughing

Me:I'm happy you find this amusing actually

Peter:Beab do you know what this means?

Me:Actually yes Peter yes I do,this is stress STRESS!

The Doctor was just standing there lost

Peter: She's happy Doc but deep down

I looked at him

Doc:Well it must be very deep

Peter: Very

Doc:I'll leave you

Me:No! No one is leaving this room until you conform that this is a joke and not a funny one

Doc:Miss...

Peter:Mrs

Doc:Oh yah uhm Mrs you're pregnant no doubt

Me:Mistakes do happen in Labs Sir!

Peter was brushing my shoulders cooling me down

Me:Do a scan

Peter:Yes Doc do it I love hearing heart beats they sou...

Me:Heart beat my foot Peter Paige Mahone is...

Him:Ah Beab Jackson

Me:Oh sorry my love uhm,Paige Jackson is not pregnant. Was that good?

Him:Yah it actually suits you

Me:Thanks Hun

Him:Aww

We pecked lips

"Excuse me I'm still here"

Me: Oh Doc yah you uhm scan pls

Doc:Ok lay down

I was laying down I wrap a hospital gown on my lower part then pulled up my night dress remember

this happened at the morning.He put some cold jelly like thing on my belly

Me:Aw it's called

Doc:Yah that's normal

Me:Ain't you making babies feel cold on pregnant women?

Doc:So man you keep up with this?

He asked Peter as I wasn't around

Peter:Dude everyday

Doc: She talks too much

Me:Excuse you

Peter:She's loud too man

Doc:Sorry Bro

Peter:It's torture man

Doc:Hold on man

Me:Hello?

Doc:Ok where were we?

He took out a whatever that was I don't know what it's called. But what Doctors use when scanning the baby in the womb.He rubbed it on my belly

Me:That's cold asf

Doc:Heard that?

Peter:Heart beat?

Doc:Yep

I was doing little prayers inside for this not to be true

Doc:Wait...

Me:What? There's no baby?

Doc:No there's a baby but I doubt...

Peter:Doubt what?

Doc: If you could let me finish pls

Us: Sorry

Doc:I see another one

Me:Doc be specific Pls

I said looking at the ceiling

Peter:What do you mean Doc?

Doc:And another one...wow

Peter: Wait are you saying what I think you're saying?

Doc:They are three

I leaned on the hospital bed with my elbows looking at Doc in the eyes.

Me:You won't repeat that

Peter:I can we're having triplet's

He kissed my face.My world stopped my brain stop functioning I had a mini heart attack I swear.My head got busy like "whaaaaaaaaaaaat!!!! Nooo!!!"

Doc:Congratulations this is very rare Miss

Me:No Peter tell the Doctor how did this happen

Doc:Oh no I'm cool I don't want to know actually

Me:No you have to know oh no Peter tell the Doctor

I set up

Him: I should tell him?

Me:Yes

Him:No you do it

Doc lend me paper towels

Doc:Wipe yourself Ma'am

Peter:No no take a picture first

I got really lost again just imagining 3 KIDS!!! I hate one kid imagine 3 and they my own I swear I'll fight with them my brain sometimes functions like a 1 year old.

Doc:Done

Peter: Lets go Beab

Me:This is the end of my life

I said spaced out

Peter:This is not that bad picture us as parents

I did

Me:Noooo

Him:Nooo

Me:We we'll be terrible

Him:So terrible

We walked out the Doctors office

Me:Bye Doctor

Doc:Bye you're my favorite couple I have ever seen in these scans

Peter: Aw thanks Man

Doc: Keep her she's fun

Peter: Ok that's ok now Doc

They laughed we walked out

Me:I'm ... I'm pregnant

Peter:Yah Beab with 3 babies Damn I'm freakin good

I looked at him lost

Him:I did Beab admit it

Me:I'm hungry

Him:That's understandable

We went to the car we drove home

Me:Peter

Him:Hm?

Me: I need an explanation

Him:Beab I swear I'm not cheating on you she's just a friend and a college I swear you can check our chats

Me:What?

Him:What?

Me:What are you talking about?

Him:Huh?

Me:Peter Jackson?

Him:Sorry

Me:Are you cheating on me?

Him:Whaaaaat? What would make you think that

Me:What you just said

Him:Oh yah that uhmmm no I'm not

I stared at him

Him: Don't give me those eyes we can spin with this car

Me:Peterson Jackson

Him:Ok ok there was no need for you...

Me:Peter pls

Him:Ok one of my board members she's uhm very attractive and...

Me:Excuse you Peter!?

Him:Ok sorry she has been trying to hit on me but you know me...

Me:actually I don't

Him:Ohhhkay anyway I turned her down bcz I'm taken see

He showed me a ring I just looked at him

Him:Im kidding Beab

Me:Do I look like a person who kids around?

Him:That face is sooo cute Beab

She laughed squeezing my cheeks

Him:I'm kidding there's no girl come on

Me:I bet

Him:Trust me

Me:Yah right whatever anyway tell me why 3 kids just explain.Do you understand that you'll have 4 children?

Him: Damn really? Oh yah that's right damn I'm good huh?

He laughed

Me:Yah you're good right

Him:I'm gonna be a father to 4 Kids

Me:No one should know abt this pls

Him:While I'm this excited

Me:Yes I'm not ready for that drama yet

Him:It's ok sweetie it's fine

We arrived home he parked

Me: And I mean no word to anyone Brother, friends anyone especially your Mom Momma's boy

Him:I'm not

Me:Yah you're not

He tickled me

Me:It hurts laughing hard Peter

He stopped

Him:Yah I wouldn't want to hurt my beautiful babies

Me:Let's go inside pls

Him:Can I kiss them pls?

Me:No let's go Gosh

I opened the door

Him:Come on

Me: Peter let's go

•

•

•

Sorry I'm soooo tired I'll post today no doubt but just laugh for a little

[12/22, 12:13] Lynne: ×•••× 38 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up the next morning with someone rubbing my belly. Peter is rubbing my belly

Me:What are you doing?

Him:Morning my love

Me:What are you doing Peter?

Him:Am I committing a crime Paige?

I just smelled a very delicious smell coming from the kitchen

Me:Hmmm do you smell that?

I moved his hand then got up I wrap a gown on

Me:That smells like...ahhh I don't know

I wore my Slipper's

Peter: Let's cuddle for a while Beab

Me:Someone is cooking a bomb there and you're thinking of cuddling WOW Peter WOW

Him:Seriously?

Me:I'm dead hungry

I walked out then ran downstairs

Me:Who's making...Oh Carolina

Her:Hey sit down I'm already done ok

Me:Oh thank you

I was so happy I set down smiling like a fool

Her:You look happy

Me:Well yah you're cooking heaven there why wouldn't I?

We laughed

Her:I hope you don't mind I told the maid to take the day off I'll cook today and make dinner for you guys bcz I'm leaving tomorrow for my thanks

Me:Aw that is sooo cute thank you

Her:No thank you Peter is lucky to have you

Me:Yah he is isn't he

Her:Anyway let me dish up for you

She dished up for me

Me:Yummy

I ate up

Me:It's sooo delicious what is this?

"Morning girls it smells nice here"

Kelly walked to us with a bump

Me:Wow your bump is showing now

Her:Yah it's been a while right

She laughed alone we just looked at her

Her:Anyway dish up for me too pls

Carolina: Here dish up

She gave her the pan she dishes up for herself

Kelly: Anyway where were you yesterday you didn't have breakfast with us

Me:I don't fuck around with bitches I don't fuck around with

She laughed

Her:Woah slow down

Me:Can't someone have a peaceful dinner in this house

Carolina: Who wants stake?

Me:No no I don't want to gain weight sweetie

Kelly:Oh really it doesn't look like it

Me: What did you say?

Her:What did you hear?

Me:I'll snatch that wig bitch!!!

I said grabbing it we fought

"WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON HERE!!!!!!"

Peter shouted

Me:Beab...

Peter:No! Paige just stop fighting all the time

Me:She started it

Kelly:She attacked me

Me: Liar you attacked me

Kelly:What?

I cried

Me:Beab do you see this where will I live huh?

I set down crying

Peter:Paige your tears won't make me feel sorry for you

I looked at him with gloosy eyes looking soooo sad he looked away

Him:Don't look at me like that Paige Jackson

I cried worse

Kelly: This is sooo pathetic

She set down eating

Me:Shut up

I said with a cracking voice

Kelly: I did nothing to you and you're the one crying first

Peter:Ok stop both of you God

I cried

Peter: Oh I'm sorry my love

He came to my chair then wiped my tears

Him:I'm sorry my love

Me:She hates me she got here and started saying bad things I told her they hurt me she didn't stop

Kelly:What?

Peter:Kelly can you just go with the flow

Me:You think I'm lying to you Peter?

Him:No my love

Me:She's evil

Him:I can imagine the horror

Me:So horrible

He hugged me

Him:Eat my love you're hungry

Me:Yes

I ate my food in peace with no one talking shit

•

•

•

Peter's POV

It's gonna be hella long of nine MONTHS!!! Oh God!
My phone rang

Me:Yes

James:Man

Me:Another favour as always

Him:Come on dude

Me: Talk James

Him:Ok ok it's a tiny favour

Me:Talk James I'm getting ready for work

Him:Uhm come to my apartment dude I'm on a deep shit

Me: What?

Him: Pls hurry my girl found panties on my couch I said you got a girl over bail me man

Me:What?

I laughed

Him:Man pls just come and convince her

Me:I'm a married man dude what if my wife finds out?

Him:She won't know

Me:No James face your problems

I laughed

Him:What imma say?

Me:Say the truth

Him: No dude she gives me too good to lose her

Me:Then why cheat?

Him:She was outta town man

Me:Dude sorry I'm not involving myself on that

Him:Dude she's yelling and shouting downstairs now I said I'm calling you to come and conform it

Me: Not this time around man

I laughed

Him: She's loud I have a headache

Me:Women are here in this world to give us headaches dude mine is giving me headache all the time

Him:Paige seems cool my girl is black dude do you

know those girls

I laughed

Me:I've been with a black girl dude but mine was sweet

Him:And in bed hooo

Me:Dude don't say that she was down every time I want it

We laughed

Him:They're just extra

Me:It's true melanin is good man

We laughed

Me:But serious dude tell your girl the truth

Him:I'll walk out with crutches dude after that argument

I laughed

Me: Black girls for you

I laughed

Him:I want me some white girl

Me:White girls are crazy too man every girl is crazy but blacks maaaaan.Paige is crazy and sweet that's why I love her

Him:Can't I have her?

Me:Fuck off I'll rip your brains out dry them then eat'em

Him:Ok slow down let me go and kill myself

Me:Good luck

I laughed dropping the call

Me:He's in a deep shit I also got problems too two girls under the same roof fighting all the time what a nine months I'll have

"I'm crazy huh?"

I turned in shock I saw Paige on the door looking pissed

Me: Sweetheart

Her:Don't sweetheart me Peter

Me:Come on my love

Her:You said I'm crazy

Me: Not in a bad way

Oh Lord help me

Me:Don't get me wrong

Her:I should not get you wrong? You're an idiot Peter

Me:I said nice things too

Her:Nice things? Really I didn't hear any?

Me:Ofcause you didn't bcz you're mad

Her:I'm mad?

Me:Look at you

Her:Did you just give me an attitude Peter?

Me:Paige pls

I wore my shirt

Her:I can't blv this

Me: Oh God

Her:Be grateful I'm not in the mood to argue right now

Me:I'm sooo grearful

Her: Don't push it or change my mind

Me:Hmmm

Her:Ok I stopped talking you do too

Me:Ok

Her:Did you just back chat really Peter

Me:What now?

Her:You keep talking

Me:I said ok

Her:Don't say that

Me:Ok

Her; Don't

Me:Wow

I wore my blazer

Her:If you want an argument Peter Jackson just say so

Me:Bye my love I love you

I kisses her cheek then kissed her belly

Her:Are you walking away from me?

I didn't answer bcz it won't end

Her:Are you ignoring me?

...

Her:Peter!?

...

Her:You're sleeping on the couch don't bother coming here

I ran downstairs I hear her yelling I held my laughter walking out

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:13] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

I'm done taking a shower now I'm on my phone scrolling down my Instagram I'm so bored.I got a call from Kim.I don't feel like talking to her after what she said I dropped the call. Peter walked in what is he doing here?

Him:Hey babe

Me:What are you doing here?

Him: This is my room

Me:Really? Bcz the last time I checked you were gonna sleep on the couch

Him:Excuse me

Me:Yes excuse you

Him:I'm tired

He went to the bathroom. He thinks he'll do something for me to change my mind? Well he better think again.After a few he came out dripping wet he looked sooo hot I licked my lips looking at his abs.

Him:Don't worry I'll be quick and leave

Me:Oh yah uhmmm be quick

I focused on my phone again but stealing glances.I'll never get used seeing naked huh? I walked to him

Me:What if I reconsider the fact...

Him:Actually I'll be fine at the couch I'll do my work probably without anyone snorting on my ear

Me:What?

Him:Yah I got a lot of work

Me:Peter?

Him:You want me gone then consider it done

Me:Ok I'm sorry Beab

Him:About what?

Me:About being unfare and uhm

Him:And what?

Me:Over reacting

Him: What else?

Me:I'm not saying anything more ok

Him:I'm leaving..

Me:Love...ok ok I was a little tiny very little childish

Him:Just a little?

Me:Peter don't do this to me

Him: Paige

I cried

Me:You're abusing me

Him:I'm not abusing you

Me:Yes you are... you're abusing your own wife Peter emotionally

Him:Stop with the fake tears Paige

I cried even more how could he say that

Him:Ok ok I'm sorry

Me:No no apologise

Him:Apologize?

Me:Yes

Him:Oh God

Me:I'm waiting

Him:I'm sorry I was wrong

Me:Yah you were wrong now let's cuddle or do something else exciting

I got close to him

Him: Paige next time when you want a dick sweetie pie say it ok don't beat around the bush

Me: Are we doing this or not my God

I looked at him

Him:Yah we're doing it

Me: So be it

Him:This is really weird

Me:Yah

Him:We actually ruined the moment

Me: We did

Him:So?

I laughed then I kissed him

Him:Wait won't I hurt my babies?

He said touching my belly

Me:You will hurt me if leave me like this

He laughed then looked up

Him: God pls let my whole life be like this

I laughed

Me: Your wish is granted

Then we kissed the rest is history.

-

The next day I woke up in Peters arms. What more could I wish for my life is beautiful

Peter:Morning

Me:Morning

He's phone rang

Him:Hey Mom

...

Him:I'm great you?

...

Him:Oh

...

Him:At 6?

...

Him:No no we'll love to

...

Him:I can't wait

...

Him:Ok we'll see you there

He dropped the call

Me:What was that?

Him:That was Mom she is inviting us on dinner tonight

Me:Oh that's great but your Mom hates my guts

Him:Oh don't say that

Me:She does but I'll come

Him:And Kelly was invited too

I looked away

Me:Ofcause she's your wife

Him:Beab...

Me: You got two wife's your a King

Him:Beab come on

Me:Anyway I gotta take a bath

Him:Can I jo..

Me:You can't

I stood up

Him: Ok fine

Me:Fine!

Him:Fine!

Me: Arggg!

I went to the bathroom

•

•

•

Peter's POV

She's alot of work my God.And she will ask something first.I got up then fixed the bed.I took out my clothes then shoes she came out

Her:I'm done my love oh pls help me dry my hair with this towel

She handed me the towel. Wasn't she mad at me? Do you see? How will I survive this? I took it then dried her hair

Her:Dry my sculp too Peter

Me:I'm doing it

Her:You're doing it wrong

Me:Then do it yourself

Her:Ok I'm sorry there was no need to get all worked up now

I did her hair

Me: Done

Her:Thanks my love

She looked at me

Her:And why you're like that

Me:Like what?

Her:Your look angry

Me:Me angry? No no my love I'm furious

Her:What happened?

Me:One minute you angry at one your happy at next Lord knows

Her:Uhmmm I'm sorry Beab I didn't know

Me: It's confusing stop being mad about silly stuff

Her:I get it

Me:I bet you are

I walked to the bathroom

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

I got a call from Peter's Mom I wonder what is it now

Me:Yes

Her:You're invited on dinner tonight

Me:Well isn't that sweet Mother in-law

Her: Be here Kelly I can't wait to see your bump anyway

Me:It's showing now

Her:Peter and that wife oh his we'll be here too

I laughed

Me:So what are you planning Mother in-law?

Her:Don't be silly little girl I'm not evil

Me:You're not?

Her:Be here Kelly ok

Me:Oh I will I wouldn't want to Miss my Father in-law now wouldn't I?

Her:Don't you dare

Me:No no don't worry I would never expose you on your special dinner by the way using those love potion on your husband ain't my place

She dropped the call. Poor woman is not loved by her husband now shes using love potion. If a man doesn't love me well he doesn't I will never force him to.Like Peter I would have used that love potion a long time ago if I wanted him back but I should let the poor girl wonder at the end of the day Peter is mine he has always been mine.And we'll be a happy family one day we'll raise our baby together and live happily ever after. He'll be live like he never met Paige he'll forget she ever existed and as for her,well,she will go to hell. Peter has to live with me and my baby alone not with that pale Paige

"Kelly?!"

That's the one and only Paige.I walked out of my room

Me:What?

Her:Uhm Peter's Mom called...

Me; I already know she just called me

Her; Oh

Me: She called you or Peter?

Her:Are we going there really?

Me:I was just asking

Her:I'm hungry

She walked out.She's gaining a lot of weight she can't be pregnant I'll lose it

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:14] Lynne: ×•••× 39 ×•••×

•

•

•

Me:I'm done!

I ran back to the bedroom bcz this man is rushing

me.

Him:Sexy Mama

Me:Peter pls don't start I gotta do touch ups

He held my waist

Him:I won't disturb you by the way you look beautiful stop putting that on

Me:I'm done

I said zipping my make up bag.I rather keep my stuff there bcz I lose them alot.

Him:You look like a Goddess

Me:Aw thank you my love

Him:I can imagine you with our 3 cute babies looking all sexy and all that

Me:Cute? Noway look at you? They'll inherit everything about you I'll live with 4 Peter's oh no

Him:You're over reacting

Me:I hope that doesn't happens anyway I want to go hot to that dinner so let's hit the road while I'm still

fresh

Him:Let's go my love.God I'm blessed

He turned around me

Him:I thank our Grandparents for this I would have never met you

Me: Actually we met coincidentally on the freeway that day

Him:Oh yah right

Me:You actually forgot our first day the day we met?

Him:I still remember our first time though

He bite his lower lip making his way to me

Me:We're gonna be late Peter

Him:I'm ripping that dress off when we come back home

Me:Are you crazy? Do you know how much this cost me?

Him:I don't

Me:Your monthly salary Sir

Him:Do you know how much I make a week? I could buy your car and pay insurance sweety and make....

Me:I get it can we go

He wrap his arm around me then squeeze my butt

Me:Ouch

Him:I own it

He kissed my cheek

Me:My make up

Him:Seriously?

Me:Serious

•

•

•

Anyway we drove to his home along with Kelly who looked beautiful too.We finally got there we had red wine and desert on us then made our way to the door.Peter knocked a little girl opened up her eyes sparkled when she saw me.I think it's his little sister

Her:Brother

Peter:Hey munchkin

They hugged then he massed her hair

Her:Your massing my hair

She said laughing

Me:Let me help you there your brother can be handful

She giggled

Her:Thanks

Me:You're welcome

I walked away

Her:You look beautiful

Me:Thank you

She smiled.The dinner wasn't on yet the house was pretty packed but not that packed.I walked to Peter and Kelly

Peter: Oh babe these are my cousins

Me:Oh hey

Cousin1:You're his other wife?

Me:Yah

We handshake

Cousin2:Thats insane you're married to this weirdo

They laughed

Me:That's my man your insulting

Peter:You got the answer bro

We laughed

"Paige?"

I heard someone calling my name we all turned to see who it was.

Me:Uhm hy

She was holding a baby

Her:Pls can you hold her for a second I got an emergency incoming call I gotta get it

Me:Uhmmm

I looked at Peter

Him:Go on

Me:What?

I whispered

Him:Take the baby

I looked at her

Me:Sure why not

She gave her me

Her:Thank you

She ran out.What am I suppose to do with this thing?Peter took me away from his cousin

Him:Maybe this is a test

Me:Test? Look at this....

I held it away from my precious dress imagine ruining it while the best part haven't come yet.

Me:Look at this breathing,moving thing

Peter:She's smiling at you awww that's so cute

Me:There's nothing cute.Where is her Mom already isn't she done now?

I said looking around.

Him:Babies are cute come on admit it

Me:They are cute their far away from me bcz they are evil they cry all the time for no damn reason

Him:That's normal.Now don't hold her like that hold her to your chest

Me:Do you know who made this dress? This is a designer dress husband it cost your head so pls I won't let some smiling at me baby ruin it and where is her Mother my God

Him:Who's the cutest girl? Who's the cutest girl?

He said playing with the girls cheeks she was giggling.He kept on making funny sounds she was actually enjoying it,it annoyed the shit outta me

Me:What are you doing?

Him:What?

Me:Stop doing that.God she's heavy

"I'm back I'm so sorry"

Me:Oh it's totally fine just take her

She took her problem away from my face I finally could breath

Me:I need air

Him:I liked her

Me: Anyway Where's your Mom?

Him:Want to see her?

Me:No I was just asking

Him: He's upstairs

Me:Mmm

"Everything is ready pls take your sits there are name tag so don't get lost"

Then we went to sit down. My chair wasn't next to Peter's and it's all that devil's work.I set down I saw Kelly sitting down next to Peter I was fuming but kept my cool.I was next to some Dude I don't know then the parents walked in. They greeted everyone then they set down the dinner started ppl were having little talks.I felt eyes on me I looked up Peter was looking at me like I'm a snack I just laughed a little. He just smiled looking me and not talk I

whispered

Me:What?

Him: You're beautiful

He whispered back I laughed a little

"Its my first time seeing you here"

That Dude next to me whispered in my ear

Me: I'm Paige

We hand shake

Him:Austin

Me:I'm Peter's wife

He got really surprised

Him: Peter Jackson?

Me: Uhmm yah

Him: I didn't know he can talk to the ladies now

Me:Oh

I looked at Peter he's facial expression changed I stopped talking to the guy then focused on my

plat.He didn't stop talking but I didn't want to be rude either

Him: So for how long have you been married?

Me:Months now

He nodded

Him:Congratulations

Me:Thanks

I did a friendly smile

"So uhm Paige how's marriage"

My mother in-law asked everyone looked at me

Me:It's great

I looked at Peter

Me:I fall in love with him every minute by his side

Everyone cheered Peter smiled the Mother just looked at me with disgust

F.in-law:That's for a celebration can we get a wine pls

Shiiit!!! I don't drink but I'm down for champagne and

wine and tonight I can't I'm pregnant and I can't say that now.

Kelly: Can I get a juice pls bcz of my condition

She said brushing her belly.Oh God what am I going to do?Waiter's pull up the wine for everyone and juice for Kelly I called the waiter he poured me a juice too

Me:Thank you

Kelly looked at me

Austin: You're pregnant too?

He said sounding like he's joking

Me:No no not at all

M.in-law: You got juice too Paige don't tell there's a bundle of joy growing in there

She smiled I know she's faking it.I looked at Peter who showed no motions

Me:No it's just uhm I don't feel like drinking tonight

M.in-law: Come on it's just one glass

Me: No I'm fine with the juice

Her:One sip...

Me:I said I'm fine Ma'am

We looked at each other like we'll do a cat fight or something.

F.in-law: Ok let's do a toast

Ppl cheered

Him:Let's toast to every love birds in this house

We got our glasses in the air

Us:Cheers

Then we drank up

Austin:So where do you come from?

Why he wants to know? I'm not friendly that's so he can know

Me:Far away from here

Him: Ohhhk

He sounded disappointed and I don't care I ate my food.The dinner went on blah blah then it was over

ppl were just talking around the house I was sitted on a couch minding my make up when 3 kids came my way

Kid1:Hey

I looked at them

Me:What?

Kid2:Can you tuck us to bed?

I laughed

Me:Nice joke

I get back at my make up

Kid1:Pls we beg you our parents aren't here

I looked at them

Me:Who are your parents?

Him: Donald and Michelle

I don't know who are those ppl

Me:Why don't you ask her?

I pointed at Peter's Mom

Kid3:She hates us

Me:Oh come on

Kid1:Yah and we're scared of her

Me:Can't you go to bed at your own?

Kid2:No we're scared

Me:How old are you?

Kid1:I'm 5

Kid2:I'm 6

Kid3:I'm 4

Wow their Mother is good

Me:You're men come on.Your 6 you're older than them go and tuck your brothers

Kid2:I'm also scared of the dark

I looked at him

Me:Then sleep with the lights on

Kid1:Let's go guys I told you she won't agree

They walked away sad pheww finally.

"Really?"

An old woman said

Me:What?

Her;Tuck the poor children they chose you

Me:Lady can't you see I'm..

Her:One day you'll have children just tuck them it won't hurt

Me: What can a girl do to have peace in here?

Her:Look at them sad

I looked at them

Me:They'll be fine

Her: Pls help them

Me:Fine fine

I stood up then went to the kids.

Me:Wait I'll tuck you in

They smiled

Me:Ok let's go until I change my mind

They ran upstairs rushing and giggling.I sighed following them.We got into their room they got in the bed

Me:Ok there we go

I turned the lights off

Me:That wasn't hard isn't it?

I walked out

"Our Mom used to read us a story"

Is this for real!!!?? I went back I turned the lights on

Me:Where are your book stories?

I said with a little anger inside me.The other boy pass me the book

Me:Ok let's see

I turned the pagies

Me:Ok I'll read "Cinderella and...

Kid 1:No no that's for girls

Me:Ok let's check another one

I turned the Paige's

Me:Ok here is it " The...

Kid2:We know it

Me: But I didn't finish...

Kid3:Actually we know every story there

Me:What do you want from me kids?

Kid2:Tell us a story

Me:Look I'm not a Disney fan I have no idea what do you want me to say

Kid3:Make up a story

Me:Ok...There was a big scary beast that eats ppl one night the beast saw ppl camping they made fire and they were seated.So the beast ate them all one by one...

Kid3: Thats a scary story

Lord help me!!!!

Me:Ok how about you tell a story

Him:I can't

Me:Ok fine. Once apon a time in a far far away land

there lived a prince.Prince by the name ummm Prince Aladdin he once met a monkey and they became best of friends.Aladdin never had parents he was a orphan. One day he met a princess a princess called Jasmin...

Kid1:Are you seriously telling us Aladdin? We've seen the movie

Kid 2:Many times

I got really mad

Me:Guys you ain't helping

Kid1:Tell us something new make up a story

Me: Ok...Once lived a very lonely girl who had no friends nor family. She has no one by her side other than her best friend tinker.Tinker was a uhmmm lighting shiny thing that was able to fly...

Kid3:What kind of a thing is that...

Me:Shut up or I'll leave. Anyway her name was uhm Sandra. So Sandra left with her tinker they found themselves in a big huge city full of ppl.Sandra said to Tinker "wow solo many ppl" she was indeed

surprised...

I tried making it interesting as soon as possible to tell it was horrible.But it worked they fell asleep I think it bored them and they slept.I looked at them asleep they looked so cute.I fixed their blankets then turned off the lights I went out closing their door.I went out then breathed out heavily.

"That was so cute"

I saw Peter holding his laughter

Me:Look this ain't funny look at me I'm sweating

I walked down the stairs he followed laughing

Me:Peter it's not funny those kids are evil actually every child is evil

Him:You looked cute with them

Me:I didn't... Can we go home now I'm exhausted

Him:We'll have to say goodbye to my parents first

Me: Go and make it quick

Him:Together

Me:Oh no thank you

Him:Paige

Me:No no your Mom hates me like everyone in this house first it was that Lady with a baby and your Mom now those kids don't make me put you in the list too

Him:Paige those kids liked you and the story was...good

Me:They kept on telling me what to do Peter like "no not this story" "we know that one" "that's for girls" arg I'm tired

Him: Let's go if you want to rest

Me:Arggg

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:14] Lynne: ×•••× 40 ×•••×

•

•

•

My phone woke me up

Peter:Answer it its making a lot of noise

Me:Sorry

I took it

Me:Hello

"Pls don't hang up"

Me:Kim

Her:Hey

Me:What do you want?

Her:To talk pls

Me:I think we did enough of talking don't you think?

Her: I beg you I'm outside

Me:You're outside?

Her:Yah pls

Me:Come at the door I'm coming

Her:Thank you

I dropped the call

Peter: Who's Kim

Me:A friend of mine just sleep Peter I'll be right back

Him: Ok

I kissed his forehead then wore my gown then headed downstairs I went to open the door.

Me:Come in

Her:Thanks

We set at the couch

Me:Uhm so what brings you here??

Her:It's about Chris

Me:If you're here to shout again...

Her:No no I'm here to apologize for my behavior I shouldn't have acted like that I was wrong I know you were trying to help it's just,Chris's words hurt me

Me:I'm sorry he's a jerk I didn't know you two had something

Her:We didn't have anything

Me: Sorry my bad

Her:Although I want to have something sooo bad I'll keep my cool I'll move on by the way I have a hot date tonight

Me:Who's that?

Her:Nahhh you won't know him I met him yesterday at the beach

Me:Wow Kim

Her:What? We hit off the same time

Me:Good luck

Her:Thanks I'll need it by the way what is going on to you

Me:What do you mean?

Her:You're glowing,you're face is full girl you're gaining weight in the right places what is going on

Me:Ohhh nothing

I faked a laughter

Her: Come on Paige

Me:I'm just happy ...my man is taking care of me really well

Her:That's the glow?

Me:He's behind it all

She whispered

Her: And that too huh?

She eyed my belly

Me:Kimberly Fierce no

I took a pillow to hide my belly she laughed

Her:I missed so much about you I really need to know more

Me:Know what?

Her: Are you pregnant?

She whispered

Me:Whaaaat? No just imagine I would have killed myself a long time ago

Her:I know you hate kids but you're not evil you

would never do that

Me:Kim pls

Her:It's obvious Paige if Peter is hitting it raw come on you got a little munchkin growing inside you

Me: You mean munchkins

She screamed

Me:Shhh tone it down you'll wake up the sleeping dragon

Her:Loops sorry.Oh my Paige are you for real?

Me:Yes I'm for real

Her:Twins? Oh I also want twins

Me:It's not twins

Her:No?

I showed her 3 fingers

Her:Whaaaat?

She was confused

Me:Triplets

Her:Awww wow more this is beautiful

Me:Beautiful? Wow can we talk some other time this is not a conversation to talk about in this house bcz these walls could speak

Her:They can speak?

Me:Not literally Kim

Her:Ok I better go

"Honey where did you put my..."

Kim:This must be the husband huh?

Kim walked to shake his hand

Peter:And you're must be Kim

She turned to me and whisper

Her:He knows my name

I smiled

Her:Yes yes indeed I'm Kim actually Paige didn't tell me you're this cute in person

Me:Kim?

Peter:Uhm...

Kim:But oh well I better leave you too love birds so you can go to nest and do whatever... Yah

Me:Bye Kim

She walked to the door

Her:I'll call you

Me:I'll answer

Her: Ok bye I love you

Me:I love you too

She walked out.

Peter:She's nice

Me:Yah and I really need more sleep

Him:I need something else

I walked pass him he spank my ass

Me:I'm not in the mood

We walked upstairs

Him:Come on

Me:I'm tired like I've been running miles

We walked to the room I look at myself in the mirror in the big mirror.I walked towards it I saw myself actually I did gain pounds

Peter:Look at you looking soooo sexy

Me:Even if I'm this fat you still think I'm sexy

Him: Yah

Me:Really Peter?

I said angry

Him: What do I say?

Me:How about "no my love you're not fat in my eyes..."

Him:But you are

I cried

Me:You're not making me feel better

Him:Bcz Paige I won't lie to you.Every pregnant woman gains weight it's normal my love don't cry.

He hugged me

Him:I won't lie to you you are fat

Me:I get it don't repeat it

Him:Ok sorry but I love you just the wat you are.You're thick and wayyy sexy now and you know what?

I wipe my tears

Me:what?

Him:Bcz you're making me crazy about you even more you make me want you more I think about you every second. Don't get emotional when you look at the mirror bcz you're mine and I love you just the way you are.

He held my tummy

Him: I love all of you I want all of you here with me.I just want you to want this family like how I want it

I smiled

Me:I want it Peter I want this family and I want you

Him:I love you

Me:My ass isn't huge right?

Him:It is

Me: No

Him:I like it

I smiled then we kissed he grabbed my ass

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

So the little idiot is pregnant huh? But what Peter means by "all of you"? Is Paige expecting twins? Arggg I have to find out besides that precious pregnancy won't last.All of a sudden I heard moans are they for real? Noway they'll have their little section when I don't hear and when I don't know. I barged in I didn't knock on purpose.

Me:Oh I'm so so sorry...

I interrupted their love section then went out.Arg Peter was all over that fat pig arggg

" Kelly what were you thinking of just barging in like that?"

I heard Peters voice I turned

Me:I'm sorry I got a little dizzy I thought it was mine

I said sounding hurt just to complete the act by the way he looked sooo hot he was shirtless. I can't blv Paige is getting all of that all that is mine

Him:Are you feeling ok now?

Me:I'm still a little dizzy

I balanced with the walls he rash to me

Me:Can you take me to my room

Him:Sure

I held onto his arms God i miss this.I didn't left Peter bcz I wanted too it was that stupid side dude I had he threatened to tell Peter I was cheating and I couldn't want that bcz I'm pregnant with his child.I know some ppl will say I'm framing him but no I'm not.He took me to my bed then I laid down

Me:Thanks

Him: Welcome.Do you need anything else before I go?

Me:Yes uhm I needed to tell you something

Him:Ok I'm listening

Me:I'm seeing someone

I lied

Him;What? Why in your condition

Me:You know how pregnancy work Peter

Him:actually I don't

Me:The Mother needs to be intimate with a man for the sake of the baby

Him: What? Noway that's my child

Me:We are not together Peter eventually I'll meet someone but I'm already meeting someone so tonight I'm meeting him in his house. I just wanted to let you know

Him:Does he know you're pregnant?

Me:Yes he knows and he doesn't mind

Him:But I mind

Me:It's for the baby

Him:My baby Kelly are you even listening to yourself

Me:It's not like you'll do this yourself pls this is for the baby and for me I mean it's been a while

Him:My baby doesn't need that the doctor said the baby is fine and healthy. Why don't you take pills huh?

He walked out I let out a laughter. But for real I should get laid and tonight it's been a while.

[12/22, 12:14] Lynne: ×•••× 41 ×•••× (A week later)

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Today it's Saturday me and Peter woke up pretty late.I was on my phone when Peter was coming out of the bathroom and getting dressed

Me:Where are you going?

I asked concerned

Him:Going out with the boys

Me:Why?

Him:What do you mean why?

Me: Just why?

Him:Uhm bcz they are my friends

Me: Hmmm

Him: By the way I'll come home late today

Me:You mean I'll stay with Kelly the whole day?

Him:What's the worst that could happen?

Me:Peter pls don't go

Him:My love pls

Me:Pls

Him:They invited me pls my love I really need this

He set next to me

Him:Pls besides you can go out with Kim

Me:I thought maybe today you and me can... You know... Spend some alone time...

Him: We got the whole night for that

He said kissing my neck I pushed him

Me:Noooo

Him:What now?

Me:By alone time I mean going out or to the park or whatever not what you're thinking stop having a dirty mind.Well maybe I mean that too

He laughed kissing my neck

Me:Stop

It was tickling

Him:We can do that my love but not today but I promise soon OK?

Me:Ok fine

Him:Thanks Beab

He carried on getting ready

Me:So where are you going?

He stopped then looked at me

Him:What?

Me:Where are you going with your friends?

Him: Uhm out

I got suspicious

Me:What do you mean out?

Him:What do you want to know?

Me:I was just asking why you're getting all worked up?

Him:I'm not

I raised my left eyebrow looking at him

Me: Ok sorry I'll be out of your business

I focused on my phone he's phone rang

Him: Yah Dude

...

Him:Ok

...

Him:Ok I'll...

...

Him:I'll be there in a sec

He dropped the call

Him:Beab I gotta go

He kissed my cheek

Me: Bye

He left

Me: Men

I laughed at the way he was walking out like someone pushed him.Anyway enough about that y'all my baby bump is showing a little but not too much and I haven't told my Parents anything only Kim knows and I know for a fact she'll never run her mouth. And I'm hungry I should get my lazy ass up right now. I woke I can't blv it was so sunny but yesterday was all windy and stuff.So I took a shower then got on my floral dress with pushes then headed to the kitchen the Almighty Kelly was hanging her feet on the table whole ribbing her belly and watching TV at the lounge.

Her: Hey

Me:Hy

I walked straight to the kitchen.I don't know what to

make my head is spinning around. But nothing Paige Jackson Mahone (I gotta include my surname bcz its that good) anyway nothing I can't do.I put up some ingredients and I had something like a sandwich or whatever but I loved it was soooo good I ate till my belly got full.So to me it was just a regular day with nothing to do other than taking selfiies

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I've arrived in my hommies crib.I walked in with them sipping on beer and having good time as always

Me:Boys!

Them:Dude!

We all bro hugged

Me:How y'all doin?

David:Good,good and you with your....

Them:Wife's?

They laughed

Me:Not funny but I'm doing fine other than them fighting all the time

Nick:It's cool bro they'll get along

Me:Man you don't know them

Shawn: I know Paige

He said licking his lips they laughed

Me:Hey hey watch it that's my wife you're talking about

They laughed

Shawn:Look who's talking

Me:I love her so beat it lover boy

Shawn: I'm sorry ok

He laughed

Nick:Anyway my relationship is stressing me out guys

I set around with them having some beer

Me:Is it Kiki?

David: As always man

Nick:Ok back off David

Me:Come on Nick what happened now?

Nick:She's Moody all the time

Shawn:You're sure she ain't pregame

Nick:Hell naw that will be the end of me

Me:Having a baby is a beautiful thing

Shawn: Like having these babies?

He showed us a picture of girls

Me:Damn the one with a yellow bikini

David:The one with the red...the darker the berry the juicy it is damn

Shawn:So since its guys night...

Me:You said nothing about guys night to ms

Shawn: Just chill

Me:No I have a wife I have to go to

David:Can you let the poor man speak Peter? Pls go on Shawn

Shawn: Ok the girls are coming here

David:Here?

Shawn: Here and today

Nick:My girl will kill me

David:Will you tell her?

Nick:Well..

They looked at each other

Nick:Nahhhhh what she doesn't know won't hurt her

They laughed shaking hands

Me: No no no no I'm loyal to my girl man

David:Did you see this!?

He showed me the picture again

Me:Those curves

I bit my lip

Shawn:Imagine touching those curves huh?

Me:Dear Lord

David: And she whispers your name in your ear

I was deep with my thought but clap back

Me:No no no and no

Shawn:Come on

Me:Look I love Paige and I won't cheat on her

David:Who said you're cheating?

Me:Me bcz I'm married

Shawn:But your zip is loose bro come on

David:We'll bang'em today that's all

Shawn:You mean all night

They laughed

Shawn:And they are bringing friends

Me:So they're are more?

David:More more of that

Me: The yellow bikini is hurting my feelings

Nick: it's this once man

Me:Nick come on I thought you were on my side

Nick:Did you take a good look

We heard a knock

Shawn:It's them

Me:What?

I was confused as hell Shawn went to open the door

"Hey Shawn"

I heard ladies voices.I'm in a deep SHIIIIIT

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I went to sit at the lounge after that

Kelly:You're glowing

Me: Am I?

I faked a smile

Her:Yah look at your skin and your face you're sooo

cute

She faked a smile

Me:Well thanks for the complement's it must be my new lotion

Her:Oh what's it's called? I'd love to get some

Me:Oh sorry but even if I tell you,you couldn't afford it

I faked a huge smile

Her:Aw come on I can try

She returned the favour

Me:How about I don't? Ok?

I heard my phone rang upstairs I stood up

Her: You're gaining weight too look at you

Me:I'm happy Kelly I'm sooo happy

I walked upstairs then to my room I answered the call

Me: Hello

"Am I talking to Paige Jackson?"

Me:What's with ppl asking me on my phone today? Who are you?

Her:I'm Kiki Nick's girlfriend

Me:Who's Nick?

Her:Peter's friend

Me:Ohk whats going on?

Her: We need to meet

Me:To meet? For what?

Her:Something regarding your husband

Me:What about him?

I put on a straight face

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I went to the kitchen to get a glass of water bcz I can't stand those girls.They threw a party here a party I wasn't aware of. They are dancing here half

naked like those girls in music videos. I'm a married man who's crazy about his wife and expecting 3 little mini me's in her so I should act like a gentleman

"Hey"

I heard a soft voice on my back I turned immediately

Me: Oh hey

My freakin voice was shaking it's that girl the yellow bikini girl.She looked sooo hot in person I gotta admit

Hey: Why you're here? All alone while the party is on the other side

Me:Nahhh I'll....uhm I'll pass

Her:It's a shame bcz I thought I might invite you to dance

To dance? With me? In that tight,short dress? I think you want to get me hard

Me:No no thanks I'm ok here

Her:Stop being a party popper come on

She held my hand then we went to dance but it's just

dancing nothing more I'm not committing a crime

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I rash to meet this girl at some restaurant.I got there and I couldn't spot her she waved at me I rash to her table

Me:Hey again

Her:Hey...ok so look

She gave me a photo

Me;What am I looking at?

Her:You're looking at a bunch of young sexy girls

Me:Yah they are pretty sexy

It was a photo of many girls at someone's house at the door

Her:Anyway look closely at the picture

Me:For what?

Her:Look

I did

Her:Do you see the man at the door?

Me:Yah I can isn't that..

Her:One of Peter's friends

Me:Ohk and what does this mean?

Her: It means alot Nick left home telling me out going out with guys this is not going out

Me: You're insulating that my Husband is...

Her: Yes and my boyfriend

Me:There's noway

Her:Ok then I'm heading there now

Me:This can't be real? How did you get the picture?

Her:A friend of mine followed him then sent me this after a while bcz I knew he was lying and Nick suck at lying

Me:No no not Peter

Her:Oh yes

Me:You better arrange a funeral bcz I'LL KILL HIM

•

•

•

To be continued...

[12/22, 12:14] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

We drove to this house there were a lot of cars outside. Kiki hop in hers I hop in mine I followed her.I'm gonna kill Peter for real IF I find him with some bitch.We got out then made our way to the door even the music was loud why ain't neighbors complaining? We knocked some lady opened up

Her:Who are you

Kiki:No who are you.Where is Nick

Me:Girl let us in

Her:No..

I pushed the door and there is my precious husband dancing with some chick she is grinding on him,she's all touchy touchy,her dress is rolling up she's close to Peter like they are glued.And shame the poor guy is lost he's scratching his head while looking at her ass

Me:PETERSON JACKSON!

Kiki:Where's Nick?

She asked calmly

The music stopped

Peter: Beab

He was beyond shocked he even pushed the girl.Kiki wondered around the house looking for Nick

Me:Oh would you look at that. I thought you were going "out"

Him:Yah Beab...

"Yes we were..."

Me:I'm talking to Peter

I eyed the other guy I guess his friend

Peter: Can we talk in private

He walked to me

Me:All along you were busy here with these fake ass bitches really?

"What?"

"Excuse me"

Me:Damn right you're excused

"This is not fake honey"

I laughed

Me:Oh pls that ass is full of silicon

"Ahhhh I'm all real sweety you're jealous"

I was talking to this girl who was grinding on Peter

Peter:Beab pls don't...

Me:You and me Peter we'll talk later ok? Right now I got fake bitches to solve.Listen here little girl Peter is mine

Her:Oh pls he didn't say that to me when we were

making out

I looked at Peter

Me:You...?

I didn't finish my sentence

Peter:No no no my love she's lying

Me:How dare you even lay hands on my man can't you see he's married

She smiled

Her:That ring doesn't scare me actually it motivates me

She smiled other girls laughed.Ohhh God knows how much I want to snatch that weave.I breathed out heavily holding on my waist

Peter:Are you ok my love?

He rash to me I blocked him

Me: I'm fine Peter I'm fine than ever OK

Actually I wasn't fine

Me:Know what? Enjoy your party

I walked out slowly

Peter:Paige pls..

I blocked him

Me:I need to lie down that bitch with silicon ass and boobs is waiting for you thirtsty like hell

Her:Hey stop calling me fake you're the one fake here bitch

Me:I'm what?

I laughed softly

Me:Keep lying to yourself

I walked out Peter ran after me

Him:My love pls hear me out

Me:I can't hear you out what I saw is enough now go on and continue your grinding

I opened my car door

Him:Beab I knew nothing about what happened.I thought was gonna be us alone

Me:I just wanted to go out with you today but I didn't

want you to cancel your boys I let you go now I find you with some girl.This is too much if I'm not enough for you say so it's still early for me to walk out of this marriage I'll take care of my babies.

I sounded sad I was at an edge to cry he looked sad too.I hop in my car

Him:Paige pls don't get like this

I closed my door then drove off.I wipe my tears then drove.I can't blv this at all but it happened

•

•

•

Now it's night time I'm already done eating dinner Peter is not home yet and he wants me to understand he better think again.I was taking a bath I just relaxed on the bathtub nothing more.I closed my eyes then dug deep in my thoughts. The next thing I feel are lips against mine I opened my eye.Arggggg it's Peter I looked away

Me:You're smelling alcohol it's disgusting

Him:I had few drinks a while ago.Beab?

I didn't look at him he shifted my head i stared at him

Him:I swear I didn't know there will be girls

Me:What if you did?

Him:Beab come on I would never

Me:What I saw says a lot

Him:I swear she took me to dance by the way my head was not functioning well...

Me:All the time when you're showed an ass

Him:No that's not true you're the only one that drives me crazy

He ran he's fingers on my arm I moved my arm

Him:Ok I'm sorry Paige I'm really sorry by the way I'll never see them again

Me:And where were you this time?

Him:I was scared to come home I was scared to fight with you I was scared to lose you

Me:Now you're not?

Him:Beab? Ofcause I'm scared to lose you but I was gonna come home anyway

Me:Mmm

I stood up then walked out of the bathtub.I took a towel then dried myself I then cleaned the bathtub he was just looking at me.I went to the bedroom to lotion myself he walked to me giving me nasty smiles does he think I forgave him? Well he gotta another thing coming

Him:How about we take advantage of this moment and do something more interesting?

He said kissing my neck I pushed him

Me:Do you think I forgave you?

Him:Yah

Me:Well I didn't

Him:Pls Paige

Me:Peter pls besides you're not sleeping here

Him:What?

Me:Do you think I'm stupid? Peter you were starring

at that girl you dripping saliva on your mouth.You've never looked at me that way

Him:I do

Me:So you're admitting you were thirsty over her?

I said angry

Him:No no no my love ... Uhm

Me:I need to sleep your food is at the oven

I walked to my dresser then pulled out my lace undies and lace crop tee night vest then wore them

Him: You're wearing that?

Me:Why you're still here?

Him:Paige just pls.You're sleeping on those

Me:Peter Yes ok

Him:But you've never slept with me in those

Me:I guess the bed is lucky tonight don't you think

Him:This is unfair

Me:Leave Peter

Him:This is my house,my room,my bed and you're mine as well I'm not going anywhere you looking like that

Me:Peter am I written "I care in my forehead"?

Him:No

Me; Exactly... that means I don't now chop chop and close the door on your way out

I fixed my pillows

Him:But love I said sorry

Me:You did?

Him:Yes

Me:Aw isn't that cute? PETER LEAVE

Him:When will I come back?

Me: When I feel like it

Him:You're bullying me in my own house who does that?

Me:I guess me

Him:You're evil

Me:So I've been told

Him:Oh really? Who is that bcz I'd love to shake his/her hand bcz its true

Me:You.You're the only person who thinks I'm evil but all I do is love you

Him:But I love you too

Me:You do? You should have thought of that before dancing with that girl with a silicon ass

Him:Is it really fake?

Me:Why don't you ask her she's your girlfriend right?

I got under covers

Him:Beab don't you miss me? I miss you sooo bad

Me: It's getting late Peter my babies need to sleep

Him: With their Daddy holding them

Me:The couch would have been hot by now while you're still here bragging

Him:I'm not sleeping on the couch Paige pls

I didn't answer I just ignore him then closed my eyes

I'm tired.He kept on pleading then he slept next to me

Me:Peter I can't do this anymore leave here

Him:My love

He kissed my shoulder I turned my back on him

Him:I like this few too

He got close to me I felt his dick print he brushed my belly

Me:Peter no means no

He turned me then he got on top

Him:Bcz I know you mean the opposite

He kissed me

Me:Get off me! Get off!

I pushed him

Me:When I say no I mean NO now get out now

Him:I thought...

Me:You thought nothing. What do you think this is? A romantic movie? Get out

Him:But...?

Me:Leave

He walked to the door

Him: But my love...

Me:Peter?

He walked out

Him:Ok ok I'm leaving

He closed the door.What does he think this is.I don't kiss and make out this is not one of those romantic shit.

[12/22, 12:15] Lynne: ×•••× 42 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up pretty early.My phone rang

Me:Who is it

"Sis pls don't hang up"

Me:What Chris?

Him:Can we talk

Me:I'm hungry as hell can we talk some other time?

Him:Pls I just want to say I'm sorry

Me:About what?

Him:Abt shouting at you that night

Me:Mmm

Him:Pls say something

Me:Like?

Him:Paige

Me:Ok OK fine I forgive you

Him:Mean it

Me:Like you meant your sorry

Him:Ok ok fine I'm sorry Paige

Me:I forgive you Chris and sorry too

Him:I forgive you too. Now when are you coming home?

Me:How about today?

Him:Yes yes I miss you

Me:I miss you too

Him:I won't tell Mom and Dad so surprise them

Me:I will

Him:Bye

Me:Bye

I dropped the call then headed out I'm hungry as hell.What I saw shocked me.Kelly is walking around half naked where does she think this is.I rash downstairs

Me:What are you doing?

My eyes wondered around I didn't spot Peter and I didn't see him today either.

Her:Oh hello to you to Paige

Me:What are you doing wearing like that?

Her:Oh this?

She turned around

Her:Do you like it?

She laughed revealing that pathetic smile

Me:You don't walk around like that in this house

Her:Why? Are you feeling some... Competition?

She laughed I did too bcz she's crazy

Me:Competition? Me and you in a competition? Oh pls

Her: Look Paige if you don't like what I wear deal with it bcz I ain't changing nothing

Me:I order you to wear descent around my husband Kelly

Her:You order me?

She said laughing

Her:This is my body and I'll wear whatever heck I want

Me:You look pathetic

Her:What? You want all of this?

Me:No thank you

Her: No what? Leave me alone ok? Infact stop talking to me

Me:You will change this thing you're wearing now Kelly!!!

"Woah woah what's with the yelling!!!?"

Me: Arggg

I walked pass Kelly

Peter:Paige don't you dare walk away from me!

I stopped then turned to him looking sooo pissed

Him:Care to explain,what in the world is going on here?

Me:Why don't you ask her?

Kelly:Why me?

Me:You started it you psycho

We started shouting at each other I was soooo angry

Peter: SHUT UP!!!!!

His voice startled us we stopped shouting

Him:Both of you. So I'll ask Paige first what

happened?

Me:Kelly is walking around naked I mean it's inappropriate

Kelly:Paige...

Peter:Shut up Kelly I said Paige should talk first

She stopped talking

Me:I'm not having a meeting right now or a section whatever you call this all I'm saying is she is not allowed wearing this lingerie or whatever in this house maybe in her bedroom and that's final

I walked to the kitchen Peter walked after me

Him:Beab...

Me:Look Peter I'm tired leaving like this arguing all the time

Him:It's just a phase

Me:It's not! It's not a damn phase okay!? Kelly wants to ruin me and ruin everything I have.

Him:She is not...

Me:You know nothing abt her

I got tears

Me:Peter listen to me and listen very carefully. I love you with all I have if you want us to work I want Kelly out of the house

Him:What? What do you mean?

Me: It's either me or her,you chose

He was lost and confuse.I gathered my fat ass to my room and prepared to visit my family I need to leave here for just a little while.

[12/22, 12:15] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Now I'm heading to my parents house. I better get back Peter made up his mind bcz I can't live with Kelly.Anyways I got home,I parked my car then took my things I went to knock.Mom opened the door

Her:My baby!

She screamed hugging me

Me:Hey Mom

I hugged her back

Her:You look sooo beautiful come in why knocking anyway?

She held my arm I walked in she closed the door

Me:Where's Dad?

Her:At the kitchen

Me: Cooking?

Her:Yep

Me: Dad?

"Who's calling me?"

Me: You're precious daughter

Him:I'm coming!

He came back in a rush we hugged

Him:My precious daughter

Me:Hey Dad

Him: I thought that boy will keep you away from us forever

I need to be 100% happy in front of them I can't show them I'm hurt they might hurt Peter so no no.Anyway I giggled

Me:No Dad why would you think that

We all laughed

"When I say surprise my parents I mean surprise them with nice things like food Paige where is something surprising?"

Chris said walking towards us

Me:Whaaaat? I forgot brother

Mom:He wanted all the surprises to himself anyway

Me:Yep I know

We laughed me and Chris hugged

Him:It's nice to see you again

Me:Me too brother

Dad:Ok now I made something to eat who's..

Me:Me me meeee pls I'm starving

Mom:You heard her my love now dish up pls

We laughed

Dad:I'll do that

He rash to the kitchen

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me:Pls don't make this harder than it is

Kelly: No Peter you always put Paige first at everything.You put her first in your life in...

Me:Kelly I got you an apartment I'll pay for everything didn't I say that. I'll pay rent,the expenses everything

Her:I don't want your money

Me:The last time I remember you left me bcz I got broke and guess who helped me? My wife now pack your things and leave Paige is the last person I want

to lose

Her:Why her? I'm having your child Peter and she is not

Me: Carrying a child or not I love Paige

Her:Peter pls don't do this a child needs a Father

Me:And I'll be with my child

Her:What if I tell your child you abandoned us

Me:You wouldn't have a chance I will visit everyday when my child is born

Her:You got this all planned out huh?

Me:Yes now can you go?

Her:I wonder what will your Mother say about this

Me:I don't care about her opinion I didn't ask for any

Her:Fine Peter have it your way or shall I say Paige's way

Me:Another thing I ask for you is Paige's name must stop slipping on your lips

Her:You really like her huh?

Me:I love her

Her:What did she do to you? Got you under a spell or something

Me:She shows me love something you failed to

Her:Well true but you know I've changed this pregnancy changed me

Me:Oh it did? It better change you walking out

I went to my room. I tried calling Paige she was on voicemail

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me:Best meal ever Dad

Him:I know my love I learned it from your Mom

Me:But why I cook horrible?

Their faces changed

Mom:Honey you Cook great

Me:No I've cooked for Peter before and he didn't eat

Dad: He didn't eat? How dare he?

Mom: Maybe he wasn't hungry

Chris:Ok stop lying to her

Me:Yah Mom I know I cook horrible

Mom: I'm sorry honey

Me: Its ok I got over it I should get cooking lessons

Her:Yah maybe you can do good

Dad:for us to celebrate let's get some desert

Us:Yes pls

Me:I'll start the the bathroom

Dad:Oh come on was my cooking that bad

I laughed

Me: No Dad

We laughed he went to the kitchen I took my phone then went to my room I turned it on.The minute it was on Peter's missed calls rash and messages saying I should come back home or where am I he's

worried so I thought I should call to tell him I'm ok.He dropped the call right away.Ok I get that he's angry but was that necessary.... He called again I picked up

Him:Pls don't hang up I dropped your call by mistake where are you are you hurt why your phone was on silent my love you scared me and I'm so so sorry and Kelly is moving out I'm sorry my love pls forgive me with everything I've done to you wrong like everything I've done yesterday and for coming home late

He said all of that in one breath he didn't breath

Him:Pls come back home

I just smiled

Me:I'm ok I'm at my parents house just having fun I'll be home late

Him:Ok

He breathed out heavily

Him:Don't ever scare me like that

Me:I won't ever

Him:I thought I lost you

Me:You will never lose me

Him:I love you always

Me:I love you too and always

I dropped the call.If it's a crime loving someone so much then handcuff me Sir.My babies moved.OMG!!!! I held on my belly

Me:Can you hear Mommy when she's happy?

I laughed

Me:I never thought I'll ever be pregnant but when you love a D too much this happens.

[12/22, 12:16] Lynne: ×•••× 43 ×•••×

•

•

•

I'm back home actually nothing is good than a breakfast with my husband ok? I'm so relaxed I'm happy

Him:Oh honey I'll be late tonight

Me:Really? Oh my love

Him:Don't be said you got me all your life

Me:Well hell yah i do

My babies kick

Me:The babies are kicking

Him:Serious?

He came closer to touch my belly

Him:But I don't feel anything

Me:Just wait a...

They kicked again

Him:Ohhhh I felt it

Me:It's so weird

I laughed

Him:It doesn't hurt right?

Me:No but it's a weird feeling that's all

Him:At least it doesn't hurt and my love I read on

Google that it's good to sing for your baby and reading them some stories

Me:While I'm pregnant?

Him:Yes bcz they can hear

Me:But it's been a month and 1 week my love

Him:Come on they are fully now they can hear

Me:My love they are still small we have to check the gender

Him:Yes but let me sing for them

Me: Aren't you gonna be late?

Him: The office can wait I own that place

Me: Make it quick

I laughed he started singing

Him:"fly fly black sheep..."

Me:What are you singing? Are you calling my babies sheep's?

Him:What? No no no no that's not it actually that's a song for little kids

Me:No try another one

Him:Ok uhm...which one?

Me:I'm not familiar with baby things my love besides you sound like a dying horse just go to work

Him:Me? Sounding like a dying horse? Actually when I was young i had a band

I laughed

Me:A band? Really my love? What were you a lead singer oh pls

Him: Yes I was

Me:You can't be serious

Him:Yes I used to sing along with my friends at that time

Me:Who were listening to you oh God imagine the horror of watching you sing and to the end my poor ears

Him:You clearly don't know "The Young"

Me:"The young "?

Him:Yes it was our name band

Me:You called yourselves" The Young "? Young what? Idiots?

Him:Ok I won't just stay here a listening to you bad mouthing my best buddies of all time

Me:I just want to thank God I wasn't there my love it would be a tragic oh imagine

Him:You were not even in a band so pls stop talking

Me:Me and a band? Nah ah sweetie well ofcause I participated on school events and all but I was a cheerleader, one of the dance group members and win Miss Hawmond High School each year since grade 8 and I was School President at grade 11 and 12 in my school now tell me Mr Jackson was I boring?

Him:I didn't say you're boring

Me:You think so then

Him: Whatever Paige so you were the IT girl in you're school?

Me:Well no but I was pretty popular

Him:You were like one of those girls in Disney movies

Me:What no I was not mean I'm not mean anf you watch Disney movies?

Him:Ahhh....no...no my uhmm...my I. .my sister used to watch them so I used to watch with her

Me:You were watching with her

Him:Not watching watching but just watching

Me:So you know about that Aladdin Prince blah blah blah

Him:Aladdin wasn't a Prince

Me: Ok I don't watch TV that much but I bet on you he was a Prince

Him:He asked his Ginny to make him a Prince by his wishes

Me: Ey I know what I'm talking about

Him:I do too Aladdin wasn't a Prince he wanted to impress Jasmine the Princess you actually lied to those boys

Me:I told them what I knew wasn't that enough? And why you know so much about Aladdin?

Him:My little sister has told me the story

Me: Hmmm

Him:Anyway Angry birds 2 will be out soon in cinema's and Nicki Minaj is one of the characters

Me:Ohhh you don't say

Him:Yes

Me:Peter?

Him:mm?

Me: Stop watching Disney

Him:I do not

Me:Yah right

We carried on eating

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

Me:Their honey moon will soon fade Mom

Mom:Honey did you take....

Me:Take what? Huh? Take what? I told you I'm fine I can do well I don't need pills to calm me

Mom:But sweety...

Me:No it's wrong to take those pills in this condition I take only the once for my pregnancy and again Mom I'm ok

Her:But you get angry

Me:That's normal right Mom? Right?

Her:Yes yes

Me:Yes I'm normal right MOM?

Her:Yes honey you are but take it easy on the pregnancy you may get hurt

I set down

Me:You right the Doctor said I should mind my temper I know Mom

Her:Does Peter know?

Me:That I'm crazy? Is that it Mother?

Her:No honey that's not it look I'll talk to Peter

Me:No sweet Mom you've done enough for me Peter will come begging for forgiveness... He'll bow down at my feet but first I'll take care of that frenemy of mine

Mom:Don't you think...?

Me:Mom pls nothing Kelly can't handle it's a peace of cake just watch.

[12/22, 12:17] Lynne: ×•••× 44 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I was chilling with Peter just having light conversation I thought about my pregnancy

Me:Beab?

Him: Mmm?

Me:I was thinking

Him:Thinking?

Me:Yes thinking about telling everyone about my pregnancy now

Him:Are you sure?

Me:Yah I mean we're gonna tell them sooner or later though

Him:Yah you're right

Me:Yah I wonder how will my parents react

Him: I wonder mine

Me:So will you tell yours and I tell mine or we do it all together?

Him:I still don't know I have a big family

Me: A huge one. I don't so how about we do a get together kinda party so we all get together and we tell them

Him:That's a good idea my love

Me: Ofcause it is I know it is

Him:Ok how about you and me now right now just do something fun?

He kissed me

Me:Peter?

Him;Hm?

Me:Why you're always thinking of sex?

Him:It's not just sex my love we're are making love besides it's good for the baby

Me:And that's why I got pills

Him:Baby come on

Me:No Peter I'm tired

Him: Of what?

Me:Of nothing I'm tired of nothing can't you see

Him:But you look so yummy today

He brushed my thighs

Me: I came out of my Momma's womb yummy so don't

Him: You're stingy

Me:Oh would you look at that.And you're not?

Him: Ok I'm sorry poo bare

Me:What ew I'm not poo bare

Him:Ok then you're carrying my poo bares

Me:No my babies will be Bubbles, Pinky and...

Him: No no no no those are girls names

Me: Yes I know

Him:But you don't know the gender yet

Me:Yes I don't but I feel I'm carrying 3 girls

Him; No it's 3 boys

Me:No boys are a lot

Him:No boys are boys.I'll teach them everything about being boys them manhood teach them how to approach girls

Me: My kids will never turn out like you. You're too much

Him:They'll have my blood so you won't be able to

stop them

Me:I'll raise them to be responsible by the way who says I'm carrying boys these are my beautiful girls.We'll go shopping, go to the spa,Disney anywhere they want to go

Him:You'll spoil them then they'll turn out being spoilt

Me:That doesn't mean I won't discipline them

Him:It doesn't?

Me;Yes Peter now stop being sarcastic

Him:Maybe you're carrying 2 Boys and one girl

Me:No 3 girls and I feel it

Him:Whatever Paige but we'll see

Me:We'll see

Him:I will say I told you so when I'm right.I'll be right next to you and a boy pops up I'll say "ahhhha it's a boy in you're FACE!" then comes another boy then say that again then comes another boy? I'll run around the hospital naked

Me:What? No

Him:Yes you'll see

Me:No no honey you'll give ppl the chills

Him:It won't be their first time seeing a man naked Paige

Me:It will be the first time seeing mine so pls

Him:Jealous?

Me:Me? Jealous? Oh pls

I laughed sarcastically

Me:Ofcause I'm jealous my God.

Him:It's good to hear

He kissed my cheek

Him: I love you

Me:I love you too

Him:I can't wait to have this whole family here

Me:Me too I can't blv I'm taking this pregnancy so lightly I used to hate kids for real bcz they cry all the time for no reason

Him:It's how they are I saw it on my little sister they always want attention

Me:I have to buy a book about babies so I can learn

Him:I think you need some experience like getting a test

Me:A test?

Him:Yah like training on a real baby

Me:What do you mean?

Him: I can ask the lady we saw at my house to bring her baby for a day and see how will you do

Me:How will I do? What about you?

Him:Ok fine me too

Me:Yah

Him:So you agree

Me:Well yah

I looked away

Him: You're not meaning it Paige

Me: Yes Peter I want to

Him:Great I'll call her to bring her tomorrow

Me:Tomorrow?

Him:Yes starting tomorrow you will be a mother for a day

Me:How many hours?

Him:I don't know you'll hear from her

I faked a smile bcz I want this but I can't even change a dipper,I don't know how to make their bottles

Me:Will she come with a book?

Him: No she'll give you the baby then leaves

Me:No instructions?

Him:She will

Me:Why you're not including yourself?

Him: I'll be here too

He smiled

Me:You're lying

Him:It will be fine

Me:Well I guess bcz the baby was nice

Him:Yes Babies are nice

Me:You think so?

Him:Yahhh

I don't think so Babies are not nice they cry and a lot

Me:Well it's worth a try bcz I need it we'll make a good team

Him:Yah "we"

Me:Peter don't you dare ditch me

Him:I won't my love

Me:You better not

He smiled

Me:Peter pls don't

I looked sad

Him:I won't

He laughed

Me:Peter stop laughing

I wanted to cry bcz I know he's lying

Him:My love you trust me don't you?

Me: I do

Him:Then don't worry yourself

He kissed my forehead

Me:I'll burn you alive if you ditch me

Him:I will never

Me:Ok

He smiled

Me: Stop smiling Peter

He laughed.I swear I'll kill him

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:17] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

I'm in the house alone just doing nothing I'm bored if I may say.I heard a knock

Me:Coming!

I drag my feet to the door I was at the lounge.I went to open the door

"Oh hey is this Peter's house?"

She was holding a baby and carrying bags she sounds like she's in a rush

Me:Yes it is

She must be the woman Peter said she'll bring a baby here

Her:Oh thank God uhm here to drop the baby

Me:Sure sure

I let her in I helped her with her bags

Her:Oh thank you

But Peter said he cancelled everything since he'll be working he SET ME UP! I kept my cool with the lady

Her:So will you be looking after her?

Me:Yes

I smiled more like faking it

Her:Hey I know you

Me:Oh you do?

Her:At the party you're Peter's wife right?

Me:Yes

Her:I'm the lady who asked you to look after my baby while I was going to answer the phone outside

Me:Oh yah I remember

How could I not

Her: Ok I can't stay and chit chat I got a very important interview in 30 minutes

Me:Uhm ok

Her:Ok I got everything she will need here in her bags

She gave me her the baby

Me:Oh she's awake

Her:Yes she just woke up

Me:How wonderful

Her:Ok I wrote my number here ok

She gave me a peace of paper

Me:Ok

Her:Feel free to call ok if she becomes handful she really likes being picked up and walk around

Me:Ok I got

Her:But she's really sweet trust me oh and I got everything she'll eat here do not feed her anything else OK?

Me:Yes I got it

Her: Good thank you so much this means a lot

Me:Its my pleasure

Her:So you can handle her?

Me:Yes yes what could possibly go wrong

Her: Good I'll be back at 6

She walked to the door

Me:Wait what?

Her:Bye take care

She left

Me:She left she left me with her baby.What am I going to do?

I looked at her she was just sucking on her fingers

Me:You will not give me any problems right?

She cried

Me;Oh come on I'm not that ugly

I walked around the house with her she calmed down I looked at her

Me: Ok this looks easy how can a single baby give me problems huh? I know I know nothing about babies but I'll do this

•

•

•

Peter's POV (30+ minutes later)

I know Paige can handle that baby alone how hard can it be? Anyway I'm the board meeting we are discussing the companies money and all that.I got an incoming call I quickly took it out of my pocket

Me:Paige?

Ooh she wants to scole me she can do that later now she must enjoy the baby she'll have her own in no time.I dropped her call then put my phone on silent bcz I was disturbing the meeting.

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me: HE DROPPED MY CALL!!!!

I'm gonna kill him

Me:Shhh baby Shhh what do you want now?

She can't stop cryingi I don't know what to do and I can't call her Mother bcz she's in a interview and she

might not answer as well.Oh God help me

Me:Oh what else baby

I walked around the house with you,I pat your back but you can't stop crying now I want to cry.Where can I know about babies my God?

Me:Google.Yes yes Google can can help me here

I took my phone and searched "Why a baby cries?" Maybe that could help

Me:Oh here we go...stop crying baby Shhh....

I was passing up and down at the house but she's not calming down

Me:...blah blah maybe she's tired. No no she just woke up and with this cry I doubt

Her cries are unbearable now

Me:Ok els uhmm "a baby cries when hungry" Hungry? Yah maybe she is.Ok baby let's get you full now

I laid her down on the couch so she won't fall.I took out her baby food purity I guess it was written on the label

Me:Hmmm yummy want some?

She looked at me then cried worse

Me:Ok OK I'm sorry here you go

She's not eating though she's crying

Me:What can I do huh? Am I being punished by God? Why can't you eat?

I put the food down them looked for other hints on the phone

Me:"Change the dipper "? That is my worst nightmare.Did you do something there that's why you're crying? Oh God

I smelled her

Me:Oh my God what is that? Are you sure thats all you? My God what is your Mom feeding you?

I searched quickly " How to change a baby dipper?"

Me:Shhhh I'm gonna Change you now you'll feel better in no time

I put my phone down then started taking off her trouser.I can't even take off her trouser how far can I

go? Arggg I finally came across the nappy I found the instructions

Me:Don't worry baby Paige is here for the rescue let's look at step one.Ok let's see...

I did what I saw on the phone then I saw her poop

Me: Wait a minute did you poop all of this?

She was quiet now only just looking at me

Me:Are you sure not an old man helped you bcz it stinks like hell honey no lies your Mom is feeding you spinach and its not good when it comes to this sweety trust me I know ok and don't tell anyone

Anyway I did all that disgusting stuff

Me:Oh God I'll mess up this whole house with this I can't do it

I can't wipe it off her butt it was so much and smelly I would stop and breath. I had no choice I finally wiped it off

Me:There we go all gone what's the next step? "Clean her baby behind with baby wipes or a luke warm cloth just to get rid of the smell and dirt" ok

let's do it

I looked for her baby wipes I found them I took one then wiped her butt

Me:This is not bad unlike what you just made me do.Ok done now I have to put on a dipper again just in case and bcz you're still young and you'll be here till 6.

Anyway I took out her baby dippers

Me:Ok how does this work?

I look at the instructions

Me:Ok let's do it

I placed the dipper underneath her

Me:I'm handling this like a pro ok I should get the best Mommy to be award don't you think?

She just giggled

Me:Oh you're happy bcz you're free and I gotta wash my hands after all of this

Anyway I did the dipper but it couldn't hold together like a real dipper

Me:What am I doing wrong?

I was so tired and angry I wanted to cry

Me:Oh God

I took out a tape then tape the shit together arggg I'm tired...Them i made her wore her trouser again

Me:See? Nothing killed you you're fine

I set on the couch tired the baby was playing with her fingers and giggling I looked at her I was sweating

Me:You look happy after all of this.Did you do it on purpose? You did

I picked her up.She was beautiful I placed her on the matt I pushed the centre table I gave her her toys she played with them while crawling around the matt.I got busy with my phone the baby pulled my leggings

Me:What is it?

I looked at her she looked up to me with her big eyes I picked her up

Me:You're hungry?

Saliva was dripping on her lips

Me:Ok just accompany me to the kitchen

I took her to the kitchen to take my chocolate she took it from me I closed the fridge then went to the lounge again I set down.She was eating the outside of the paper of my chocolate

Me:No no what's mine is mine you got yourself a purity

I tool it from her she looked at me with a sad face then her face changed to a really sad face she curved her lips wanting to cry

Me:You're not being serious

She cried

Me: Ok I'm sorry I'm sorry

I gave her she immediately stopped crying

Me:I don't like to share young lady I want my chocolate

She kept on biting it on the outside and once it

opens and she eats it she will never let go of it

Me: Let me open it for you

I took it slowly she cried

Me:Shhh just wait

I opened it I gave her some she took it

Me: Eat it it's really good try it

I made her eat it.Her facial expression was so funny she was enjoying it

Me:I told you

I laughed at her I took my bite too then we ate the chocolate.After we got tired of the sweetness I saw her getting sleepy I took her wipers then wiped her face she woke up then cried

Me:Oh no

I took her then I slept with her on the matt she laid her head on my belly I took a pillow them rested my head we both zoned out.

•

•

•

I felt kisses on my lips

Me: Mmm do you want me to kill you?

I opened my eyes

Peter:How did you know it was me?

Me:I know your kisses

Him:Aw I'm blushing look I brought you flowers

The baby cried

Me:See? You woke her up

Him:Sorry

Me:I'm sorry my angel

I took her then I set up I put her on my chest

Me; Shhh I'm sorry

She calmed down I placed her on my thighs I played with her

Peter:You're friends

Me;Peter pls leave until I tell you your problems

Him;That will be fine

He quickly left

Me:So it's me and you now actually what time is it

I looked at the time

Me;Its 4 so we got much time to hang out.I can't blv I'm having fun with you

Her: Mama

Me:You called me Mama well baby I'm not your Mommy your Mom is out for now let's enjoy this little time

Her:Mama

Me:I'll be a Mom soon.Wait how come you're talking now when you didn't talk few hours ago? Is this your first word?

"Honey where are my pants?"

Me:I don't know Peter you're the only one who wears your pants here

He came down rushing

Him; I can't find them

Me:Wear me then Peter pls

We heard a knock

Me:Its open

"Heyy"

It was the babies Mother

Me;Hey you're back

Her; How are you holding up?

Me:Awesome so does she say Mama?

Her:No she haven't said any words

Me:Really? Bcz she just said Mama few minutes ago

Her:Are you serious? To you?

Me;Yes I thought it wasn't her first time

Her:, It was oh my God i missed it

Me;I'm sorry

Her;It's fine

I gave her her baby

Her;Ahhhj what happened to her clothes?

Me;We ate chocolate...

Her:Chocolate no no

Me: She liked it

Her: ofcause she did she's a baby my God are you crazy

Me:Me? Crazy ? I was babysitting your baby a little thank you will be enough other than insulting me

Her: I'm leaving here

She gathered all the bags

Her:I can't blv this look at my baby what if she gets sick

Me:You're over reacting

Her:Argg she walked to the door

Me:Whatever she liked it

She left

Peter: You gave her chocolate really?

Me:What's the big deal? Leave me alone Pls

Him:Sweet stuff is wrong for babies

Me: Well I'm sorry then Doctor Peter

I walked to the room

Him:You forgave me right?

Me:I'm not in a bad mood now to shout at you
maybe tomorrow now I need to sleep ok

Him;There's no need to shout at me you know

Me:There is ohhhh there is sooo many reasons

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:17] Lynne: ×•••× 45 ×•••× (few months later)

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me: Peter my belly is out there and we haven't told any family member

Him:It doesnt matter infact they'll see by theirselves

Me: Are you sure that's a right thing?

Him;Yes we didn't commit a crime we're married we can do whatever we like

Me;Yah you're right

Him:You look cute with that belly

Me:Let's talk about real shit ok? Tomorrow we are going to the Doctor when are we shopping for the babies?

Him:Uhm I don't know I've never had a baby before

Me:Had I?

Him:No

Me;Now pls talk to me let's look at your schedule

Him: I'm busy the whole week

Me;But?

Him:I'll make time for the Doctor tomorrow

Me: You better besides I need someone besides me it's been 5 months and it's feels like I'm close on giving birth

Him:Aren't you scared?

Me:Tearing my pussy apart? Yes Peter I'm scared OK? I'm terrified

Him: I'll be with you all the way

Me:Ofcause you will anyway when is Kelly giving birth?

Him: In a month I think

Me: Oh you'll be a father soon

Him:And I'm excited

Me:I don't know how to feel my feet are hurting

Him:Bcz you were wearing those shoes the whole day

I took them off

Me: I took them off sorry

He took my feet then massaged them

Me: Hmmm that feels good

We were at the lounge just sitting there bored.I laid my head down

Him:So since we are 3 boys

He laughed

Me:You are enjoying it huh?

Him:Yep bcz I was right

Me:Whatever Peter you were right I really wanted girls at least 1 someone I can relate to you know. Someone I can teach how to use make up and she can tell me about her day at school about her boyfriend...

Him:Hey hey hey no daughter of mine will have a boyfriend

Me:Thank God you ain't having one

Him:Kelly is expecting a baby girl

Me:Really?

Him:Yes

Me: I also wanted a girl but no God gave me boys what's worst 3 of them

Him:You'll love them you'll dress them up to cute little younge men

Me:Well yah but still

Him: You'll get over it besides we we'll try for more babies in the future

Me:Are you planing on having a soccer team for real?

Him:My love I want this whole house to be filled with our precious kids

Me:Will you carry them?

Him: It's ok Paige I won't change your mind but something will do

I looked at him

Me:What's that?

Him:He doesn't like to talk he likes action

He kissed my legs

Me:You're being very naughty

I laughed

Him:Shall I carry on?

Me:Do as you please Master

He laid on me but not totally on top of me.We kissed

Me:But I'm a bit too tired

Him: I can do the work

Me:Hmmm how about I?

Him:I love a woman who takes control

I giggled we kissed.We fixed our position I set on his laps I spread my legs facing him

Him:You make me the happiest man on earth

Me:And you make me the happiest woman on earth

We smiled looking at each others then we kissed. His hands rubbed ass all around I was slowly grinding on him I heard him groan to teas him a little I moaned between the kisses

Him:Aw Paige really?

I laughed

Me:Sorry

I tried unbuttoning his belt

"Knock... Knock!"

Peter:This can't be

Me: Are you waiting for someone?

Him:No

The person kept on knocking

Me: Go and check it out

I moved from him

Him:Arggg

He stood up

Him:No look

He turned to me a saw a borner I laughed

Me:Ok stay I'll go

"Peter?"

Me:Coming!

Me: Stay I'll go my God

I stood up laughing at him

Him: I'll rip you apart when we get alone

Me:Ouch

Him:Sorry

We laughed we were just being silly I went to the door to open

Me;Oh hey guys

It's Peters Family

"Why taking so long to open?"

"Hey Paige"

Me and F.in-law hugged then I hugged his siblings then they went to sit

F.in-law: Peter is not even standing up to greet his own father

Him: No Dad I'm I...it's just

Me:Anyone want something to drink?

Which I don't even know how to make

F.in-law: Paige is it me or...

I faked a laughter. SHIIT! He saw my baby bum

M.in-law: You're pregnant?

B.in-law:Wow congratulations man

S.in-law: I'll have a little niece or a naphew thats awesome

M.in-law:Kelly is expecting too

S.in-law: Oh yah right

Me:Thank you guys really...

F.in-law: No go Dora go and make juice for everyone let's leave the Mommy to be to rest

Me:Oh thank you

I set next to Peter

M.in-law: So when were you logging to tell us?

Me:I really didn't know

Her:Oh you were gonna keep it a secret?

Me:Not really...

F.in-law: Oh come on let the kids be so how is your marriage

Peter:No Dad what are you doing here?

Him:Now I need reasons to come and see my own son

He was covering his borner with a pillow

Me:My love calm down they are your parents

I touched his lap more like rubbing too close to his sensitive parts he twitch a little

Him: No look Dad next time call

He was angry it turned me on even way more

F.in-law: Dora hurry with that juice will you bcz we ain't going nowhere in no time soon

Me:And it's cool really Peter is being silly right Beab?

I looked at him

Me:Right Beab?

I hit his arm playfully

Him:Yes

F.in-law: We just came to see you bcz you don't even visit and Dora wanted to see you

Me:It's good to see you too

The drinks came we just chat

•

•

•

After sometime they left

Peter:Have a nice one

Them:Bye

Me:Bye

They hop in the car and drove off

Peter:And where were we?

Me:Hmmm I don't know remind me

Him:Why won't we get inside?

Me:Pls

We got in laughing

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

It's late time I'm relaxing alone in my apartment in my bed I'm listening to some jazz I'm very peaceful. My phone disturbed me

Me:Who is it?

I said answering

"While you were busy being stupid my son made the biggest mistake of his life bcz of you"

I set up

Me:Well hey to you too Mother in-law

Her: That white pale girl is pregnant

Me:Hey whatch it with white girls bcz you ain't black either

Her:Listen here I want that baby gone and I mean now

Me:You're commanding Mother

Her:Ofcause I am

Me:I'm not harming anyone ok? Besides it's your grandbaby

Her:I couldn't careless

Me:Ofcause you couldn't you don't have a heart

Her:Just do what I said Kelly

Me:I'll never kill an innocent child due to your jealously

Her:Kelly!

Me: Why don't you marry your son since you know whats good for him

Her: Just do it ok?

Me:No

Her:Arg your useless

Me:And don't you dare touch Paige

I dropped the call

Me:Bcz she's mine

[12/22, 12:18] Lynne: ×•••× 46 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Today we are going to see the Doctor as usual.So I'm getting ready Peter is on his phone

Me:Peter get ready now

Him:Oh Paige wait a little

Me:The Doctor will not wait for us Peter or shall I go alone?

Him:Arg

He dragged he's ass up

Me: Go... go

Him:I am stop shouting at me

Me;I'm not shouting stop being a cry baby

He looked at me

Me:I'm kidding my love

I smiled

Me:I love you..mmmncwaaa

I blew a kiss

Him:I want a real one

Me:"When you're ready come and get...nana na na
"

He walked to me smiling ear to ear he held my waist then we pecked lips

Me:Now go and take a shower

Him:A shower? Really?

Me:Yes really

Him:Is it necessary?

Me:Ok Peter do whatever you like go naked if you want as long as we will arrive there

Him:Paige stop dragging me along

Me:You're not doing anything I'm almost ready I told you to bath for a while now did you listen to me?

He looked at me

Me:No Peter pls I can't baby you you're a grown ass

man

I paid getting my face all glowed up I looked beautiful

Him:You look beau...

Me:Peter seriously you're still just standing there? No I'll leave you for real you're forgetting I also have a car

I fixed my bag

Me:If I get done and you're not I'm leaving you

Him:What? But just 5 minutes?

Me:Maybe you would have done by now

Him: OK OK

He ran to the bathroom.Oh Gosh Men! My cellphone rang it was Kim

Me:Hey girl

Her:Girl!!

She screamed in my ear

Me:Girl what?

Her:Tonight I got a hot date

She's like that

Me:Yah I know as always

Her:Hey don't do me like that ok? Bcz I swear to God he is the one

Me;Really? Like the other 20 guys you left after sleeping with them

Her:It's not my fault I haven't found that guy who hits my G spot girl and they are very rare

Me: Whatever Kim as long as your happy I'm happy

Her:Aw thanks girlfriend...oh and does Peter hit the g spot?

Me:Bye him

Her:Come on friend

Me:I won't discuss that

Her:No

Me:if he doesn't? It will break him

Her:He can't?

Me:I was on my way out Kim

Her:He doesn't make you orgasm

Me:Shut up Kim

Her:It doesn't matter you love him you're happy and I'm happy for you

Me:And you focus on getting those orgasims and stop asking if I do pls

Her:Sorry

We laughed

Me:Bye

Her:Bye

I dropped he call smiling

"So you lied to me"

I turned quickly

Me:Peter

Shiiiiiiiiiiit!

Him:So you don't orgasim

Me:What are you talking about?

Oh God Paige!

Him:Paige I'm not stupid I over heard you

Me:It was just a silly talk with Kim you know she likes to joke

Him:Do you orgasm with me Paige?

Me:Are we seriously arguing about this?

Him:Yes! Yes we are

Me:Beab...

Him:Yes or No?

Me: Well uhmmm..

No guys for real no.I've never orgasm with Peter I did but once with that stupid ex of mine.But don't get me wrong I enjoy being with Peter all this orgasm shit means nothing to me I love this guy

Me:We're gonna be late Pete...

Him:Yes or No?

Me:Is it important?

Him: Yes and very

Me:Well yes my love come on didn't we talked about this?

(We did talk about this a month ago)

Him:But you lied

Me: Making me orgasm or not is not important I don't...

Him: So I don't

Me:Peter?

I couldn't read his facial expression at all he just dressed up I didn't know what to do nor say I was helpless.

Him:I'm done let's go

It was just all that.Is Peter really mad about this or it's emotions? I mean what's the big deal?! We went to the car we got in and what I love about him even if he's mad he always opens a door for me and make sure I set well

Him: You're seated well?

Me:Yes

He drove no one said anything to anyone.It was beginning to get boring I tried connecting music with a aux.Trying what? I know very well i can't in his car he always helps me

Him:Let me help you

He took my phone then connected it the music played

Me:Thanks my lo...uhm thanks

He was mad as hell.What's with this orgasm shit? I played my music while brushing my belly and humming the song and starring at the window all of a sudden I felt an hand on my belly.Wasn't someone mad? Wow! The drama he has but I didn't mind him at all I got my hands off he pulled the car over.Lord! Take your children

Him:I'm sorry

Me:Are you?

Him:Yes

Me:The Doctor Peter we're already running late

Him:I'm sorry my love but it really hurts me that I can't make you...you know

Me:Orgasm

Him:Shhh! Don't say that too loud

Me:Come on we're alone

Him:Yah but still

Me:I'm tired of this Peter

Him:I'm sorry and I can't stay mad at you for too long

Me:It's ok Peter can we go now?

Him:It hurts though

Me:If I wasn't happy with you I would have left a long time ago can we just go

Him:Ok ok I love you

Me:I know you do and I love you too now drive

He drove

Me:Thank you

He smiled

•

•

•

I couldn't post guys I'm sorry I'm busy at home you know how things work when you're back home.I'm busy I'll try posting longer inserts though but my question is "Why do really men want so bad to make woman orgasm and is it very important?"

If I get those answers I'm giving you an insert tomorrow at noon I'll make a plan to steal my phone and work on it I know this one is short but a little something BC it's been sometime goodnight

[12/22, 12:19] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Paige's POV

So we got to the Doctor not in time but thank heavens he had no appointments

Me:Hey Doc

Peter:Hey Doc

Doc:Hello ... for a while I thought you were not coming

Me:Oh we're sorry we had a problem...

Peter:With the car

Me:Yes what he said

I looked at Peter then the Doctor

Doc:Ok shall we begin?

Me:Yes pls

I went to lie down the Doctor pour that cold jelly like substance on my belly

Me:This is cold I can't get used to it

Him: You're not promisingl either you're close to give birth now

Me:Pls don't remind me

We laughed we heard the heart beats Peter was actually happy looking at the scan I was happy to

see him smiling

Doc: The babies are healthy

Me:And I'm happy they are

Peter:Why not you are taking care of them

He faked a smile.But I thought he was happy, why he's so down? I need to talk to him.I was done with the scan then I was given my medication

Doc:I hope you are eating your medication

Me:Ofcause I am look at my belly

Him:Yes it's huge

We laughed Peter wasn't

Me:Oh we better go

Him: Ok bye but next time don't be late

Me:We won't we promise

We waved then we left.While on the car

Peter:Still up for the shopping or...

Me:First we need to talk

Peter: Really Paige now?

Me:Yes...now

He shifted his focus on me

Him:Ok go on

Me:Why your mood changed today? You used to be happ...

Him:I'm fine Paige

Me:You're not

Him: Are we still shopping or not?

Me:Are you even in this Peter?

Him:Yes I am?

Me:Then why your head is somewhere else?

He breathed out frustrated

Me:I should have came alone

Him:I'm fine!

Me:Is this about this orgasm shit?

He set well on his chair and drove

Me: I can't blv you

He didn't even look at me

Me:Why are you so stubborn!? I told you I don't care!

Him: You're saying that now and I...this whole time I thought...

Me:Are you even hearing yourself? You sound pathetic right now

He looked mad he just drove a little faster

Me:I swear to God if you hit something or we roll with this car I kill you if you survive

He was fuming

Me:And with that attitude

He drove home safely

Me:Thank God I got home safe

I got out he didn't he stayed in the car.He can get mad all he wants he's being childish.I went to the house we didn't even go to the mall I guess we'll do that some other time.I went to the bedroom I was a little tired I took off my shoes then laid on the bed.I

wanted to sleep but I can't while Peter is sad but I lied and to be honest I miss him.But Paige be strong don't think about him he's being childish he'll come when he came down.

•

•

•

Few seconds later

Me: I miss my man

DON'T JUGDE ME! I stand by the bedroom door frame I saw him downstairs on the couch stressed as hell.This is really killing me no my honey looks horrible he needs me.I ran downstairs I went to him

Me:Hey

He looked at me

Me:Beab...I'm sorry

I set next to him

Me: Peter?

I searched for his eyes I set on his laps

Me:Peter look at me

He did

Me:Stop being like this

Him:I'm ok...

Me:You're not.Beab pls I don't care about that rule "a man must make his woman orgasm or squirt" I don't care even if I don't my sex life with you is amazing and I love it

Him: But...

Me:But nothing. If you're not good then explain why I always want ypu?

Him:Well I don't know

Me:Bcz you do me good and thats enough not all men got that gift

Him: Are you making fun of me

Me:No

I giggled a little

Him: Paige I'm dead serious

Me:Me too

Him:Stop joking

Me:Ok I'm sorry can we go to bed now?

Him:At this time?

Me:Yes

I smiled

Him:Why?

I giggled

Him:Oh I know what you want?

Me:Do you?

Him:Yep but I'm not in the mood

Me:Peter?

The first time him saying no to sex

Him:I'm tired Beab

Me:Ok then

I took off his shirt

Him:What are you doing?

Me:Doing everything myself

He laughed

Him:But I said no

Me:But Peter I'm dying

Him:You're not you need some rest

Me:I don't

Him:But I'm not in the mood

Me:Really Peter?

Him: Yes

Me:Wow

I got up angrily

Him:Beab...

Me:DON'T! talk to me

I wore my slippers

Him:Ok fine

Me:I don't want pity sex Peter leave me alone

I went to my room shit I was on but what can you do? Nothing. I went to sleep with my closed on I'm lazy to change.I doze off

•

•

•

Peter's POV

All along I can't make Paige orgasm? Come on Peter but I tried I swear many times.If you ask me I'm always having the best time of my life every time with her but she also enjoys it and orgasm is important...

"Peter"

Paige walked downstairs sulking

Her:Peter come to bed pls

Me: Paige I'm not in mood

Her:No we'll just...sleep

She smiled

Me:Paige?

Her:Mmm?

I laughed

Me:Are you ok?

Her:N---yah

She did a wide smile

Me:Ok fine let's go

She bite her lip

Me:Paige no don't do that

Her:I did nothing

She checked my abs

Me:Let's go

Her: I want to sleep you next to me that's all I couldn't sleep alone

We went to bed

Her:Hold me like this

I had my arm around her waist

Her: Tighter

I did

Her:Closer

I rolled my eyes

Her:There I love you

Me:I love you too

Her:You do?

Me:Yes

Her:Show me

Me: Paige sleep pls

Her:I can't

Me:Arg I'm going to watch TV

Her: And leave me here?

She turned to look at me

Her:And leave this

She got her hands on my D print I shifted

Me:Paige?

Her:Why your being like this? Peter I'm your women have me as you pls but not always all I'm saying do as you pls now

She smiled

Me:Are you sure you're OK why you're acting strange?

Her:I've never been turned down by a guy Peter,ever in my life so you're really refusing?

Me;Yes

Her: I wonder what have I done wrong to deserve this kind of treatment.Ok Beab you'll only insert the head..

Me: Paige ew no

I said getting up

Her:Are you cheating on me? Oh yes yes ofcause you are cheating on me? Peter?

She cried

Her:Are you?

Me:No...

Her:Liar! You are there's someone else you're seeing

She cried

Me: Oh God is sex what you want?

Her:Yes

She smiled

Her:Yes yes Peter when was the last time we've been intimate?

Me:Yesterd..

Her:See? A long time ago come on my love

Me:Did you take something or...

Her:I'm 100% Paige I didn't eat anything that will harm my babies

Me:Are you sure?

Her:Ok look Peter I want us to make up to show you I'm happy with what I have I don't need anything else

Me: Paige?

Her:Pls

I walked to her she smiled

Me:You'll lying

Her:You don't want me for real?

Me:I do want you everyday but...

Her:Ok ok fine you're not in the mood ok let's cuddle then

I smiled

Her:Come

We cuddled

•

•

Paige's POV

The things we do just to make our men happy.It turns out mine is not always up for it and I'm happy but he better be ready for tomorrow I'll rock his WORLD!!!

•

•

•

Night

[12/22, 12:29] Lynne: ×•••× 47 ×•••×

•

•

•

So it's the next day and its 4 in the morning I should give my man a morning GLORY! I mean I miss him I bet he misses me too.Anyway he's still asleep he haven't wake up yet and he haven't peed yet and to tell you that is perfect it's a perfect time to be intimate with your partner while he haven't peed.So he was laying on his back his face facing the other side of the room he slept like a person who came from working to the mine and tired as hell.Anyhow so I ran my tiny fingers on his boxer's

Me:Well would you look at that Paige

I smiled. He a little then get my hand off in his sleep

Me:Oh come on

I ran my hand under his wife beater then I kissed his neck poor thing didn't feel anything. Well he's a

heavy sleeper so that's great for my plan.Now for the very first time with Peter I'll actually give him a head a blow job to be specific. I've done those nasty stuff before but not much that idiot ex of mine taught me a lot of things,now when I think of it,he taught me a lot of nasty stuff,eww.So i got under covers it's time to wake up my babe y'all with the best alarm in the entire planet earth.I was already under the blankets he's fast asleep.I just pulled the D out.He's nice and shaved imagine! I've done this one or two times I actually don't remember but I better make an A game.Where was I? Ok so I hold it with my two fingers so I don't hurt him bcz this is a very sensitive part in a male body.Anyhow I moist my lips oh I was kneeling on the bed my ass was up and I was wearing a lace night dress only with no panties! ALERT! NO PANTIES! Just keep that in mind.I took it to my mouth and it was like my first time I got the weird feeling I got the first time.So I down with it Peter moved a little I guess he's feeling it.I kept on sucking on it and my favorite part was the head I would do circles around it.I was busy minding that when the covers were flipped over I saw surprised

Peter with his jaw dropped

Him: Paige?

I stopped and smiled to him he said no more then made me suck on his D again. Why was he surprised? Doesn't he know he's wife can be dirty? Jeesh.I suck on it then he helped me on taking off his boxer's. I rubbed he's thighs whole doing it.He better not explode on my mouth IM PREGNANT and my babies eat what I eat so HELL NO!!! besides I hear him when he's close there.I caressed his balls while sucking him he was groaning uncontrollable he's breath was heavy.Then he put his hands on my head I went deeper just like how the Master wants it

Him:Sssshiit!

I pressed on his balls while sucking him more and more quick he's whole body was shaking a little I knew he's cumin.My cookie was drippings wet I nipples harden.His eyes were closed seems to be enjoying it.I went faster and faster till my jaws got tired then I pulled out he splashed all his sperms on his abs I played with it while pressing his balls and

his breath was lowering down after groaning and cursing which wasn't very necessary but whatever makes him happy.

Him:Damn girl

I didn't say anything bcz I'm working here I better make this the best morning in his life.I took tissues I wiped him he was still catching his breath I got on top he smiled rubbing my thighs.

Him:I wonder what have I done to deserve th...

I shut him with a finger then pecked his lips he smiled.He's D was already up for any challenge it will face and guess what? I was ready to battle as well so let's get to it.I got up a little to shove him in but he stuck a little and that's weird.I rubbed my cookie with it he closed his eyes then lick his lips and YEP! I felt that too.Something was just too good to be true happened there then I shoved him in them BAM! He's in HE'S IN! I wish I could Thank his Patents for giving me such an amazing Dick ... Ops I mean Man i mean an amazing man! Anyway while he was in I shoved it more more my whole body got excited he

looked at me then played with my nipples. While he was all in...when i say all in I mean ALL IN! He was ALL IN I looked at him I bite mu lips while smiling he smiled too.He is the Best! I moved a little he's focused went straight to what I was doing down there then he pressed on my hips. I was fucking he was too he was meeting me half way babe "TEAM WORK!" YES!

I ride him and ride him.

Me:Mmmm

I closed my eyes looking up.It felt good as the pace was changing the pace was going up my mouth was wide open and I was moaning his name out.The whole room was filled with moans and groans of two ppl giving each other pleasure.I felt my walls closing in my walls tightened. It's coming to this now I'm cuming I feel it.

Me:Ouuuu

It's happening! I'm cumin! But I don't want this to end now! He set up while I was busy riding him.I placed my hands on his shoulders he balanced with his

hands.I was breathing out of control and I was getting tired. With that in my thought Peter quickly turned me over he got on top.He did his numbers on me he showed no mercy he penetrated me so good and so deep.I held on the sheets when I came. I was screaming I swear I screamed Peter was looking at his work busy going too fast and too slow he was doing it so good I couldn't blv I saw heaven.With my screams he went 1000× faster maybe I boost his ego but what the heck? It's worth it.After a little while I came again now I saw the stars.He was groaning he felt that I came.Well what did he expect? To come out candy? Jesh!He pulled out then played with it then back in again

Him:Fuuuuck!

I got really tired I wanted him to cum to now. I played with my clit while feeling it when it fucks me.I was wet like a lake (Now I understand Cardi B) I rubbed on my clit on the other hand I'm holding his waist.We both lock eyes.That should be awkward but not to us we do that a lot.Our eyes locked I felt the urge to cum again he also tensed up he went faster then

slow,and slow till he splashed all his sperms on me.I closed my eyes I saw Jesus? Oh Dear Lord this is what you call a sin when done by unmarried ppl.Thank heavens I am.Peter pulled out I stopped him I want it in me ok?

Me:Good morning Mr Jackson

I smiled he smiled too

Him;Good morning Mrs Jackson

We kissed

Him: Best morning ever we should do it more often

Me:Ah no bcz I'm tired as hell

Him:And then this

He pointed between us

Me:Leave that

Him:Why?

Me: You don't know the pleasure I get when it's just there and not doing anything

Him: But I gotta get to work

Me:Ok ok

He pulled out it was covered in that juice it looked sticky

Me:That's disgusting

Him:Wanna lick

Me:No

He laughed

Him:You just gave me a head though

Me: Imagine I'm even pregnant

Him:It's OK...And it was amazeballzzzz

Me:Really?

Him:Yes my favorite part is when you play with my balls while sucking on it

Me:Hmmm? My favorite is when you penetrate me till I can't breath

We laughed

Me: You'll be late for work

Him:Arh that again!

Me:You got no choice

•

•

•

What a long sex scene so much torture

[12/22, 12:29] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Peter went to work I heard a knock on the door.

Me:Kim?

Her:Hey girl

She walked in

Me:What a surprise

Her: Stop being surprise when I visit you

Me:Well...

Her:Your belly?

She touched it

Her:It's huge

I got her off

Me:Don't touch

Her: Oh sorry

Me:What brings you here?

I went to sit on the couch

Her:To see my best friend

She set next to me

Her: And to tell you something that might interest you

Me:You know I'm all ears

Her:Now you want to hear what..

Me:Kim?

Her:Ok ok

We shifted our focus to each other I want to see her face when she tells me this mystery

Her:Ok guess who I saw at the club last night?

Me:Oh Kim I don't know my brother

Her:Arg not that jerk

Me:Hey watch it he's still my brother

Her: Sorry but I saw something worse

Me: Kelly?

I said with my eyes pop out

Her:Wrong again I saw someone who will make you angry

Me:Kim pls I'm dying here just say it already...

Her:Your Mom

Me:Say what now?

I said getting closer to her

Her:Yes

I laughed

Me:Mommy? That's insane

Her:Or you would like prove?

Me:Kim don't do this

Her:I'm not playing with you she was drinking her lungs out

Me:In a club?

Her:Yes

I just pictured her in a club

Me:Kim this joke is not funny

Her:It's not a joke she looked stressed she was drinking none stop

Me;No no let me see prove

She took out her phone then showed me

Me:What?

Her:Don't worry she was alone no guys

Me:This can't be look at those shots she's taking

Her: And don't worry she went home safe I took her

Me:Really?

Her:Yes she's like a Mom to me too

Me:Thank you Kim

Her:No need to thank me but all I came here for was to ask when was the last time you visited?

Me:I don't know I just call

Her:Paige...

Me:I'm lazy Kim

Her:You should go and see them

Me:Now that you mention it I will.Do you think she's having problems with my Father?

Her:I don't know but it might be work too

Me:Yah that too.But my Mom is not a drinker she's like me the type of champagne and wine kinda person

Her:Well last night she was woozy

Me:Oh God I should totally go and see my family

Her:Yah...oh and I got another thing

Me:What?

Her:Guess who got laid last night?

She smiled while giggling I laughed

Me:I guess you

Her:Yep me

Me:Who was it?

Her:Anthony

I rolled my eyes

Her:Oh come on Paige he ain't bad

Me:Oh no do you still remember the time he watched you change on your dressing room? Or you forgot how thirsty he was for you

Her:It was a mistake

Me:No when you a man you don't do that

Her:He was hooked I mean who wouldn't?

She laughed waving her hair

Me:I don't like him

Her:You don't have too

Me:You're dating him he'll be in the picture I got no...

Her:Woah woah woah...slow down tiger who said he's my man?

Me:He's not?

Her:No. We just had fun last night you know I count who I date

Me:And Chris?

She got bored

Her:I should go

She said taking her purse

Me:I'm sorry pls don't go

I held her hands

Her:Don't talk about him pls

Me: Why you get emotional when I mention him?

She looked away

Her:Can we change the subject?

Me:I want to know pls and I promise I will never mention him ever again

Her:I love him

She looked sad

Her: I love him so much that it hurts.I'm trying to forget him everyday I can't

Me:I'm so sorry

Her:He doesn't feel the same way but I'm fine with it one day I'll find someone who will make me forget him

I heard a knock she wiped her tears I didn't notice she was crying

Me:I'll be right back

I went to the door

Me:Ben?

It's Peter's other brother

Him:Hey may I?

Me:Sure pls

He walked in

Him:Oh you have company

Kim stood up

Her:No I'm leaving I'll leave you two.Bye my friend

Me:Bye

We hugged she left.I feel so sorry for her

Ben:Who was that?

Me:My best friend... Pls want something to drink?

Him:No no thank you

Me:Let's seat down

He was looking at the door as if someone might pop up

Me:Are you ok?

Him:Yes yes the girl just walked out.Her name?

I'm used to this...guys getting like this over Kim she's beautiful I know

Me:Kimberly shorten for Kim

Him:Oh

Me:Why? You like her

I said laughing

Him:No no psh no not at all

Me:Hmmm

He's lying

Me:Yah totally besides she's older than you

Him;She is?

Me:Yes

Him: How old is she?

Me:Why do you mind?

Him:Nothing ok enough about that uhm so how are you holding up?

Me:Awesome but they are giving me problems

I said rubbing my belly

Him:It's must be nice

Me:No no it's not...

Him:Hey did you say "they"?

Me:Did I? Psh no no he

Him:Paige?

Me:What?

Him: You're lying

Me:Ok what am I lying about Ben?

Him: Maybe my brother got twins

Me:Twins?

I laughed

Me:Whaaat? No

Him:Our Mother had a twin Paige so it's possible that my brother carried one of those genes inside his DNA

Me:Are we in science class now or what?

Him: My bro is having twins that I know

Me:Oh pls imagine twins

Him:Look at your belly come on

Me:It's bcz of the pills I take

Him:I did science in school Paige

Me:I can tell but you can't tell I got twins

We laughed Peter walked in

Peter:Oh your here already?

Ben:Yes and it's been hours

Peter:Oh pls

Ben:Yes tell him Paige

Me:Yes he's right

We laughed

Peter:I'm not an idiot.Hey my love

Me:Hellow

He kissed my cheek

Ben: This doesn't suit you at all bro.Being all lovey dovey and being a husband especially a Dad wow

He laughed

Me:There's always a first time for everything

Him:Well maybe it will one day

We laughed

Peter:Enough about me.Beab me and Ben are going

on something very important

Me:It doesn't have a name

Him:It does

Ben:We're going clubbing

Me:What?

Peter:No no he's lying

Ben laughed

Me:Peter?

Him:We're actually going to buy a few stuff for Mom's surprise party

Me:Oh when is it?

Him:Tomorrow

Me: She hates me I don't think She'll want me there anyway

Peter:What? She loves you honey

Ben: No she hates her

Peter:Ben!?

Me:He's right just go on and have fun buying her whatever I'm tired anyway

Him:I'll change first

He left.

Ben:Why Mom hates you anyway?

Me: I don't know

Him:Maybe bcz you took he's favourite son

Me:Oh no no it was all arranged who knew I'll be in cohooks for him. It's not my fault he raised a wonderful man

Peter ran downstairs

Peter:Ok let's go

Ben:Yep

He stood up

Ben:Oh and that girl Paige her number pls

Me: No Kim is into older guys

Him; Come on

Peter:Here are the keys go and open up I'm coming

He took them

Ben:Paige pls did you see her behind and ohhh her figure

She was wearing a two peace so her waist was exposed

Me:Go

I laughed he left Peter walked to me

Him:I don't know even if you got magical powers or what but you were on my mind the whole day today.How do you do it

He helped me up I wrap my hands around him

Me:I don't know

We kissed

Him: When I get back I want all of that again

I laughed

Him:Or how about now?

Me:No

Him:5 minutes won't kill Ben in the car come on

Me:Actually it will now go

Him:Pls

Me:Go Peter

Him:Fine but multiple your punishment for tonight

He said walking out

Me:Go bye

Him:I love you

Me:I love you more

He left.I set down then my Mom pop in my mind.Why was she drinking I gotta go to her tomorrow

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:34] Lynne: ×•••× 48 ×•••×

•

•

•

Today I'm visiting Mom at work I hope she's there bcz I tried calling her and she's not answering. Anyway I'm done getting ready

Peter:You look good

Me:Always

I took my clutch bag and cell phone

Him:A little thanks wouldn't hurt

Me:Thank you Peter

Him:There

I faked a big smile

Me:I'm leaving bye

I said walking to the door

Him: Hey hey

I stopped then looked at him

Him:My goodbye kiss

Me:I've never got one

He gave me those eyes

Me:Arg

I walked to him then pecked his lips

Him:No not like that

We kissed a deep kiss he grab my butt

Me:I'm on my way out to get horny...bye

He bit his lip

Him:Bye

Me:Oh you got lipstick on you

I walked out

Him:Shit

I laughed walking away. Anyway I drove to my mother's work place she is one of the partners in a clothing brand company so as my Dad.Anyway I got there I went to the reception area

Me:Hello

Her: Hello

Me:Is Mrs Mahone available?

Her: No Miss she didn't come to work this morning

Me: Really? That's odd.And my Dad

Her:Who's your Dad?

Me:Really you don't know me?

Her:Uhmmm not that I know off

Me:What? But I know you Ntombi

Her:Yah bcz I got a name tag

I sighed

Me:Yes but I used to come here often...arg know what? Whatever my Dad is Mr Mahone

Her:Oh you're Paige

Me:Yes

Her:Wow you're grown up and gain weight...

I looked annoyed

Her:I'm sorry... Uhm your father is in

Me:Thank you

I walked to the elevator

Her:You look so different, oh my Gosh your

pregnancy

Me:Shhhhh

Her:Sorry

She whisped

Her:Congratulations

Me:Thanks

The elevator opened up

Her:Bye

Me:Bye

I walked in.She used be like that "noisy".I can't blv she didn't recognised me.The lift opened up I walked to my Father's office.I didn't knock I walked in

Me:Father

Him:Princess

I walked to hug him

Him:Woah woah hold up

I stopped it was awkward

Him:What happened to my princess?

Me:Nothing Daddy

I said giggling

Him:You're different

Me:No come on

He stood up then walked to me

Him: What happened to my baby

He held my face

Me:What?

Him:You're...sorry to say...but

Me:Don't say it

Him:Oh you're pregnant!

Me:Surprise

I said nervously

Him:My baby

He hugged me laughing I brushed his back

Me:I'm glad you're happy

Him:Are you kidding?

We broke the hug

Him:I'm beyond happy

Me:Now I'm beyond happy

We laughed

Him:Pls sit down my Angel

He opened a sit for me he helped me sit

Him:Are you hungry?

Me: Ah..

Him: Or thirsty?

Me:Ahm...

Him:Just wait here

He went to the door

Him:Camila pls bring my daughter something to eat at the cafè with some coffee

...

Him:Honey you want Cupcakes or Muffins? No no

Camila bring her Muffins those cupcakes are sweet. Thank you

He closed the door then set on his chair

Him:So...how have you been? Oh don't tell me.You're happy ofcause I mean the glow says it all.Oh my baby is growing so quick

Me:Dad I...

Him:No honey I get it you're tired...

Me:Dad? I'm fine.I'm here for Mom

His facial expression changed he cleared his throat

Him:Oh

Me:Don't get like that I'm Happy to see you too

Him: Did you see her?

Me:No she's not in

Him:Did you try calling her?

Me:Yes but its off

Him:Oh

Me:What happened to her?

Him:Ask her my child

Me:Are you guys having problems

Him:Your Mother is exaggerating

Me:What do you mean?

Him:Ask her Paige

Me:How? I can't find her

Him:Ask Chris

Me:Dad why should I ask him it's your wife

Him:She doesn't tell me when she leaves either Paige

Me:Wow

Him: Don't stress about that it's fine

Me:No it's not fine Mom is not fine

Him:What happened?

Me:She's your wife you should know more than me

Him:Oh Paige

He looked at his work

Me:What's wrong to Mom Dad?

Him:What do you know?

Me:Dad?

He didn't answer the girl walked in

Her:Excuse me here is what...

Him:Leave them

She placed them down then left in a hurry

Me:You didn't have to be so rude.Excuse me

I took my things

Him:Paige?

Me:Bye Dad

I walked out.Whatever is going on it's serious I hope Mom is not sick.I went to my car I called Chris

Me:Bro

Him:Sis

Me: Have you seen Mom?

Him: Uhm I last saw her two days ago

Me:Why?

Him:I'm on a business trip Sis what? What is going on?

Me:Nothing Bro I just wanted to see her

Him:What is going on Paige?

Me:Bye we'll talk

I dropped the call. Jeesh how in the world will I find her? I should try home

I started driving home. I got home the door wasn't locked I walked in

Me:Mom?

Nobody answered I went upstairs

Me:Arg stairs are a problem these days with this pregnancy

I finally reached her room the door was open

Me:Mom?

I found her packing her clothes

Me:Mom?

She looked at me with a swollen face like she hasn't slept in days

Me:Mom?

Her:Hey Honey what happened to you? You're fat now

Me:Mom!?

Her:Sorry

I walked to her

Me:What happened to you? Why you're packing your clothes?

Her:I'm leaving

Me:Leaving?

Her:Yes

Me:Why? Why weren't you at work?

She looked at me she looked horrible

Her:You're glowing baby give Mommy a hug

Me:Have you been drinking?

She came to hug me then cried

Her:You're the best thing that ever happened to me

Me:Mom?

She was crying I made her to sit down

Me: Mom look at me

She did

Me:What happened?

Her:Nothing sweety

She held her tears then she burst out a loud sob

Me:Mom what happened?

I hugged her

Her:Your father

Me;What about Father?

Her:He hurt me so much

She cried

Me:Oh Mom what did he do? Did he hit you?

Her:No

Me:What?

Her:He's... He's cheating on me

Me:What?

Her:Yes

She sniffed wiping her tears

Her:Yes he's... He's been cheating on me for a long time now that I see

Me: Mom?

Her:I'm heart broken

Me:I'm so sorry

I hugged her

Her: I hate him

Me:Don't say that

We broke the hug

Her:But I do and a lot

Me:I'm sorry Mommy

Her:I'm still packing

She carried on packing

She wiped her tears

Me: Where will you go?

Her: To a hotel then I'll look for an apartment to stay in while filing for a divorce

Me:What?

Her:Yes who do you think I am? I won't tolerate his nonsense if he doesn't love me then so be it

Me:You're letting this woman he's cheating with to take your house?

She smiled

Her:My happiness comes first too my Angel

Me: Oh Mom

Her:I love you okay

Me:Me too

I smiled too her.I'm so gonna kill Dad right now

Her:Hey wait a minute are you pregnant?

Me:How about I help you pack?

Her: Paige?

She laughed

Her:Congratulations my baby

She hugged me

Her:Wow I'm so happy for you

Me:Thank you Mommy

Someone entered the room I turned to see Dad.Mom changed instantly then carried on packing

Dad:Can you leave us for a Second Paige?

Mom:She's not going anywhere

Dad:You're being childish Pretty

"Pretty"?

Mom:Don't call me that

She looked at me

Her:Especially in front of our daughter

Dad:Pls my Love

Mom didn't say anything I was there LOST

Dad:Pls

He walked to Mom he held her waist kissing her neck Mom freaked out he pushed him

Dad:Pretty pls

He was pleading

Me:I should leave you

I don't want make up sex happened in front of me

Mom:No don't leave

Dad:Go Paige

Her:She's not going anywhere

Dad:Or you want her to see us doing it

He did a nasty smile on Mom

Me:Ewwww

I took my things

Mom: What? No.Paige honey don't go

Dad:She'll be ok Paige you can leave my Princess

I walked out I heard them arguing

Mom:How dare you tell my daughter to leave

I walked down the stairs slowly it was hard but I managed. I went for a glass of water then walked to the door I heard

" Ahhh don't stop deeper yesss deeper!"

What the fuck? Are they fucking for real? I'm never doing this firstly I heard their pet names now I'm hearing my Mom's moans.Ew ew ew!!!!!!! I ran out

[12/22, 12:35] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After that lil chat with Mom and her steamy section with Dad I left.I'm never stinking my nose in their problems bcz it'll back fire. Someone was crying a minute ago now She's begging that person to go deeper ew ew ew I don't think I'll ever get that out of my head.I'm at Burger king while thinking about this eating. It hurts that I love this junk food but its making me fat and this pregnancy is not helping at all.

"Paige Mahone"

I looked up to see that Romeo's friend or something

Me:Oh hey

Him:Can I?

He said opening the chair to sit down.I guess that wasn't a question

Him:Can I say you look exquisite

I smiled he defiantly knows how to make someone smile

Me:Thank you very much and you don't look bad yourself

He smiled fixing his tie dramatically

Him:I do don't I?

I laughed.

Him:But for real you look different

Me:Nothing has changed Nev right?

Him:Pronounced as Niv but you write it like that,with an "e"

Me: Ok ok I see I won't forget it ever

Him:Good to hear

Me:Hey Where's your friend Romeo?

I said sipping on my drink

Him:Why asking him every time we meet? You like him?

I almost choked on my drink

Me:Excuse me?

Him: Don't worry it we'll be our little secret

He winked

Me:No don't do that with your eye,no I'm married

Him:Ok ok I'll back off but for real

Me:For real nothing I love my husband

Him:I see you Mrs Jackson

Me:Nev!?

Him:Ok sorry

Me:Damn straight you are

Him: Anyway so can you do me a little favour?

Me:Me and you ain't friends...

Him:But you are Romeo's friendfriend right?

Me:Well...

Him:Great...so I want you to pls I beg you consider as like I'm one knee pleading to you

Me:What is it?

Him:Can I have your Mother's number?

He said raising his left eye brow smiling

Me:What?

I was shocked

Him:Come on Paige

Me:Why?

Him:I saw her at a club one night hoooo she was fire

Me:Ew no

Him:They way she was dancing and drinking I seriously doubt she was a Mother. She was freaky it turned me on

Did I just hear that right?

Me:Ew ew my ears

Him:Your Mom,is HOT

Me:I should totally leave

Him: Why? I haven't got to the best part yet.She was all over the club dancing everybody watching her they loved her but you know what?

I looked at him disgusted

Him: I loved her too

Me:You're sick

Him:So numbers?

Me:She's my mother and she's married

Him:Oh she was shouting at the club that she's single and happy

Me:My Mom would never do that

Him:Want a picture?

Me: No

But Kim told me a different story arggg

Him: So? What do you say

Me:She's my Mom

Him:That will make me your step Dad

Me:Ew no

I placed my bill

Him:Why don't I pay for you daughter to be

Me:Did you smoke something?

Him:I did but last night don't tell Romeo he might freak out he's more of a "look after your health" kinda person but he also smokes

Me:I better go

I took my things he walked after me

Him:Ey don't turn your back on your father young Lady

Me:You're not my father

We walked out of the restaurant

Him:I will be and imagine all the good things we might do if I would be your Dad? Going to the

beach,parks or more taking trips ohhhh I know,going to Disney land

I stopped walking I turned to him

Me:Disney land?

Him:Or anywhere you like? Or better yet go and see those princess's in real life

Me:No! And I HATE Disney

Him:What? Why? What kind of a girl that hates Disney?

I carried on walking to my car

Him:We can do whatever you like my daughter

I unlocked my car

Him:I think I'm terrible at this father thing and I haven't started

Me:Yah you better stay away from it like right now, move away from my car

I got in

Him: Say hy to your mother for me

Me:Bye Nev

Him:I'll say Hy to Romeo for you

Me:Thanks

I drove off.I saw him waving goodbye at the mirror this gut is crazy.

•

•

•

I'm thinking of surprising my Man though.So I went to his work place

Me:I'm here for Mr Jackson

Her: Your his wife right?

She asked with a shocked face

Me:Yes

I said not getting her facial expression

Me:Is he available?

Her:I'll call him first

Me:No I'll go myself

Her:Ma'am I'm sorry...

Me:He has company?

Her: Pretty much yah

Me:Are you hiding something from me girly?

She looked nervous my heart just broke bcz I knew his doing something.I looked at her then walked to his office

Her: Ma'am...

Me: As you can see I'm pregnant I'm tired

I carried on to his office I burst in.Broken is not a word I would use or a word that can explain how I felt when I saw a woman sitting on hishis lap kissing him.Tears failed me they didn't saw me

Him:Tanya you know I'm married

Her:So am I hmmm

She kissed his neck

Him:No no get off

He pushed her

Him:I love my....

He saw me

Him:Beab?

I just nod my head then closed the door walking out.

"I'm so sorry"

His secretary said I just walked away crying

"Paige Honey pls"

I took an elevator

He was running to me

Him:Hold the lift

I was with two girls inside

Me:Don't hold it

"Caught him cheating?"

Me:Yes

The lady one said

The lift closed

"Boyfriend?"

Me: No husband

The lady two said

"Even worse"

They both said at the same time.I was wailing I'm so heartbroken

"We've been there it will be fine"

"Be strong girl"

They said.I wanted to cry even worse.The lift opened up i left I bumped into some guyguy

Me:Sorry

Him:Sorry

I passed my way out

"Paige wait up!"

That was Peter calling me he finally got to me

Me:What!?

Him:That wasn't what it looks like

Me:What was it then? What was going on? Were you playing house? Don't shit at me Peter

I unlocked my car he held my hand

Me:Let go of me

I said yanking my hand off him

Him:And don't you even THINK of coming home I'll burn you alive Peterson Jackson

I said with anger then drove my Car

•

•

•

Things are getting HOT!

[12/22, 12:38] Lynne: ×•••× 49 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I drove home luckily safely nothing went wrong. I ran inside then cried in the couch. How dare he!!! While I'm pregnant!!! The door burst open I looked at the door

Me:Get out!

Him:Let me explain...

Me: What hurts is your SECRETARY KNEW what was going on Peter

Him:Bcz she knows how Tanya can be

Me:You let her sit on your lap though anyway

Him:Paige you don't get it

Me:I don't? Then help me out Peter

Him:Its complected

Me:The question in my mind is.Was that the first time?

He looked at me

Me:Fuck you Peter

Him:Beab she...

Me:Don't you dare call me "Beab" you've fucked her before! I hate you!

Him:No...

Me:It seemed like it wasn't the first time to me! Peter am I not enough for you!!?

Him:You are my love

He walked me

Me:Don't come near me

Him:Beab I swear I've never fucked her or any girl I'm committed to you.She has been all over me plus she's married

Me:She didn't care when I heard her

Him:Beab...

Me:If you want me trust you again you'll tell me EVERYTHING don't care miss a second of you breathing ok?

Him:Yes yes

I rubbed my belly

Him:You're okay?

He got closer

Me:Don't come any closer Peter and talk

Him:Okay

He dried his sweating hands they sweat every time he's nervous

Me:Are you hiding something from me?

Him:No no my Love

Me:Then talk or I swear you'll leave here with a falling skin

Him:Ok ok uhm shall I start when we first met?

Me:The whole freakin stupid story

Him:Ok uhm we met at work

He wondered eyes around

Me:Am I written stupid on my forehead? Huh? Peter!

Him:At a club okay?!

Me:What were you doing on a club!? When?!

Him:Well...

Me:Are you here to waist my time?

Him:Months ago

Me:Go on Mr Jackson don't be afraid

Him:We uhm you know

Me:I know Shit Peter I wasn't there I was here at your house.Being your "wife"

Him:I'm sorry my love

Me:Just talk

I said calmed

Him:We made out

It was a hot tea to swallow

Me:How many times?

Him: 2 I promise

Me:You ain't innocent either Peter

Him: We didn't do anything more

Me:The first time where was it?

Him:At the club that night

Me:You even go to clubs.Nice huh? Being you?

Him:Pls don't chase me out,don't make me sleep on the guest room pls

I set down

Him:Are you okay

He set next to me then tried to touch my belly I hit his hand

Him: Sorry

Me:Nothing changes here

We heard a knock

Him:It's open

"Hello"

His Dad walked in

Him:Shit

He said in a low tone. Oh he's scared of him

F.in-law: Kids good to see you together

We didn't say anything I was mad as hell.He stood infront of us

Him:Ok Peter what have you done?

Peter: Why can't it be her?

Me:Why? It's all your fault

Peter:What if I was innocent

F.in-law: When a woman is that mad it's a man's fault. When she's the one wrong she tries to explain herself until you become cool.Now in this situation your both mad as hell

Me:It's okay Dad it was a little misunderstanding

Him:With those eyes? Peter I can't blv you she's pregnant to handle heart breaks you know. I'm sorry my child

Me:I should go to sleep

I walked upstairs

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Dad:I've never raised you to act like this towards women Peter

Me:I know I'm sorry Dad

Him: Don't say that to me she needs your sorry

He pointed at Paige who was struggling to walk up the stairs

Me: Ok ok

I walked to her

Me:Need help?

Her:No

She said angry

Me:You're not even half way through

Her:I did fine alone Peter bcz I had a long day.No one can imagine the horror I've had today.No one and especially you you were getting heated up with "Tanya" in your office

Me:But I apologized?

Her:Who said you didn't? I mean you tried your best

She was being sarcastic

Me:Are you being sarcastic?

Her: All you're doing is just stand there and not even help me YOUR wife probably that Tanya is still in your head

What have I done to deserve this?

Me:But I asked...

Her:We are arguing about this too?

Me:I'm sorry Paige

Arggggggg! She drives me CRAZY.I helped her climb up till we reach the top

Her:Let go of me

Me:Well you're welcome

She walked to the room

Her:Oh pls make me sandwich

She walked to the room.Where can I go? Pls I want

go this girl!!!! I went back to Dad

Him:See? Easy

Me:Well thanks for the advice Dad

Which didn't help

Him:You love her?

I laughed why is he asking me that

Him:No don't answer it's written on your face

I laughed

Me:Shakespeare?

Him:No it's all me

Me:Wow

I laughed

Me:I do Dad with all of my heart

Him:That's how I feel about your Mother too but sometimes I wish I could mute her for just one day

We laughed

Me:I wish I could put Paige to a box where she won't

do anything nor see anything and stay there still

He laughed

Him:If that's how you feel she's the right one

Me:Indeed she is.I couldn't imagine my life without her now

Him:When you do you gotta be strong

I faked a smile bcz I couldn't be myself without her. I know I messes up with Tanya but she's on my throat and Thank God I didn't fell into temptation I mean Tanya is really hot.She's thick she got nice ass whuuuu.But I can't lose my wife too

[12/22, 12:38] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Where is this guy with my sandwich? I swear Peter is testing my patients for real. While I was thinking of calling his name he walked in with my sandwich.

Me:Oh you took your precious time

Him:I came didn't I?

Me:Oh you did alright

I set up I took my sandwich with juice

Him:How are you feeling?

Me:Me? Oh great

Him: Are you being sarcastic?

Me:No...I'm serious

Him:Ok you are being sarcastic

Me:Oh I'm so hungry

I ate up my sandwich

Peter:You can eat something else

He ran his fingers under my dress

Me:No Peter I want food.Why you're always horny nowhere days are you okay?

Him:Paige?

Me:No no you're always want to release.Are you

dying? And you want to die on top of me? No no

Him:Yes I'm dying but of something else

He kissed legs

Me:Peter I'm eating

He kissed my legs while rubbing my thighs

Me:Peter pls

It was getting ticklish so I laughed

Him:Finish eating and I'll rock your world

Me:And you always do

He came to kiss my lips

Him:Really?

I laughed

Me:Yep

Him:Hear that kids?

He looked at my belly

Him:Sometimes I think what will we tell our children when they ask how we met

I laughed at his question

Me:The truth

Him: Or how did we get married

Me:Uhm we were forced

We laughed

Him:Worst meet up and marriage ever the only good thing is I fell in love with you at the end

I blushed

Him:I love you

Me:Well...i guess I do too

Him:Don't you dare

I laughed at him

Me:Chill I love you too

Him:That's more like it

Me:We totally forgot about doing baby shopping I mean it's been a while and I can't last few hours without resting

Him:We'll do the shopping

Me: Oh and my parents know I'm pregnant

Him:Thank God

He said in relief

Me: Why so relieved?

Him:Bcz your parents are scary imagine me saying to your Father. 'Urghm Mr Mahone I just wanted to say I made your daughter pregnant' Oh no thank you

Me: My Dad is not scary so is my Mom they are cool actually

Him: Cool? Oh no.I've seen them looking at me like they'll eat me alive while we were getting married

Me:It was arranged plus your Mom was giving me dead eyes I swear if looks could kill,I would be six feet under now

Him:You're making this sounds like my Mom is a bad person she likes you

I looked at him raising my eyebrow

Him: Deep in side

Me:Well ... it must be very deep

I said sipping my juice

Him:Anyway enough about our parents.How about baby names?

Me: Oh I'm clueless

Him:Not even one?

Me:I like Nick

Him: What? No

Me:What?

Him:They are triplets and we need three rhyming words

Me:Nick,Rick,....I don't know the last one

Him:Dick?

Me:Peter I'm serious

Him:No my love let's go for pretty names

Me:You realise that they won't stay pretty forever right?

Him:Yes but still

His phone rang he answered it

Him:Hello

...

Him: Yes ofcause

...

Him:I'll be right away

...

Him:Bye

He dropped the call getting up

Me:What happened?

Him:I need to meet one of my partners at the company

Me: Where?

Him: At some restaurant

Me: Get me something to eat pls

Him:Ok

He kissed my forehead

Him:I love you

Me:I love you too

He left rushing. He better come back with my food or I'll losing it

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I drove to this restaurant then walked inside

Me:Hy

I said to the guy on the front door desk

Me:I'm looking for Mr...

I saw my Mom outside of the window of this restaurant I'm in holding hands with some man bcz it wasn't Dad

"Sir?"

I focused on what I was there for

Me:Mr Mayor pls

He checked on his list.I looked at the window again I

saw her getting in some car the guy turned....noway!!!

"Table 5 Sir"

Me:Excuse me what?

Him:Mr Mayor is in Table 5

Me:Thanks

I walked to table 5.Is my Mom cheating? With Paige's Dad? No no it can't be maybe it's business.

"You look stressed"

Me:Nothing,why did you call me?

Him: About this

He placed a file in front of me I opened it then the thought of Mom and Paige's Dad.She looked Happy and so was he or maybe they just met coincidentally then he offered her a ride Right? I mean it's impossible they are seeing each other

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:38] Lynne: ×•••× 50 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I woke up in the middle of the night with Peter wide awake

Me:Beab?

He looked like he was in deep thoughts,him looking at the ceiling with his face so concentrated.

Me:Peter?

He quickly looked at me

Him:Honey why you're up? Go back to sleep it's still early

He said fixing my blankets

Me: Why you're still awake?

Him:I don't feel sleepy Beab just sleep ok you need rest

He kissed my forehead

Him:Just rest ok?

I nodded then went to sleep with him holding me.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I literally didn't catch any sleep thinking what I saw.Why am I making a fuss about it? I mean my Mom is not that evil right? I don't know about Paige's Dad.Maybe it was just a friendly something, I don't know what to call it

"Peterson?"

Me:Paige really?

Her:I will call you Peterson bcz you're not telling me what is bothering you

Me:Nothing

Her:Your head is million miles away

Me:Yah I know it's just work

I said wearing my jacket

Her:Know what? When your stressed about whatever your stressed about and your can't hold it in anymore don't come to me and I hope Tanya is not one of those stresses

Me:You're still jealous?

Her:Me? Jealous?

She laughed so hard that she laid her back on the bed struggling to breath

Her:Jealous of a that girl ass full of silicon? Please

Me: You don't know that

Her:Look who's defending her

Me:I'm not defending her but all I'm saying you don't know if her ass is fake or not

Her:If you defend her one more time Peter I swear I'll lose it

Me:Ok I'm sorry

Her:Tanya with a fake ass,it is fake

Me:Ok

Her:Good

She said taking her phone

•

•

•

Paige's POV

After Peter left I went to the kitchen I found Maria there

Me:Wow hello

Her:Hello

Me:If you didn't like me I would say your avoiding me but no who doesn't like me I mean? look at me

She laughed

Her:Oh Paige it's only my family

Me:Oh I'm sorry what's wrong?

Her:We're struggling financially it's stressing me out

Me:Ok wait up I'll be back

I went up stairs then came back with some money

Me:Here

Her:No no I can't accept this

Me:It's just a gift from a friend to s friend, you can't struggle

Her: Thank you so much

She said in urge of crying

Me:Don't cry

I went to hug her

Me:I would have loved to give you more but that's what I have now in my purse

Her: It's enough it will cover up so much.Thank you

Me:Don't sweat it

Her: You can take it back from my pay cheque bcz...

Me:Don't worry about it you need it more than I do

She smiled

Her:And I knew there was something weird about you when you walked those stairs,you're pregnant congratulations

I laughed

Me: Thank you so much

Her:I still remember you want nothing to do with Peter the day you first got here

Me: You mean that naive little girl who first got here? Oh she's gone she was just blind and full of herself

We laughed

Me:Anyway can I help you?

She looked at me

Me:Pls I'll do little things

Her:Like making juice?

Me:Come on pls

Her:Ok ok I'll help you

Me:Yes yes

I giggled clapping hands

Her:Don't get too excited

Me:Ok

we laughed

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me: Hy

I'm at Paige's Dad work place and this girl is flirting with me

Me:Can I get Mr Mahone?

Her:Who are you...Sir?

She giggled

Me:Mr Jackson

Her:Ok let me call him,for you?

She made me nervous at the last part.She made the

call

Her:This way Mr Jackson I'll show his office

Me:Thanks

We got into a lift it was silent till we reached the floor

Her:It's that door

Me:Thank you and I'm married

I showed her my ring I saw a little disappointment in her.I walked to his office

Him:Son in law

Me:Father in law

We hand shake I set down

Him:What do I owe the pleasure?

Me:I just came to talk to you

Him:About what? I already know my daughter is pregnant, congratulations though

Me:Thanks

I fixed my jacket

Me:I came here for something else

Him: That is?

Me: My Mom

His facial expression changed instantly

Me: Got something to say Mr Mahone?

Him:I don't know what are you talking about

Me:At all?

Him:Yes

Me: When was the last time you spoke?

Him:The last time at your house. Where is this conversation heading boy?

Me:Are you having an affair with my Mom?

He got angry

Him: How dare you boy accuse me of such thing!

He yelled

Me:Calm down Mr Mahone.If I saw you with my Mom again I'll end your marriage, without thinking twice and you'll lose your daughter

Him:Are you threatening me?

Me:Call it whatever you like

Him:You have no idea who are you dealing with boy

He looked me dead in the eyes

Me:You know?

He laughed

Him: You think you're tough huh?

Me:I came to say what I wanted.Have a nice day Mr Mahone

I got up fixing my jacket then walked to the door. Now it's my Mother's turn.I called

Her:Oh my baby hey

Me:We need to talk,meet me at our restaurant in 15 minutes

Her:Oh ok

Me:I hate waiting

I dropped the call. I'm pissed right now.I quickly drove to the restaurant luckily I found her sitting at

the far corner. I went to sit next to her I didn't greet nor anything

Her:Hello to you too Peter

The waiter came

Me:We'll call you

Mom: But I need to order

Me: Not now

The waiter left

Me:Let's talk Mother

Her:Oh that wife of yours made you like this.You talk to me anyway you like,you don't greet nor hug your Mother now

Me:Leave my wife out of your problems. I came here to tell you stay away from someone else's husband

She looked at me surprised

Her:Excuse me?

Me:I'll end your marriage myself woman if you don't stop seeing Paige's Dad

She looked me with no expression

Me: I think I made it clear

Her:I have no idea what you're talking about

Me:I swear I'll end your life

Her: You'll end my life too?

Me:Yes that and more.My wife is pregnant to take these news I wouldn't want anything bad to happen to her

Her:It's always about her

Me:You're sleeping with her father Mom.If Dad finds out...

Her:No no no need to go that far.Fine Peter anything for your wife

She stormed out.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:39] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I'm at the house busy on my phone when Peter walked in he looked like a hot mass.

Me:You're here early

Him:I need to rest I'm tired

He set to me

Me:Oh baby

He took off his tie

Me:Oh I got something big to tell you

Him:What's that?

I was so excited

Me:So today I helped Maria at the kitchen

Him:Oh?

He looked at the kitchen

Me:Don't worry I didn't ruin anything

Him:Oh

Me:So I made,an egg yeeey

He just looked at me

Me: Peter? I made an egg without burning it,well I did but a little

Him:Wow my love that's... that's great

Me:I know right,you don't look happy

Him:I am honey what else did you do?

Me:And juice

Him: Ohw that's...uhmm...I'm happy for you

Me:Thank you honey next time I'll make din...

Him:No!

Me: What!

Him:I mean no...I want you all night long tonight

Me:I didn't say tonight

Him:I'm saying tonight

He pecked my lips

Me:Are you akay though?

Him:Yep

His phone rang he answered

Him:Hello

...

Him: Kelly?

...

Him:Yes yes I'm coming

He dropped the call getting up

Me:What happened?

Him:Kelly is in a lot of pain I think she's giving birth

Me: I'll come with you

Him: No stay..

Me:Not up fo discussion let's go

Him:Fine

Me: Oh help me up first

Him; Paaaige

He did

Me:Let's go now

We went to his car he drove bcz he knows the way

Him:It's so far

Me: You know you should have sent an ambulance to her right?

Him:Shiiit! Your right.Why didn't you say so?

Me:My head wasn't thinking straight as well like yours

Him: Never mind we're close now

Me:Oh I thought it was far

Him: Paige?

Me;Mmm?

Him:Pls stop talking

Me: Okay

We drove all the way to her apartment

Me:Go and take her I'll drove you guys

Him: Okay

He walked out and ran inside her apartment I changed my seats.After a little while he came back carrying her in bridal style. No matter how freakin jealous I was, I controlled it.Kelly is using this opportunity to touch my MAN! Ok I better calm my ass down. They got in the back I drove to the hospital. I was so annoyed I regretted doing all of this.He was busy being emotional and begging her not to close her eyes,I wanted to puke.

Kelly:I'm giving birth to our baby girl

She touched his face I saw her in the mirror

Me:Hey! You maybe in pain and all but DO NOT TOUCH HIS FACE.And you Peter, why you're crying?

They just looked at me

Peter:Eyes on the road Mrs Jackson

I focused I drive all the way to the hospital.He took her inside I followed them.She was attended right away

Him: Can I go with her

My head is about to explored right now.Where does he think he's going!?

Doc:Who are you Sir?

Him:The Father

Doc: Fine come we'll give you things to cover yourself

He turned to me

Him: Beab can I go?

Does he think I'm stupid!?

Me:You can go to the end of the world with her for all I care

Him:Don't be like this

Me:Like what? Jealous? I'm not jealous just go

Him:Thanks my love

He kissed my forehead then ran after them.I called his family they came right away

Ben:Hey how are you?

Me: I'm doing good

M.in-law: I can't wait to see the baby

F.in-law: Peter is with her?

Me:Yes

Him:Are you fine?

Me:I've never been fine in my life

Peter's Mom gave me nasty looks I didn't mind them

•

•

•

After a while I don't know how much sandwiches I ate bcz of hunger.We've been there for hours they took too long will I took that long?

M.inlaw:Here comes Peter

I looked at his way he looked horrible.Oh no I'm thinking if the delivery went well what happened?

M.in-law: My son

Peter just looked at her then he greeted his father.Ok

am I missing something?

F.in-law: How did it go son?

He was down

Me:Peter you're scaring us

Him:I have a baby girl

He smiled a big happy smile.His father hugged him and his brother. I was so happy for him

M.in-law: Congratulations my son

Him:Thanks

What is going on with these too.Peter came to hug me

Me:I'm so happy for you

Him: Thanks my love

We pulled the hug

Him:I can't wait for our babies

Me:Shhh they might hear you

We laughed

Me:I'm scared

Him:Its nothing

Me:Nothing...

I slowed my voice

Me: 3 heards will come out of me Peter

Him:I saw everything in there it's peace of cake

Me:No it's not you're trying to make me feel better. I know labor is not a happy place to be

Him: Yah you're right she was crying, screaming none stop and when I took a look at what doctors were doing,I almost fainted I.saw the baby come out the head was so big to get out from there...

Me:Oh wow Peter you're making me feel so much better now

Him:Sorry I'm just saying

Me:Don't say anything now maybe that will help you.Anyway how is Kelly?

He looked at me shocked

Me:I hate her but I'm not heartless

Him:She's resting. What happened to you besides our relationship,like what happened?

Me:It was just a stupid thing happened it's nothing Peter

Him:But you still hate her for it

Me: I don't hate her for it I hate her bcz she still thinks she has a chance with you which will never happen not in her wildness dreams

Him:When you saw each other in my apartment you were already in your each others throats what happened?

Me:Why you want to know so bad?

Him:I just want to know

Me;If you won't get jealous

Him:I promise

Me:It was bcz of a guy

Him:You were dating?

Me:No I wasn't.It was something that happened a long time ago

Him:That is?

Me:You're so noisy

I laughed

Him:I know

Me:I had a boyfriend few weeks later I saw them together

Him:Together?

Me: Fucking if you want it like that

Him: Cold.It could be that me and her were dating at that time

Me:Actually you were

Him:Wow

Me:Yah she's that bad.She can get any man she wants any time she wants she scares me like that

Him:She won't have me

Me:Even if I die?

Him:Don't say that

Me:You don't know what the future holds

Him:I'll die as well of a broken heart if you leave me

Me:What about our kids,don't ever leave them.You'll raise them for us and they'll be respectful young men

Him:You're talking like you'll actually leave me

Me:I also don't know where is that coming from

Him:You're scaring me

Me:I'm sorry my love but sometimes we gotta prepare for the worst.One day I'll leave my children with you,you promise to raise them well?

Him;Paige I don't like your talk.You'll never leave me

Me:You promise?

He looked sad

Him:I promise although I know we'll grow old together

Me:I love you

Him:I love you more with all my heart

I smiled we hugged

Him:We will never have this talk

Me:Ok

Him:Promise?

Me:I promise

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:39] Lynne: ×•••× 51 ×•••×

•

•

•

A week past now and to tell you the truth it's not sweet at all.Peter is hardly home he goes to Kelly's place a lot of times. I'm not saying he must not see his daughter I mean when was the last time he spent time with me.But I won't say anything I don't want to

be seen as an jealous wife or a bad person. I feel lonely and I've been telling him of buying things for the babies but nothing "I'm busy Beab" or "I'm tired today".I should go alone bcz I won't sit around and wait for him it's clear he'll never make time.I wore my dress

Him:Where are you going?

Me:At the mall

He was getting ready for work

Him:This early don't you need to rest

Me:I'm pregnant Peter not sick

Him: Sorry

I took my things then wore my shades

Him: Paige

I turned to face him

Me:What?

Him:Are you mad about something?

Me:No

Him:Oh

I face the door then left the house.I drove all the way to the mall.I shopped for my babies and I know shit about this but I asked Google.Google will be my friend from now on I can ask anything. Anyway I tried buying few things including baby nappies, bottles, feeding chair I bought everything I can.My Mom called

Me:Hey

Her:Hey oh you don't sound good are you okay?

Me:Yes Mom I'm just tired

Her:Where are you?

Me:At the mall

Her:What are you doing shouldn't you been resting even your birth month is close

Me:I'm fine Mom

Her:What are you doing there anyway?

Me:Shopping for the baby

Her:Why didn't ask me for help Paige?

Me:No you're a busy person

Ah no bcz she'll ask about these alot of things I bought

Her:Which shop I'm coming?

Me: No don't bother I'm done I'm leaving

Her:Okay be safe I love you

Me:I love you too

I went to scan my shopping

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

I was enjoying my child's company when Peters Mom walked in.

Me:Oh morning to you too

Her:I hate my life now

Me:Woah chill let me place my baby down

I did then focused on her

Me: What is it now?

Her:I've been seeing someone

Me:At your age yah right

I laughed my lungs out

Her:I look younger than you think silly little girl

Me:Ohhhh

Her:It's just I love him

Me:You're married

Her:I know that it's just this man is different

Me:You gave him love potion too

Her:No

I laughed

Her: He approached me

Me:Is he your age?

Her:My husband's age

Me:And his single

Her:Actually...

Me:Wow

I laughed

Her:I know it's wrong

Me:How long was this going on?

Her:Uhm...

Me: For a while I imagine

Her:A couple of months..

Me:You go girl

I laughed

Her:Can you shut up

Me:You came up with this let me be

Her:You're a terrible listener

Me:I don't want to know more of your secrets my tongue may slip

Her:Never.All you need to do is get rid of that Paige girl

Me:Still on with this?

Her:Yes she's brainwashing my son

Me:Look Paige is a good person she even drove me to the hospital...

Her:I don't care even if she drove you to heaven.I hate that girl

Me:She doesn't deserve your hatred she loves your son you should be happy for him

Her:What happened to you? That baby took your brain too? listen here nothing she does or do will make me like her I hated her the first day I saw her

Me:That's clear but she wants nothing but happiness for your son

Her: If you're backing out on our plan it's okay I'll be alone

Me:Don't get caught you got a lot to lose

Her:I never get caught

Me:What do you mean?

Her:You don't know what I'm capable off

She sounded scary

Her:If you dare to mention this to anyone I'll kill that ugly thing of yours

Me: Are you threatening me?

Her:Whatever you call it

She winked at me we heard someone knocking at the door

Me:It's open

Paige walked in

Her:Hey...oh I didn't know you have company

Me:Pls come in

P.Mom:I was leaving don't worry.Oh and Kelly remember what I told you and I keep my promises

She winked again walking out.

Paige:I came to give you this

She gave me a bag

Me:What's this?

Her: New born clothes and some food like purity and

stuff

Me:Wow Paige uhm thank you

Her:Welcome.Is the baby awake?

Me:Yes come

We went to her cort at the leaving room

Her:She's so cute

Me:Thanks

Her:I'm sure She'll take your looks you're very pretty

Oh my God she complimented me

Me: Thanks I'm sure your baby will take yours

Her:Maybe

We shared a laughter a little.I can't blv we shared laughter it's been a while since laughed together since those days we were friends. I did hurt her no doubt and now Peter's Mom hate her she knows nothing it's so sad

Me:Look Paige we've been ...

Her:No Kelly.Don't get this mixed up with anything I

care about the baby bcz she'll be around me too all the time.

Me:Yes

Her:Have a good day

She left.Looks like She's never forgiving me,her belly is big though.

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I'm alone at home its 8.I'm at the bed.Peter haven't called or anything am I being paranoid or it's these hormones? I really Miss him but I should sleep he ain't coming home soon. I closed my eyes after sometime I felt colds hands on me then cold lips on my neck.I turned the lights on I saw Peter

Me:Pls move back

Him:Beab what's wrong

Me:Peter I'm tired

Him:Beab have you been crying?

Me:Peter? Pls

He moved

Him:What's wrong?

I slept on my side sniffing

Him:Beab...

He touched my shoulder I shifted he let go.I slept on my side he slept on his.A little text of saying where you are and when you'll be coming home wouldn't hurt.I feel alone in this marriage maybe I'm seeing things or I want him to myself alone,I don't know.

[12/22, 12:39] Lynne: ×•••× 52 ×•••×

•

•

•

Few Months later

Paige's POV

I'm with at my Parents place

Mom:So you can give birth anytime now

Me:Yah

Her:You don't sound happy

Me:Mom? I'll give birth

Her: Yah okay

Me:It's nothing to be proud of

Her:True

Me:Where's Dad he's taking so long

Her:Yes and Chris?

Me:I don't know about him.I called him yesterday but he didn't pick up

Her:Maybe he's busy now he moved out

Me:Yah

Her:So what will you name your baby?

Me:I still don't know

Her:Come on

Me:I don't Mama for real

Her:Didn't Peter suggest something

I looked away

Her:What's wrong?

Me:Nothing

Her:Did you fought?

Me:No nothing like that we uhm just...It's nothing Mom

I said getting up I felt pain in my stomach

Me: Ouch!

Mom: Paige? Are you okay?

Me: Yes...yes I need water

The pain fade I walked to the kitchen she followed me

Her:It's clear you guys aren't happy

Me:Mom it's okay

I felt the pain again I held on my belly looking down

Her: Paige!?

She came to me.I felt warm liquid flooding down between my legs

Me:Mom?

Her:What sweety?

Me:When you're

giving birth what happens first?

Her:Your water breaks

Me:Oh I think I'm giving birth

Her:What?

She looked at my legs I was wearing black leggings

Her:And you ain't saying anything,come

She escorted me to her car

Me:The front seat

Her: Ok

She helped me in

Her:Call Peter

Me:Mom get in the car and drive you'll call him there

Her:Paige his your husband

He went inside to take her cellphone. Wow.She called him and put him on speaker

Mom:Meet us at the hospital now!

Him:Why what happened?

Mom:Paige is giving birth hurry

She dropped the call

Me:Guess he was more important

Her:Just calm down I'm driving,breath

Me:I am breathing,oh this hurts

Her:You'll get used to it

Me:I don't think so

Her:We'll arrive in no time

Me:I will never! ever get pregnant again!

Her: That's what they all say

Me:I'm speaking for myself. I can't even say where it hurts,fuuuuck!

Her:Shhh calm down where here

Me:Yes yes

I took off the belt seats then walked out my Mom ran to me she walked me in the hospital

Her:She's giving birth someone help!

Me:Mom that was embarrassing

Her:I thought you were in pain

Doctors and Nurses came to us and I was laid on the bed. Right there at that moment I knew my life is ruined.I'll have babies,I'll probably divorce, I'll leave alone with my kids and 10 cats,what I'm trying to say is I messed up my life by not using a freakin CONDOM! Paige you've learn the hard way.Anyway I was taken to the labour ward they did their thing

Nurse:She's not ready yet

Doc:Yah she needs to wait

Me:Wait what? But I'm in pain

Nurse:We understand Ma'am but the babies ain't ready

Me:The 3 of them

Doc: I'm afraid no Ma'am

Me: How selfish are they!? I swear when they are born I'm giving them a weep

Doc:Ok wait 15 minutes

Me:Excuse me?

Doc:15 minutes Ma'am or you can walk the stairs up and down

Me:No just get these evil babies out of me!

I sweating none stop they left.They left me here! Do they know who am I?

Me:My name is Paige Mahone! Do you hear me!?

They didn't hear me.

Me:Oh God oh God oh GOD! Hooooo

I breathed out Peter walked in a hurry

Him:Are you okay?

He touched my face

Me:I'm fine I've never been better in my life

Him:Paige?

Me:15 minutes isn't over yet?

Him;Pls don't ignore me

I was tearing my sheets,I'm sweating,I'm in pain and my Dear husband is being lovey dovey can't we focus on the bigger picture here pls!?Anyway time flied by the Doctors came back

Doc:We're ready

Me:I've been ready 15 minutes ago

Nurse:Ok just relax Ma'am

Peter held my hand

Him:It's gonna be okay

I looked at him then closed my eyes

•

•

•

Paige's Mom POV

I'm so scared for my daughter she's so young and I

know how painful that is.

"Hey Mom"

Me:Chris

We hugged

Him:I came as soon as you call

Me: Thank God you decided to pick your phone up this time

Him;Sorry.Where's Dad?

Me:I already called him he'll be right here any minute

Him:And Peter and his family?

Me:Peter is with Paige and I called Peter's father he said hell be here any time

Him:Okay

"Hey guys"

Paige's Dad walked to us we hugged and he smells that familiar woman perfume again.He won't stop messing around with this woman huh? When I cheat back hell beg me to stop but now it's all about my

baby girl

P.Dad:How is she bcz I know how dramatic she can be

Me:She was in a lot of pain

Him:A lot?

Me:Yep

Him:Oh my poor baby she'll think the whole world is against her

The Jackson family followed but the wife wasn't with them

MrJackson:Afternoon

Us:Afternoon

Him: How is she?

Me:I still don't know yet

We waited for a while the wife walked in,her perfume hit my nostrils

"Jackson family?"

We all stood up

Doc;Uhm okay

Me:I'm the Mother how is she?

Doc:Doing great she's still giving birth

Me:What do you mean by that?

Doc: That she's giving birth to triplets

I almost had a heart attack

Me:3? How?

Doc:She was carrying 3 babies in her womb Ma'am

Me:I know that and I'm well educated thank you.But Paige never said anything

Boy:I knew but I thought twins not triplets

Me:My poor daughter

Doc:Excuse me

He left

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I've never felt pain like that in my life.My pussy was tearing apart. But finally after that long,long looooong birth I was done I heard their cries. I was dripping sweat.

The Doctor gave me one baby Peter took another baby the other Nurse held on another one.I saw his small hands,face and eyes closed.

Doc: Congratulations Mrs Jackson

Me:Thank you Doc

I had time to be with them I looked at them Peter was happy like I was.I breast fed them then I was taken to rest so are my babies.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I'm so happy that I saw my kids and I was able to be with Paige at this difficult moment.I went back to

Paige's Mom but now everyone was there

P.Mom:How is my daughter is she okay?

Me:Yes she's resting for now

Chris: And the babies?

Me: How do you know that?

Chris: The Doctor told us why did you guys kept it a secret?

Me:She didn't want people knowing and me too

Dad:Congratulations Son

Me: Thanks Dad

P.Mom:Can I see her or the babies?

Me:No they are resting

Dad:Okay we'll just wait for them

We stayed there waiting for them.Maybe hours pass then I was called by the Doctor that Paige wanted to speak with me so I went to her.

Me:Hy

Her:I need you to go and get our papers and few

baby things home

Me: Why

Her:Peter I'm only asking for just little time in your busy schedule pls

Me: Paige what happened to us?

Her:Will you be able to do it or not?

Me:I will

Her:Call the family in on your way out

Me:Sure

•

•

•

Paige's POV

The family walked in after few minutes

Mom:My baby

We hugged

Dad: Princess

Me:Dad

Chris:Hey Sis

Me: Hey you're here I can't blv it

Chris:You're exaggerating

P.Mom: Congratulations Paige

I looked at her she is not saying it bcz she wants to she's just saying it

Me: Thank you

P.Dad:We were all shocked that you had triplets my child that is beautiful congratulations

Me:Thanks and thank God I did I don't think I'll ever have more children

P.Mom:Oh no you won't trust me

Mom:Why's that?

P.Mom: Bcz I wouldn't you're already done now

Mom:Says something with 10 kids

Me:Mom?

Dad:Honey pls calm down

Mom:I am calm

She walked out angry. What is going on

Ben:I clear the intense air.So Paige how much will I get bcz I knew you weren't pregnant with one baby

Me:Nothing bcz you lied you said twins

Him:Unfare

We laughed

P.Dad: So what will you call your babies?

Me: To be honest I don't know but how about...

Ben:Shawn?

Me:Shawn? No no

Chris:Or Bryan

Me:And other two?

Chris: I don't know

We laughed

Me:Kleb,Klein and ....oh God

Chris:Kris with a K?

Me:After you no

Him:Pls Sis I would love that

Me:No

Dad:Come on Paige

The nurse got in

Her:Ma'am we need to make certificates of your babies we need papers

"Here"

Peter walked in a rush

Her:Okay and the names?

I looked at Peter who wrote shocked in his face

Me:I've already decided with my family.They will be Kleb with a K,Klein and Kris with a K

Chris:Yes

Me:Calm down brother

Nurse:Excuse me

She left.

Chris:I'm happy though

Peter:When are you going home?

Me:After they've done with the papers.

Dad:We better leave you

Me:Bye Dad

We all hugged

Chris:Love you Sis

Me:I love you more

They left

Peter:Cute names

Me: Thank you,can you help me up I need to Change

He helped me up I took the clothes he bought at least he thought of taking them.I went to change at bathroom then came back he helped me back to my sit

Me: Thanks.Let me see what you brought

I took the bag I saw baby blankets and nappies

Me:I'm sure they have nappies on for now thank you

anyway

Him:You don't have to thank me I'm their father

The Doctor came

Him:All done Ma'am here

I took the papers

Him:The babies will be here any minute

Me: Thank you.Peter you brought the chairs right?

Him:Yes they're in the car

Me:Awesome

After a little while my precious baby's came we left the hospital.

•

We got home we went to the nursery it was so beautiful I made it warm so they don't get called.I breast fed them again first then left them to sleep.

Peter: Thank God I have you imagine those 3 alone with me how will I survive?

Me:You will do just good,didn't I bought bum cream?

Where is it?

I known few things about babies I even watch videos on YouTube just to be a fit Mom.

Peter:What's that?

Me: Bum cream after you change the baby nappy you put bum cream on

Him:Maybe you're not looking perfectly check other bags

He helped me look we didn't find it

Him:Is it necessary for now?

Me: Yes baby skin is very sensitive I'll go and buy one okay?

Him:What if they cry?

Me:I'll be back in a moment

I took my car Key's then drove quickly to the nearest shop and I should be resting but no can't do.I parked my car.I walked in and Thank God the place was empty I took the bum cream then went to scan it in a hurry my babies are on my mind.I left immediately I

walked to my car

Me:What are you doing here?

It was Peters Mom

Her:Hello Paige

Me:I'm in a hurry and it's called here

It was windy and we were on top of a little bridge.She came closer to me

Me:Ma'am just say whatever I need to go

Her:My son doesn't deserve you

Me:You were the ones who forced on this marriage remember?

She pulled out a bottle made of glass

Her:Know what this is?

There are no people walking around here it's quiet this woman is scaring me.And the shop is far from where I parked

Me:My family needs me

I walked to my car she pulled me by my arm

Her:Where do you think you're going?

•

•

•

To be continued...

[12/22, 12:40] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

After she had grabbed my arm she threw me on the ground.I fell hard my elbow hurt bcz I balanced with it,I screamed

Her:I always hated you the first day I saw you

Me:I never did anything to you

Her: Yes but there's something about you.Something I can't get out of my head.You remind me of someone I hated a long time ago.I hated her but she did everything in her power to humiliate me,to hurt

me.After years of being happy with my family you came along, you had her looks, attitude, everything. You reminded me of her and trust me it wasn't a good feeling. I thought for a moment it was her that you were her

She laughed

Me:But I'm not her

I said crying my elbow hurt

Her:Ofcause you're not I know the dead doesn't come back to life.But you resemble her sooo much it hunts me every time I close my eyes

I tried getting up

Her:No sit

She forced me to sit

Me:Pls let me go

Her:No no I can't do that

Me:You're crazy

She pulled out that bottle

Me:What's that?

Her:A little something for your face

She laughed

Me: Help!

She ran and held my mouth

Her:Dare scream again I'll kill you

2 men in black came to us

Her:Take her to the car

Me:No no no my kids need me pls don't do this

She pulled out a cloth

Me:Help! Help!

She placed a cloth in my face I fell asleep immediately

•

I was woken up by cold water

Me:Ohhhhhh

Her:No need to sleep now

Me:Let me go

I said crying

Her: Go then pls dare to go

We were in a middle of nowhere near the running water

Me:Where are we?

She pulled out the bottle again

Her:Calm down no one will ever find you here

It was getting dark

Me:My kids! Pls I beg you they're still young to lose me

Her:My Mother died when I was young too

Me:But look how you turned out

She slapped me

Her:Don't you dare talk to me like that

She was with those two men

Me: I hate you

Her:I hate you more and the more I see you the more I hate you more

She laughed

Her:I see you I see my enemy. I hate that your face hunts me do you know how I can solve it?

She opened the bottle

Her:When I do this your face will never hunt me again.This is acid

She laughed

Me:No no no pls I beg you

Her:Don't worry it won't hurt,it will burn

She laughed

Me:Pls I beg you

I tried getting up she kicked my elbow I groan in pain

Me:You're sick!!!

Her:I know

She moved closer to me

Me:Pls I beg you think of Peter

Her:Yah he'll be better without you in his life

Me:My babies pls

She opened the bottle she smiled

Me:No no noooo

she poured the acid on my face without thinking twice.My face burned nothing can express how I felt.I couldn't hold my face I was burning. I was blind I couldn't see they were talking I couldn't pay attention. I was groaning in pain I was rolling on the ground I tried finding where she was with my hands I couldn't find her.All of a sudden I felt people getting me up

Me:No no

I was thrown on the running water. I can't see,I can't breath,I can't swim with my face hurting, the water is flooding with me I don't know where the water is taking me.How could that woman be so cruel!? I swear I'll avenge myself this is not the end!!!!!

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me:Shhh Mommy is coming

I said holding my baby he's crying.I tried calling Mom I need help but it sent me straight to voicemail and Paige is not picking up. What am I going to do

Me:Paige's Mom

I called her

Her:Hello

Me;Hy its me Peter

Her:Oh hey Peter what's wrong?

Me:I can't get ahold of Paige she left hours ago saying she's getting bum cream for the babies she haven't come back since

Her: I last saw her at the at the hospital you need help?

Me:Yah I don't know what to do

Her: I'm coming

I dropped the call.I tried playing with them they won't stop crying. I changed their nappies, I made formula for them although they couldn't suck the bottle probably they tried.I don't know what do they want.I can't think of anything I'm frustrated Paige is not freakin picking up her phone.I know she's mad at me for whatever reason but the kids do not deserve this.

•

•

•

It's not the end YET! Stay tuned.

[12/22, 12:40] Lynne: ×•••× 53 ×•••×

•

•

•

Peter's POV

It's the next day Paige didn't show up.I'm starting to think she left me now.I didn't sleep a wink last night I was thinking about her and the babies didn't give me

a good time either.I called Paige's phone again and no one answered. I don't even know where she might be if she's not home and I don't have her friends number. The babies need their Mother at this stage.My phone rang it was Paige

Me:Paige where the hell are you!?

"Peter this is not Paige its Kim,I just found her car next to a shop and it's unlocked everything is here"

Me:Where is she?

Her:She's not here

Me:Damn call the police and say she was missing since yesterday afternoon I'm coming

Her:What? What happened?

Me:Just call the Police there I'll be right there

Her: Ok

I ran downstairs to Maria

Me:Maria Maria pls pls I need your help

Her:With anything

Me:Pls look after the babies I'll be back soon I got an emergency

Her:No problem Sir

Me:Thank you oh and Pls bath them for me I haven't,when they wake up bye

Her:Bye

I quickly drove to the nearest shop I know indeed I saw her car I drove to that bridge I walked out

Kim:I called the police they'll be right here in no time

Me:Good

I looked around the police were coming our way I know one of them we don't get along.He knows about my shady things but he never caught me but I'm no longer that guy anymore he can chill

Him:Mr Jackson

Me:Detective

Him:What do we have here

Me:My wife was missing since yesterday we don't know where she went

Him:Don't you think one of your friends took her

Me:What friends Detective?

Him:Never mind although you should have waited for 24hrs

Me:My wife is missing Detective her friend just found her car here and you're telling me about 24hrs you gotta be kidding me

Him:You got issues Mr Jackson well your wife left you I would get like that too

Me:Can you pls do your job

Him:With pleasure.Miss did you touch the vehicle?

Her:Yes and her cellphone

"Sir we found something"

Him: I would need you two to step away from the scene

We went to my car we watched them

Her:What did he meant by "Your friends"?

Me: Nothing

Her: No no don't tell me that are you one of those shady guys? I mean you could be with the money you own

Me:I worked for my money

Her:I swear if this is your fault I'll never forgive you

Me:My wife disappeared Lady can we stop this nonsense

Her:I knew you were trouble the very first day I saw you and I never liked you for Paige

Me:You're Kim right? Just stop talking pls stop

I watched the forensics doing their job why this looks like a crime scene now? What is going on? The Detective came to us with plastic bags

Him:This is a bum cream for babies

Me: Yes she was buying that

Him:And this is a strand of a hair that was found on the ground

Me:Yes Detective

Him:We'll take everything to the lab to be

traced.We'll call you for further details Mr Jackson

He left.

Kim:Cross your fingers she better be fine

She went to her car and drove away.I took out my cellphone

Me:Uhm Hy

P.Mom: Oh Hey Peter Paige arrived yet I didn't sleep a wink last night well we all didn't

Me:Well...

•

•

•

Narrated

" What is that Dad?"

"I don't know"

"Dad it looks like a body"

"A body,no kid"

"Dad that's a foot"

They moved their boat closer to the scene of this

"David God damn it is a body"

"Daddy call the police"

The Dad quickly called the police in shock

•

After few minutes the police arrived in no time

Detective: Wow she has been in the water for a lot of time,she's unrecognisable her face is just horrible

"It looks like she was eaten by sea creatures"

Detective: Yes,bag her and take her to the lab this might be who we are looking for

"Yes Detective"

They put her of the bag and drove to the forensics for the body to be traced.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I don't know what to do,I can't take care all three of them at once I need to work also.So I called Kelly she's the only one who can help me.I heard a door bell I went to open

Me: Kelly pls come in

She walked in with her baby

Me:I don't know what to do

Her:I'll help don't worry

Me: Thank you

Her:What really happened to Paige?

Me:I called you here to help me not gossip

Her:Sorry to offend you

She let her baby be comfortable she was peaceful

Me:Why Elle so peaceful?

Her:She got nothing to complain about I fed her, bathed her and she's clean

Me:So are they but they keep crying especially him

I'll call him Klein he's been crying since yesterday

Her:New borns sometimes can feel a mother's pain.Maybe something happened to their Mother

Me: Nothing happened to Paige okay? She's fine I know it

Her:I'm sorry but I was just saying. All you need to do to them is show them love

Me: Paige is coming back Kelly, you would love her not to don't you?

Her:Peter I'm not heartless and I didn't like her first yes I don't deny that but after I gave birth I changed

Me:Yah right

Time flied by. Klein was fast asleep, Kelly was making food.I went to watch Klein sleeping.

Me: What are you feeling little bro huh? Mommy is coming back I promise you,I promise.We will be a one big happy family. We will be happy there will be no tears to cry anymore. I love you man

My phone rang

Me:Hello

"Mr Jackson we need you to come at the police station"

Me:Why you found her?

"Where not sure"

Me:What do you mean you're not sure?

He dropped the call.

Kelly:What happened?

Me: I'm needed at the station.Look after them I'm coming

I drove quickly there and I called her parents. I got mixed up emotions I don't know whether to cry,laugh, be happy,be sad I don't know. I finally got there I walked in

"Sir pls wait here for a moment"

I waited why are they taking so long?!

"Peter"

Her parents walked in with her brother

Me: Hy again

Chris:Where is she?

Me:They said I should wait

Chris:Okay

"Ohk Sir you may follow me"

We followed him to a dark place

Me:Did you arrest her and why it's cold here?

P.Mom:It is cold here I hope she got a blanket on

"You may enter"

We walked in and we saw a body in a body bag and Detective was there along with one of the policeman

Me:What's this?

P.Mom:Where's my Daughter?

Detective: I'm afraid...

Chris:Don't say it! That's not her

Paige's Dad was standing by the door doing nothing he was just shocked and her Mom was crying silently

Me:Open the bag

Detective: She's unrecognisable

Me: Then why did you call me here for?Open the bag

They did.I've never seen someone with a face like that.It was eaten by something.

Detective:We believe she was eaten by sea creatures

Me: And you got 0 evidence saying that's her

Him:We found this too

He showed me that bracelet she bought the time we started being in love.She had one I also have one

Me:But...no

Tears ran down my cheeks

Chris:But how did she end up in the water?

Detective: We don't know she could have jumped

P.Dad: Jumped? Why? Didn't she bought what she wanted? Why would she jump after? She should have jumped first

Detective: We couldn't find any evidence of another

person

Me:So she threw herself on the bridge?

Detective: It could be

Me:That's absurd. That is not Paige do a DNA test

P.Mom:We...we can't

Me:What? Why she's your daughter?

P.Dad:She's not our biological daughter

Chris: What?

P.Mom:I'm sorry

Me:How?

P.Dad:We found Paige at our doorstep one night

Chris; But?

P.Mom:You were too young you really thought she was ours.But she is ours she is our baby girl

Me:I can't blv this

I didn't know what to do

Chris:How can we know now?

Detective: She is her look at her left hand.It shows she had a ring,she is the same height, weight, colour of hair and of complexion.And she showed up now

Me: She was in water for hours you can't compare the complexion but everything else makes sense. But who could do this she would never throw herself on the bridge, ever

I set down crying in silent. I can't blv that's how I said goodbye to her. Everyone was crying,we all loved Paige dearly. I lost the love of my life the Mother of my three beautiful boys.

•

•

•

Narrated

"Mom! She's getting warm"

"Yes she's waking up,wrap her with more foil Athi"

"Yes Ma"

They wrap her

"I made an appointment with the special doctors,Tomorrow we are taking her to the Doctor and she'll be a new person in no time"

"Thanks my love"

"I always wanted a baby girl you know"

"Dad what if she's older I mean she's married"

"And honey what if she wakes up and not remember anything?"

"We are not kidnapping her we'll help her.I trust my Doctors they'll do magic on that face"

•

•

•

×•••× THE END ×•••×

#Admin

[12/22, 12:40] Lynne: SEASON 2

Slay Queen's arranged marriage: The Revenge

×•••× 01 ×•••×

•

•

•

(Flashbacks) - 1 year ago -

"Aunty!"

Her:In the lounge!

I ran to her

Me:Athi refuses to give me my phone back

Her:Athi!

He walked in

Him: She's chatting with older men

Aunt:Paige?

Me:Aunty not that name again

Her:You refuse to listen

Me:I wasn't they are on my DM'S

Athi smiled I was so pissed

Him:Paige

Me:I don't want that name

Aunt: Didn't you dreamt someone calling you that?

Me: Well yes but I don't want to know my past life anymore

Her:But you're married in your past life

I looked at my ring

Athi:And you still wear the ring

Me:I don't know why a part of me doesn't want to get it off

Her:Bcz those people need you

Me:Need me? They left me to die

Her:Maybe you were mugged

Me:And ruined my face

Athi:Amanda...

Me:No Athi...I don't want to know it

Aunt: What if you had a family? What if you had kids?

Me:Can we drop this? We got bigger things to worry about.

I set down

Athi:Stop ignoring the fact one day you'll remember them

Me:The Doctor said my head hit the rock pretty hard,I may have amnesia for eternity

Aunt:You would love that?

Me:So

Athi set next to me

Him:You know I love you I will never let anything bad happen to you.Just let yourself remember for the best

Me: They didn't look for me

Aunt:Maybe they did who knows.When we found you Amanda you.....

Me:I was like a beast say it

Her:Don't say that.Look at you now,you're beautiful

Me: What will happen if I remember?

Athi:You will get your life back

Me:How? As Paige or Amanda?

Her:Whoever you want

•

•

•

(Flashbacks) - 3 years ago -

Why I keep seeing this man in my dreams who is he?

Aunt: Paige my baby can you get me milk and few groceries we've ran out

Me:Yes Aunty

I took some money in out pot on top of a fridge.That's how we save.After that I went to the mall.I walked in then I saw the man in my dreams. He was walking with a lady and a baby girl.I want to know my past I want to know who am I? I'm going to this man.I ran to them I tapped his shoulder he quickly turned.It's him it's him my mystery man

Him:How can I help you?

My excitement fade. He doesn't know me

Him:Lady can I help you?

Woman:Baby who's this?

He doesn't know me.My heart sank I couldn't hold my tears they fail me.

Girl:Daddy who's this?

Him:I don't know sweety let's go

I didn't say a word I was just shocked. I look at the little girl.I felt like I know her but from where?

Him:Get away here

They getting rid of me bcz I was becoming weird

Woman:Peter let's go leave her

Him:Why's she's looking at me like that?

Her:We're getting late

Girl:Yes Daddy

They hop in the car.I was still looking at them confused. The only person I'm able to see is that guy in my dreams. Who am I really? Why that guy seems like I know him and that girl too. I cried. My heart is

broken.Will I know who am I? Was I even important to my previous family well if I had one.Why they never look for me

•

•

•

(Present time) - 5 years later -

I remember everything

"Your head is miles away"

Me:Hy

Athi:What are you thinking about

Me:Life

Him:And that guy

Me:That guy is my husband

Him:Oh

Me:Athi pls

Him:What? I mean you're right

Me:You know I love you like a brother

Him: But you're not

Me: You're making this so difficult more than it is

Him:By loving you?

Me: You don't know me

Him:I know Amanda

Me:You're confusing me Athi.You and Aunty were pressuring me to remember,now I do you want me to forget

Him:I don't want that I want you to love me

Me:I'm married

Him:What if he already moved on?

Me: I'm expecting that. But nothing ,and I mean nothing will replace me in his heart and nothing can replace him in mine

Him:I'm sorry

He left.Athi I'm sorry but I can't love you while I'm still deeply in love with someone else although I'm

someone else on the outside.I want my kids and I'll do anything in my power to be with them and get my revenge. That woman will surfer every tear I shared begging her to not hurt me and think of my kids. I will expose her who she is,I'll dig deep on her secrets.She will never know what hit her.The whole world will know that witch.And I'll be with my kids

"Ready?"

Me:Aunty?

Her:Ready?

I smiled

Me:I was born ready

Her:Ok I got the best cover for you

Me:What is it

Her:Peter Jackson your husband is looking for a Nanny for his kids

Me:Aunty?

Her:You'll be their Nanny that way you can be close to your kids everyday

Me:Well it's good

Her:And you have to stay in

Me:But I can't

Her:You can.First thing tomorrow you're moving in with them

Me:I haven't asked for the job

Her: I did everything

Me:Thanks Aunty

Her:What's better is that Peter lives with his family now

Me:Even better

Her:Jackpot

We laughed

"You'll go crazy with this revenge"

Me:Oh hey Uncle

Him: I didn't help you to be like this Amanda

Me: But this involves my kids who I left on their birth day.I'll lose a leg for them

Him:Be careful

Me: I will and with this face,They wouldn't know what hit them.Surgery is good

We laughed

•

•

•

Welcome to season2

[12/22, 12:40] Lynne: Season 2

×•••× 02 ×•••×

•

•

•

Today I'm starting my job I'm over excited.I will see my beautiful boys I can't wait

Me:Athi! I'm done

I said walking to the lounge with my bags.He was standing by the door looking at me

Me:What?

Him:Nothing walk out I need to lock up

I walked pass him he grabbed my arm

Him:You will regret this

Me:I would hate to be late on my first day Athi

He looked at my lips I looked away

Me:Lock up

I yanked my arm we walked out with my begs.His parents were at work.He helped me with the bags then we got into the car

Him:This is it

Me:Yep

He drove off.I'm thinking about Peter when I see him,I should act normal,I should not break down, I should not want to run to his arms.

Him:Will you visit?

Me:I'll see

Him:Mmm

The drive was silent to the Jackson household

Him:We arrived

Me: I came here once and it's all different well it was years ago

Him:Let's go

Me:No no I go alone

Him:Fine

We walked out of the car we took the bags out

Him:Be careful ok?

Me:I will thank you

We hugged.

Him:Bye

Me:Bye

He left I went to the gate I press the button the gate opened up one of the guards helped me with the bags

Me:Oh thank you

We walked to the door he put the bags then left. I

knocked a little girl opened up

Her:Can I help you?

Then a woman came

"Sweety who's there?"

She looked at me.Noway Kelly?

Her:Can we help you Miss?

And she's being nice

Me:Hhhh...hy my name is Amanda...Amanda Keighley

Her:Oh the Nanny come on in

She helped me with the bags

WOW! Is she okay?

Me:Thanks Ma'am

Her:Miss I'm not married,well not yet

We got in.Wow it's so beautiful it's nothing like how I first saw it

Kelly:Pls come and sit I'll ask the maid to get you something to drink I was on my way out

Me:Thanks

She's being too nice that's unlike her is she with Peter?I don't care I want to see my kids

The maid came

Me:I'd like water pls

She went to the kitchen then came back

Me: Thank you

I just set there someone walked in I looked at the door.Two little boys walked in running my heart almost beat out of my chest."my babies,I know it's them" Then a man walked in holding another boy,he closed the door he turned my way."Oh no"

Him: Hy

Me: H...hy

I swallowed my saliva we handshake

Him:You must be Amanda right?

Me:Yes...yes

I looked at the boys who were playing around they

looked so cute

Him:Let's seat and talk pls but I'll put him to bed first okay?

Me: Yes

OMG! i wanted to cry.I saw my kids they look so big, beautiful and cute and happy.I want to hug them and kiss them all over their cute faces.Plus I saw Peter with them he looked so cute.I haven't seen him in years and seeing him with the kids seeming they had fun,it makes my heart warm.The boys disappeared on the house Peter came back he set down

Him:Oh I'm Peter sorry to be rude

Me:It's okay I'll call you Sir anyway

I laughed he looked at me

Me:I'm sorry

Him:No I'm sorry it's just your...your laughter reminds me of someone

Me:Oh

I faked a smile 'You can't blow your cover like that

now Paige'

Him:It's okay it's a great memory she...she was the woman of my dreams

"Was"? Is he with someone else? Who replaced me? Even if he did it's okay I'm cool.I'm here for my kids and my revenge.I knew he would have already moved on

Him:Anyway here is a timetable for your work

I took it

Him:That shows what you need to do with the kids and when. I hope you're fit enough your Aunt recommended you so much

Me:Yes I am fit enough

That snob Paige is gone.Aunty taught me so much

Him:Oh and your salary...

Me: Whatever you pay me I'll take it

Him:Oh wow I'm happy with that,Let me give you a tour then meet the kids

Me:Ok

Him:We'll take the bags later

Me:Ok

He showed me around, the garden, pool,bedrooms,kids bedrooms and everything else

Me:You have a wonderful home

Him:My parents love it old fashioned though

Me:It's classy I love it

Him:Yah...let me show you your room

We went downstairs on the right side,he opened the first door

Me:Wow

Him:I guess you will be comfortable

This is too much for a Nanny,the room has everything

Him:But I'm sorry you got one bathroom with other employees

Me:It doesn't matter I'm also an employee

Him:Ok let's go meet the kids

We went upstairs to their room.He opened up

Him:Attention boys,say hello to Miss Amanda she will be your Nanny

Them:Hey Miss Amanda

They sounded so cute I wanted to hug them so much

Me:Hey boys

Him:It might be difficult for you to know who is who and trust me I still get confused.But boys you won't give the lady a hard time right? Don't do that switch up again or I'm never taking you out again

Them:Yes Dad

I wanted to kiss the hell out of him bcz he's an amazing father

Him:Ok so that is Klein

He came forward

Him:He's the shy one you won't mistake him

Me:Ok

Him:Next,that is Kleb.He's the energetic one

Me:Ok

Him:And Kris, he's energetic too but he also loves to look good and trust me it's annoying.He hates being dirty

Guess he took that from his Momma

Me:Got it

His phone rang

Him:Just have a chat with them I gotta get this

He walked out.I was left with the kids,no one said anything I didn't know what to say.

Me:So do you go to school?

I set at the little chair next to them

Kris:Yes

Me:Oh how is school?

Kleb: It's fun we play the whole day

Kris:And we sing

Me:Oh sounds like a lot of fun.I also love to sing and

dance

Them:Really?

They looked excited

Me:Yes a lot and if we get along together we might dance and sing together

Them: Yeey

Me:Why he's so quiet? Hey you're Klein right?

He looked at me then nodded

Kris: He doesn't usually talks

Me:Oh maybe he likes he's own space.Don't you like your own space guys? When you don't feel like playing or singing?

Them:Yes

Me:Yes that's how Klein feels but he'll be okay right Klein?

He nodded. I don't like this what happened to my boy?I need answers

Me:Come on let's hug it out,group hug

We all hugged, and bcz I wanted to hug my babies

Me:There.How are you feeling now Klein?

He smiled

Me:There's a smile

"You're good with them"

Peter walked in I stood up

Me:I tried a little something

Him:That little something worked

Me:Yah

"Daddy we're hungry"

Him:Amanda will make you something. Next time you want something and anything ask Miss Amanda she'll help you

Them: Yes Dad

Him:let me show you to the kitchen

We walked out

Him:Oh and they are allergic to peanuts avoid anything with peanuts

Me:Yes Sir,any other allergies?

Him: No but here is their cardboard, you use these ingredients here only you may use salt and sugar from that one but here is their food

Me:Yes Sir

Him:Oh and I have a Daughter almost their age but older she is also mine.Pls when she's around treat her like others

Me:Yes Sir

Him:I'm leaving now when my Mother ask about me tell her I went out with Nicole okay?

"Nicole" PSH

Me:Yes Sir

Him:Ok bye

Me:Bye Sir

Him:Oh we have 2 maids here you won't do maids stuff you're here to assist my kids only

Me:Yes Sir

He left in a hurry, for "Nicole". But I thought he's with Kelly.But anyway I made sandwiches for the boys then went to them

Me: Your food is ready let's go downstairs

They ran out

Me:No running you might get hurt

Klein walked out. What happened to my son? Why he's so shy and down? I don't like it ,that will make his childhood hard.Anyway they went to sit down on their matt I gave them sandwiches and juice.Kleb took out all the green stuff

Me:What are you doing?

Him: I don't like this and this

Me:That's cucumber and pickle try them they're really good

Him: No

Me:We were going to dance and sing after this but then oh well...

He looked at me with those small eyes then he ate

the cucumber. His facial expression changed he was like he's eating a lemon or something.I wanted to laugh but I held my laughter

Me: It's nice

He shook his head closing his eyes

Me:It is nice

My phone rang

Me:I'll be right back

I took my phone off my pocket jeans

Me:Hello Aunty

Her:How is everything going I'm worried

Me:Fine Aunty

Her:Have you seen that witch?

Me:No not yet

Her:Do not let your emotions get over you okay?

Me:Yes Aunty

Her:Bye

Me:Bye

I dropped the call then went to the kids

Me: That's it you're doing good

Klein was not even eating

Me:Klein what's wrong?

Him:I'm not hungry

Me:Try a bite

I made it with love my baby.The others were done I wiped their mouths

Me:Go to your rooms I'll be right there ok

They ran off

Me: No running kids

I was left with Klein

Me:What's wrong tell me I won't tell anyone it will be our little secret

Him: I don't like this house

Me:You don't? Why?

He didn't say any further

Me:Come here

He set on top of my leg

Me: You're whole family is here you should be happy. Your father, brothers, Grandfather,Grandmother, Uncles and Aunts everyone you love. And now I'm here too I'll be part of your life too okay?

He nodded

Me:Every time you need something or someone come to me okay? Anytime come to me okay?

He nodded

Me: Ok let's hug it out

We hugged

Me:There we go now you need to eat

He smiled and ate.My son didn't just became like this I need to know what got into him. No child is normal like this.

•

•

•

Time went by to a night time.They already ate dinner so is everyone else and I haven't seen "Grandmother".Anyway I'm bathing the boys they are having fun while playing with water

Me:Ok it's time to get out

They all got out I wrap towels to them then I dried them.I lotion then then made them wore PJs. They brushed their teeth I was helping there and there.

Me:So you're done now bed time

They ran to bed even Klein is Happy my heart is jumping.

Me:There we go

Kris:Pls read us a story

So those three boys prepared me for this moment how cute

Me:Okay

I took a book and read them a story.After I was done

I kissed their foreheads then left.I walked downstairs Peter was drinking

Me:Oh Sir I didn't see you there.Uhm I just put the kids to bed

Him:Thanks

Me:Goodnight

Him:I wish it was but goodnight to you too Amanda

He's drinking which I never seen him do when we were together oh wait,that was years ago maybe he's changed. I went to my bedroom.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:41] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 03 ×•••×

•

•

•

I woke up early and took a bath then look at my schedule

Me:Ok good it won't be hard at all bcz they are going to school after school I fetch them with Elle? Elle? oh it's Kelly's daughter. Ok then I come back home I must not make any stops or anything I should take them straight back home. This is easy but being with my kids means a lot.

I went to their bedroom I made the bath for them

Me:Wake up boys

I woke them up then took them to the bathtub they were so tired it broke my heart I don't want them to go plus they look tired they should rest they're so young.

Me:Ohk done

I took them out then dried them

"I'm cold"

Me: This hurts me more than you babies I got no choice, come let's get ready for school

We went to the bedroom I lotion them

Me: There we go

I took their uniform

"I have my own uniform"

Me:Mmm?

Him:I have my own uniform

Me:I heard that but what do you mean by that?

"He means he wears his own uniform, his name is written on the hanger"

Peter said walking in

Him:Morning

Me:Morning Sir

Him:Let me see

He took the hangers

Him:Here that is his see this?

I saw his name

Me:Kris

Him:Yes that's his

He helped him wear

Me:You shouldn't have

Him:It's ok

I dressed others

Me:Why he does that?

He laughed

Him:You know how we get in our new clothes

I laughed so hard.So his uniform is new that's why.They all looked at me

Me:I'm sorry

Him:You don't want to make him cry right?

Me:I'm so sorry it's just,a little funny

He faked a smile

Me:I'm really sorry

Him:No it's okay it's just,your laughter

Me:Oh it reminds you of someone again?

He smiled

Him:Yah

Aw! I wanted to cry.

Him:Oh well you're done boys

Me:I'll make breakfast for them

Him:Cereal

Me:Okay

We walked out.I made them cereal while the maids were busy making breakfast for everyone

"Your job is easy than ours"

Me:I love doing it too

"They are easy children you know,they are easy to be around with"

Me:Yah

I went to the kids

Me:There now eat

They ate up I heard a knock I went to open.Guess who I saw at the door

"Will you let me in or stare at me?"

She walked in pushing me

Me:Sorry Ma'am but you can't walk in like that who are you?

Her:I should be asking you that in my house..

"What do you want you evil woman?"

Finally someone noticed.So the witch doesn't live here?

P.Dad:Pls excuse us

Me:Yes

I went to the kids

Me:I'll get your bags upstairs ok?

I left them I went upstairs

"Ohhhhlala what do we have here?"

It's Ben Peter's little brother

Me:Morning Sir

I walked pass him he held my arm

Him: At least your name beautiful

Me;Amanda Sir

Oh this guy with girls

Him:Cute name

Me:I got a job to do sorry Sir

Him:Hey what do you do it's my first time seeing you here

Me: I'm the Nanny for the kids

Him:Hmmm for my nephew's. So you will be around for a while

Oh God

"Leave her alone Ben,you may go Amanda"

Me:Yes Sir

Peter saved me hoooo the horror.I took their back bag packs then walked to them

Me:Great then take your bags

"The chauffeur is right outside ready for you guys"

Me: Yes Sir

"Who's this?"

His Mother asked

Peter:The Nanny for my kids

Her:Couldn't you take an older person these girls are snobs

She will forever hate me

Peter: No thank you besides Amanda gets very well with them

Her:Oh whatever... is my room ready?

P.Dad:What room?

Ok I should go but this topic is interesting

Me:Say goodbye to Daddy now kids

They said their goodbye's the other couple was arguing.We walked out we went to the car we got in

Me:Ok so aren't you excited

Them:Yah

Me:Great

Let's go now driver pls

•

•

•

After I dropped them to school the car took me back to the house.I got in 'Oh would you look at that,that witch is relaxed here like nothing happened is she that dark inside. Well it was years ago she got over it now '

Her:What?

She said annoyed bcz I was starring too much

Me:Sorry Ma'am it's just I love the way you dress

Her:Really? Oh thanks actually I can give you tips and get rid of those jeans

I laughed she faked a smile I guess she also got the same feeling, she deserves it way more WITCH!

Me:I'm sorry if that was too much

Her: Just leave my site pls

Me: Yes

I went to the kids room I tidied everything then look at their pictures. They look so cute even Elle Kelly's

daughter looks like them.I looked at them crying. Look at this whole time I lost,I wasn't unable to breast feed them,hear their first words, saw their first steps,watch them going to their first day at school or anything else.It was all stole from me,I have nothing now I got nothing to lose but that witch does.I swear on that day I almost died she'll pay

"Trrr trrr"

Arg my phone disturbed me I wiped my tears

Me:Hello

"Amanda? Have you been crying?"

Me:Oh Athi hy

Him:Did something happened?

Me:No I'm okay

Him:I was checking up on you

Me:I'm fine stop stressing

Him:Have you met the guy?

Me: Yes bcz he's my boss stop this jealousy my God

Him:I'm not jealous

Me: Bye Athi

Him:Am...

I dropped the call. I can't deal with jealousy at all at this moment. I walked to my room

"Stop calling me"

That's that witches voice

"Yah yah I know but I'll give you your money"

She's whispering on some corner

"Meet me at the usual place Tomorrow at 12"

....

"Yah whatever bye"

She walked out I carried on walking she looked at me

Her:Do you even eat looking that skinny

I didn't answer her I went to my room.My phone rang AGAIN!

Me:Aunty

Her:Precious how are you doing bcz I can imagine you're tired

Me:I am tired Aunty I need a nap

Her:Ok I should stop bothering you bye

Me: Bye

I dropped the call I closed my eyes finally!

•

•

•

I woke up at 11.Good I didn't wake up late I went to freshen up then went to the kitchen to get a glass of water, I found the maids there.

Me:Hey

Them:Hey

"Oh now we'll have those days the Mother of the house is back"

I listened to their conversation

"The Boss still loves her no doubt but she can't stand

one man"

Ohhh that was cold

"And that man she cheated with broke this family apart and those in-laws"

In-laws? What in-laws?

Me:Excuse me,I couldn't help but ears drop on your conversation but what do you mean by the in-laws.

"The Lady of the house cheated with Mr Peters wife may her soul rest in peace, with Mr Peters wife's father"

My heart almost stopped

Me:What?

"Yah that's why she was kicked out now she's back"

That witch was sleeping with my Dad,my Dad was cheating with that Witch

Me: And the in-laws what happened to them?

"We don't know but I don't think they were in good terms too"

Oh my God

Me:Oh excuse me

I went to my room I called Aunty

Her: Amanda

Me:I need a huge favour

Her:Sure

Me:I want you to check on my family I want to know what happened to them

Her:But we can't involve them

Me:They are already involved

Her:What do you mean?

Me:My Dad was having an affair with the Witch

Her:Oh my God

Me: Yes pls just be my eyes

Her:Fine fine anything for you I'll try getting out early at work

Me:Thank you

I dropped the call. That woman ruined every single memory of me but messing with my family is another story she'll pay for that.Time hit 1o'Clock I should go and fetch kids from school.I went to the door Kelly walked in with them the kids got in running with Elle too

Me:No running

Kelly: They won't listen girl,oh can you help me out pls

She was carrying two big pink bags

Her:Oh my back is hurting

I helped her out

Her: Peter is not around?

Me:Yes,uhm why are the kids here?

Her:I took them from school since I was taking Elle I'm leaving

Me:Leaving?

She looked at me

Her:Why do you want to know?

Me:I'm sorry ...

Her:Come here it's okay let me tell you a little secret come I don't have friends here.

She took my hand we set down

Her:I'm going on a vacation

Me: Oh

Her:Yah so Elle's father wanted Elle to stay with them for the whole week so since I'm alone I'll take the advantage of going out with that hottie of mine

I faked a smile

Her: Wanna see him? Here

She showed me a picture of this guy shirtless and Wow

Me:Wow he's..

She took her phone

Her:No no no drooling he's taken

When was the last time I've seen a man shirtless in front of me?

"What's going on here?"

It was "The Boss" I quickly got up

Me:Uhm Sir..

Kelly: Oh Peter leave the girl alone I was just showing her this

She showed him

Him:Thats disgusting Kelly grow up already and find a descent guy

Kelly: Is Nicole descent?

Him: I won't argue with you

Her:Pls don't bcz I will spill everything you did these past few years

Oh what did he do???? tell me!!!!!!!

Him:Aren't you done yet?

Her:Yep bye bye Amanda

Me:Bye

She went to hug Elle then walked out

Peter:Next time don't let her distract you

Me:Yes Sir

I went to make the kids something to eat

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I went to my room i need to relax.my phone rang,can't I have peace around here? I took it

Me:Why is Nick doing a video call?

I answered

Me:Video call really?

Him:I wanted to see if you're home or not and yes you are I'm coming

Me:Is that my backyard, Nick!!!

I heard the door bell

Me:I hate you man

Him:Bye

He dropped the call I guess he was attended. A few minutes later he walked in with Amanda

Him:Oh thank you Miss

Her:You're welcome Sir

She left he closed the door blushing

Him:Dude you got real stuff here

Me:She's the Nanny and you're engaged

Him:Oh she's driving me nuts

Me:And she better not stop why you're here?

Him:Running away from my Fiancé now that she's pregnant she won't let me be,she wants her feet massaged, her back massaged,made food I don't watch TV anymore she wants it all to herself I'm bored there

Me:When Paige...

Him:You said you will never bring her up again

Me:Oh yah I ...I can't Nick,I just can't

Him:Man it's been 5 years without her she's never

coming back

Me:I know but I just wish she could

Him:I know dude you were miserable after her death you even lost it

Me: I didn't lose my mind

Him: You were seeing her in your dreams every night as if she was here

Me:It showed how much I missed her I wasn't losing my mind.

Him:Have you dreamt of her now?

Me:No

Him:Oh congratulations man

Me:Bcz I sleep with a bottle

Him:Man you'll kill yourself you got kids to think of

Me:I won't kill myself

Him:How do you drink yourself to sleep then go work the next day?

Me: I won't answer that

Him: You drink again obviously, dude stop

Me:Don't lecture me Nick

Him:You probably drunk now

Me: I'm not drunk

Him:Stop killing yourself

The kids walked in running

Me:What did I say about running?

Elle: Sorry Daddy but someone is here for you

Me: I'm coming

They left

Me:Let's go and stop lecturing me

Him:Stop drinking

Me:Shut up

We went downstairs I saw...

Nick:Nicole

He went to hug her why she's here? Amanda was playing with Klein

Me:Nicole

Her: Hey baby

She hugged me

Me:What are you doing here?

Her:To come and see you

She went to sit down

Nick:Trouble

Me:Shhh

We went to sit down

Amanda:Pls excuse us

Me;No stay don't leave

Nicole: Who's her?

Me:The Nanny for my kids

Her:Hmmm

She looked away

Her:How old are you, Amanda

Amanda: 25 Miss

Her:Ohhh single?

Me:Nicole!

Her;What?

Amanda: No no I'm with someone

She smiled

Her: Oh hear that Peter she's taken

Me: I'm sorry but will you excuse us Amanda?

Her: Yes sure

She took Klein then left

Me: What are you trying to prove Nicole?

Her:That she better not step in my toes

Me: A Nanny? Really?

Her:With you I never know

Me:Wow

Nick:Calm down bro

Me:Why are you still here

Him:I couldn't let you stay here alone just imagine

Me:Oh God

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I went to my room I was laughing Klein was telling me about school and showing me his dance moves from school

Me:Ohhhhhh what's that one called

Him:I don't know

Me: You don't know but I love it

He bowed

Him:Thank you

I applaud him standing up

Me:Whoooo Klein Klein

We laughed

Me:That was amazing

We hugged

Him:Thank you

Me:You should dance

He smiled

Him:You dance

Me:Me?

He nodded his head

Me:Oh I can't dance at all

•

•

•

Time went by I was putting the kids to bed

Me:Night now kids

I kiss them all goodnight then left,I walked downstairs I saw Peter drinking again and now he was drunk

Me:Sir you need to sleep

I took the glass away from him

Him:I can't drink in peace either in this house

Me:It's late everybody is asleep

Him:Not you bcz you're disturbing me

Me:Sir you got work tomorrow

Him:I know and I got issues either

Me:You need to sleep

Him:You're right

He got up balancing

Me:Can I help you?

Him:No you go rest

Me:Ok goodnight Sir

Him:Goodnight Amanda

I went to sleep

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:41] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 04 ×•••×

•

•

•

Today I'm following Peters Mom no matter what if Peter won't let me go out for a little while I'll sneak out I'm here for revenge not anything and this is my time. My phone rang

Me:Aunty

Her:I got news but I don't know whether they are good or bad

Me:Say it pls

Her:Your parents slipt up

I breathed out

Me: I was expecting that

Her:So?

Me:Nothing Aunty there's nothing I can do

Her:I'm sorry honey

Me:Its ok thanks.I gotta go

Her:Bye

I dropped the call.I took my toiletries then went to take the shower after a few minutes I walked out I went to my room but I bump into Peter

Me:Sir I'm... so so sorry

Him:No it's my fault

Me:I better go

Him:Yah

We walked away

Me:Uhm Sir

Him:Yes

Me:I'd like to buy few stuff for the kids today

Him:I'll give you my card

Me:Ok Sir

I rash to my room. Sheeesh thank God my towel didn't fall,besides he wouldn't see something he

never saw before right? Anyway I did my hygiene process and the kids

Me:Let's go eat breakfast now

We all went downstairs I made them cereal the family was eating breakfast my eyes are on that witch.

"We're done"

Me:Great.Take your bags

We all went to the car we drove to school with them talking none stop.

Me:We arrived

We walked out

Me:Give me a kiss

They looked at each other

Me:Boys?

Elle kissed me then left

Me:Boys?

"But other kids will laugh at us"

Me:Laugh at you noway

I kissed their cheeks they wiped their cheeks

Me:Wow

Them:Bye

They ran off.Yesterday they didn't mind giving me a kiss maybe it's bcz we were in the car

Me:Bye

I went back to the car the driver drove me back to the house.I got in

Peter:Here is the card

I took it

Him:Buy anything for them and here is the pin

He gave me a paper

Him:I'm off to work

He left I looked at the pin it's our wedding year,awwww that's so cute.I saw the witch walking out I gotta act I followed after her

"Going somewhere Miss?"

Me:Uhm yah but can you keep a secret?

Him:No

Me: Oh what's your name?

Him:Alex

Me:So ...Alex listen I beg you follow that car

Him:The Boss?

No the witch

Me:Yes pls

Him:Why?

Me:She's getting away pls

Him:But Mr Peter ordered...

Me:Yes he ordered you to take me anywhere I want right?

Him:Well yes

Me: Shall I call him?

Him;You want me to spy on the Boss which is wrong

Me:Pretty pls

Him: But

Me:She's leaving pls

Him:You owe me

Me:Yes yes

We got in he followed

Me:She must not see you

Him:Okay

He followed

Him:This is fun

Me:I know right

We laughed

Him:Anyway why you're following her?

Me:Ahhhh

Him:You don't like her too?

Me:Uhmmm yah

Him:Thank God I'm not the only one

Phewww

Me:Why do you hate her?

Him:Uhmmm...Why do you hate her?

Me:Uhm I won't answer that

Him:Me two

Me: Good

We followed her for hours

Me:This is boring now

Him:Just hang on

Me:For how much longer though?

She pulled over on a house

Me:Don't stop go far a little

He did then we stopped few houses away

Me:Would you look at that

I wrote down the address.She got out of the car she went to the house

Alex: We are not waiting are we?

Me:Yes we are

Him:Oh come on

Me:Can you chill

Him:Who are you?

He looked at me

Me:What do you mean?

Him:You just showed up out of nowhere and spying on the Boss

Me:Can we focus on the bigger picture here?

Him: No no we won't.What do you have against that woman? Are you one of her victims I mean ..

Me:Victims? What do you know huh?

Him:N...Nothing

Me:Oh it didn't sound like nothing

He looked away

Me:You already sold yourself,Alex

Him:Here she comes

I looked at the window

Me:She's alone

Him:See there's nothing to see here

Me:We are coming back here tomorrow

Him:Hell no

Me: Hell yes or you'll tell me about the "Victims" you know

He looked at me

Me:Go she left

Him:Who are you?

Me:Drive

He looked at me then drove

Me:Go to the mall i gotta buy few stuff

Him: Sure

•

•

•

We drove home

Him:Ok I'll tell you what I know

Me:Go ahead

Him:Until you tell me what do you want from her

Me:Forget it

I opened the door then left I got in the house with the bags I put everything where it suppose to be.I saw the witch going upstairs with papers I wonder what's in there.She came back

Her:Hey you girly make sure no one goes to my bedroom keep this

She gave me the keys,the KEYS y'all

Me;Yes Ma'am

She left.Oh would you look at that Paige a big opportunity for you.After she left I walked upstairs I checked the coast and no one was around I can't miss this opportunity.I went to her room I unlocked

Me: Bingo

I got in then closed the door. I looked for the papers

Me: Where are they

I looked at the drawers I didn't find anything.Oh this old woman is good.I looked under mattress and NOTHING! I tried the dresser drawers and BAMM!

Me:Got it

I paged them.

Me:Oh my God

It's papers of the business saying she takes over...

Me:Everything

Oh no Peter nor Peters father must sign this

I put them back again then walked out.She wants to take the company, and she won't succeed.I looked at time

Me:Time to take the kids from school

I walked downstairs then to the door

Me:Alex

He looked at me annoyed

Him:Let's go

We got in the car my phone rang it was Athi

Me: Oh God

I answered

Me:This better not end with a fight

Him:Amanda I'm sorry but can I meet you?

Me:Meet me for what?

Him:I need to talk to you

Me:About what?

Him:Pls

Me:It better not end with a fight

Him: It won't I promise

Me:Ok when and where?

Him:I'll call you later

Me:Sure

I dropped the call

Alex:Your boyfriend?

Me:No now can you drive and leave me alone

Him:Okay

•

•

•

Anyway now we at home I made the kids something to eat

Me:So how was school?

"Amazing"

Me: You're Kris right?

Him:No Kleb

Me: I'll try don't worry

The witch walked in

Her:Hey you my keys

Me:Yes sure

I gave her she left.

•

Time went by I played with the kids but Peter and his Father haven't come back from work.

Klein: Can we have ice cream?

Them:Yes yes yes!

Me: But ...

Them:Pls!!!

Me: Ok ok I'll be right back

I went to the kitchen I did ice cream for them

"How did today go today?"

Peter was behind me

Me:Oh hey Sir and uhm it went well here is your card

I gave him

Him:Thanks

"Sir your Mother is calling you at the study"

Him:I'm tired can't it wait?

"She said you'll be quick"

Him:Ok I'm coming

"Yes Sir"

I took the bowls or ice cream

Him:Can I help

Me:Sure

We gave the kids

Me:Don't you want something to drink?

Him:Juice pls

Me:Ok

Him:I'll be in the study

Me:Sure

I took glasses and the juice I went to the study

P.Mom: Just sign nothing much

Not on my watch he's signing that

Me:Here's your drink Sir...

I spilt it all over the papers not by mistake though

Me: Oh no

Her:You stupid girl!!!

Peter got up quickly his pants were a little wet

Me:I'm so sorry

Her: You're stupid arggg!

I faked tears

Me:I don't know what happened

Peter: Mom stop yelling at her.I'm sorry Amanda don't cry

He brushed my arm I sniffed

Her:Where will I get these again oh sweet Lord

Peter: Mom just go to sleep I'm also tired

Her:My papers

Me and Peter walked out

Me: I feel so bad I'm clumsy

Him:It's okay don't worry just go to sleep too it's late I'll put the kids to bad

Me:Yes Sir

Him:Kids bed time

They ran to us

Them:Bye Miss Amanda

Me:Bye kids

I went to take a shower then wore my night dress then read a book. I got a message

Go out I'm outside

It was from Athi.I word my slippers then walked out

Me: At this time?

Him:Hey

Me:So?

Him:I wanted to apologise to you

Me: Are you being sincere?

Him:Yes I am

Me:I blv you bcz I got no choice

Him:A hug?

Me:Sure

We hugged then pulled out

Him:I miss you

Me: For teasing me for sure

Him:No ofcause not

I looked at him

Him:Ok maybe a little

We laughed

Him:But I miss one thing more

Me:What is that?

He grabbed my figure

Me: Athi stop this

Him: You just so hard to resist

His meant breath oh God

Me:No no

He smash lips against mine it was wrong but felt sooooo good.His hand squeezed my butt I let out a little moan...

We heard someone clearing their threat. I turned faster than wind

Me:Sir

How can you be so naughty Paige your husband

caught you.

Him:I don't like people sneaking out.Say your goodbyes and go back inside

He walked away

Me:You knew he saw us you did it on purpose

Him:Amanda...

Me:Bye Athi

I walked after Peter.I feel so embarrassed,your husband caught you with a guy making out. I mean it's not my fault I haven't felt a man's touch for years,I'm a little desperate.We got inside

Him:I don't like what I saw

Me:I'm sorry

Him:You can meet your boyfriend but not like that

Me:I'm so sorry

Him:Plus that's too short

He laughed.It's a night dress duhhhh

Me:I'm sorry

Wait why he's laughing did he see my ass? Its nothing new even if he did right

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:41] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 05 ×•••×

•

•

•

I heard a knock on my door.Who must that be at this time? I rash to the door sleepy asf,I opened up

Me:Sir?

Him: Hy...I got a call from the school the kids won't be going to school today

Me:Yes Sir

Him:Okay

He left.Okay so I can sleep a little bit,I went back to

my covers I closed my eyes while I thought this is it. The boys ran inside and with Elle

Me:What...What are you doing?

They got under my covers

Elle:We wanna sleep with you

Me:Aw okay let's all cuddle

I slept in the middle we all slept.This is the most beautiful thing ever,sleeping with your kids it's so powerful. We slept the for few hours then I woke them up

Me:Babies wake up now

"But we are not going to school"

Me:Yes but you can't sleep the whole day either now get up you need to brush your teeth

Them:Okay

Me:Let's go

I carried one of them

"But you used to carry me"

Me:You're Klein?

Him:Yes

Me:You're all look alike when you're all together I'm sorry.You don't mind me carrying Klein right?

"No"

Me:Okay

I put him down I took Klein he giggled I kissed his cheek

"What are you doing spoiling these brats,they'll end up being spoiled and you won't be here to nursery them"

Me:I'm just doing my job Ma'am

What is this witches problem

Her:They better not end up spoiled

My job is to look after the kids I won't entertain her nonsense and these are my kids I'm never letting them go ever again.We all walked up the stairs

Me:Okay kids it's time to brush your teeth

We walked in their room then to their bathroom I helped them wash their teeth

Me:They must be spooky clean I want to see my reflection

Them:Nooo

Me:Yes so you better start brushing

They were brushing their teeth I made bathtub ready

Me: Hurry up the water will get cold

Elle:I'm done

Me:Let me see those teeth first

She showed me

Me:Good good now in the bathtub,everyone

They got in I helped them bath my cellphone rang

Me:I'm coming back keep on bathing

I went to the bedroom

Me:Aunty

Her:I think you should move out of that house

Me:Why?

Her: What I've heard about that woman is beyond your power

Me:Aunty you're not making sense

Her:That woman my child...she...

Me:Aunty she what?

Her:She is mixed up with dangerous people my child

Me:I'm also a dangerous people I don't care

Her:You're alone in that house what if she...she finds out

Me: She won't find out bcz my name is Amanda and I have Amanda's face

Her: Amanda I feel scared for you

Me:I will never leave my kids too Aunty

Her:Amanda...

Me:Bye Aunty

I dropped the call then went back to the kids

Me:You're done now

I got them out then dried them.I think I should scare the old lady a bit just to give him a freight of her life.

Me: Okay kids I'll be right back okay just lotion

I took them to the bedroom then rash downstairs to my room.I took a peace of paper I wrote (I know what you did to your daughter in-law) I made sure it's not my hand writing then I went to take the mail outside then went inside with it with my letter there too.

Me:Ma'am the mail

Her:Okay

I did everything perfectly I even wrote her name.She checked the mails that have her name,I made it more frightening by not putting it on an envelop. I got busy in the kitchen a little but my eye was on her.She read it her face was PRICELESS,priceless I tell you.She looked around then looked back to the letter.I walked pass him

Her:Hey you

Me:Yes Ma'am?

Her:This letter has no address or anything did you saw something putting it bcz no Mail man will drop this

Me: I'm sorry Ma'am but I didn't see anyone

Her:Oh

She was sweating poor thing I went back to the kids.That will make her head straight.

Me:Ok kids are you done?

Them: Yes

I made them wore their clothes

Me:There...y'all look so cute

They went to play I fixed the room.

•

•

•Time pass by fast it was now late.And I want to do something shocking I called my Aunty

Me:Aunty

Her: What is it baby?

Me:I need you to do me a big favour

Her:Name it

Me:Scare the witch for me

Her:Why?

Me:Why?

Her:Ok ok how?

Me:Since I've already done my part....

Her:What part?

Me:I sent her a note

Her:What was is saying?

Me:That I know what she did to her daughter in-law

Her:That's great why wasn't i informed?

Me:She just pissed me off talking shit about my kids

Her:Ok what can I do?

Me:Call her

Her:Call her? With my phone?

Me:I watch movies Aunty and no.You'll use a another

sim card or something

Her:Ooohkay

Me: When you do put a cloth on your speaker so she can not hear your real voice

Her: I've seen people in movies do that

Me:Awesome but when your done destroy the sim card

Her:Okay but what will I say?

Me:I don't know

Her:What do you mean you don't know?

Me:Because I don't

Her:Paige?

Me:Ok ok okay just scare her

Her:What should I say?

Me:Oh my God.You said she's involved with dangerous ppl right?

Her:Yah

Me:Use that

Her:I have an idea

Me:Yah use that.At 7 tonight

Her: Why at that time?

Me:It's dinner time I'd love to look at that face

Her:You're evil I love it!

Me:I know

We laughed

Me: Okay I'll be... waiting

Her:Say no more

I dropped the call.I made dinner for the kids

Me:Where's Klein?

"In the bedroom"

Me:What happened?

Elle: Kris yelled at him

"I didn't"

Elle:You did

Me: Ok okay just...oh God

I went to their bedroom

Me:Klein sweety

He was holding a picture frame sitting on the bed

Me: Hey sweety

I set next to him

Me:Let me see

I took the picture and Oh my God

Me:Who's this?

Him:My Mom

Me:Oh what...what happened?

Him:My Dad said she passed away

Me:I'm so sorry

I hugged him tears ran down my cheeks instantly

Me:Don't be sad

Him:I want to have a Mom

Me:You do have a Mom bcz she's watching you right now

Him: Where?

Me:From heaven and she loves you so much

Him: I wish I had met her

Me:Just...just keep her inside your heart okay? She's with you everyday

He smiled

Him: Thanks Miss Amanda

Me:You're welcome sweety

I'd love to hear them say Mom but it's gotta be this way for now,only for now.I wiped his tears he wiped mine

Me:Aren't you hungry?

Him:Yes I am

Me:Let's go

I carried him downstairs

Me:Kris I think you got something to say

Him:I'm sorry Klein

Klein:I'm sorry too Kris

Me:Great now who's hungry

Them:Me!

Me: Dinner coming right up

I dished up for them they ate up.Since we have our own table the adults have their own but we are on the same room so I heard the Witches phone rings.I'm over joyed bcz all her 4 Children are here including Peter and her ex husbands.She picks up the call

Her:Hello

....

Her:Who's this?

....

She looked kinda weird.I don't know whether shocked or scared

Her:It's a wrong number

She dropped the call

Peter:What's wrong

Her:I need to lie down

Oh I love seeing her weak but it's still start you'll be sorry.I texted Aunty that address

*Find me details about the person who's staying here,I think we might get something interesting by the way the phone call got her in stitches *

Me:Ok boys and girl I made cookies who wants some?

Them:Me!

Me:Cookies coming right up

I went to the kitchen to take the cookies then I gave them,I did the dishes.

•

•

•

After I put them to bed I went to knock on Peters door but it just slid open.

Me:Sir?

...

Me: Hello

"Can I help you?"

He walked in after me

Me: Oh Sir I thought you were here

Him:I was picking up a bottle downstairs

Drinking again my love no

Me:Drinking again Sir?

Him:Got a problem?

He looked at me

Me: No...Sir

He poured a glass

Him:So what brings you .... in my bedroom?

Me:Uhm it's about Klein

He down the whole glass

Me:He might need a father in his life

Him:Are you here to judge my parenting or do your

job?

Me:Sir don't get me wrong,I mean...uhm he feels alone

Him:I am around

Me: Maybe more like spending time with them

Him:You're Amanda right? Oh yes you are.Look Amanda you're not my wife nor the mother of my children know your lane do your job

He got close to me I'm so annoyed right now does he know how pissed I am

Him:I'm not paying you to tell me what to do

Me: I think I should leave you

Him: Whatever

He's already drunk?

Him:I've been drinking the whole freakin day today I got no care in the world. I lost one woman who made my life go around it's been 5 years,yes blv it or not and you know what? I've been looking at you,yah you ..you got something,something that reminds me

of her.I mean it's not something the way you talk,laugh,smile,walk, the things you do.But no she was different from you she loved cooking

He laughed

Him:You do too but the difference are...you can

Haha very funny

Him:She loved to though although she couldn't,she loved fashion and obviously you're not into fashion you wear those jeans

What is wrong to my jeans!!!!!!?!

Him:She loved her face she hated to have a pimple she would freak out

He laughed

Him:I loved that woman here look

He showed me his hand

Him:I'm still wearing our wedding ring and I'm never taking it off.She's the mother of my children my 3 beautiful boys,I'm great full for that woman.I wanted God to keep her alive for me.

He took off his jacket and shirt

Me:I better leave...

Him:Wait...have you been in love?

Me:Yes

He smiled then laid on top of the covers

Him:Goodnight

He slept I heard him snore same time. I somehow regret this,this man is suffering.I took a fleece to cover him.He looked so,hot with those abs and tattoos.I ran my hands on his chest then down to his abs.I bit my lip leaning to kiss his lips my head wasn't thinking straight. I kissed his lips crying

Me:I love you

Then I covered him I ran out closing his door."Keep it together Paige this is not a love story, it's revenge " My phone beeped it's a message from Aunty

The address you sent me,is Thomas Word he works in the Company

Looks like we have back Stabber's in the Company

who are plotting against Peter and his Father."See that Paige you should worry about that than love"

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:42] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 06 ×•••×

•

•

•

I searched Thomas word on google I need to get a picture of this guy. And ok ok this gets much better he has a family two pretty daughters and a precious wife and he looks like a good man,what a mixed up world he's putting his life in.I should pay him a visit we need to negotiate something.Anyway I did my morning process then did the kids too

Me:Let's go and have breakfast now

We went downstairs i made them cereal,the witch

walked downstairs looking like a nervous wrack.She went to have breakfast

Me:Done kids?

Them:Yes

Me:Let's go to school then

I took them to school and we had that problem again,them not wanting to give me a kiss.I mean they're too young to be embarrassed they are so dramatic and bcz I'm their Mother duhh.My phone rang on our way back to the house

Me:Aunty dear

Her:I have news

Me: Good or bad

Her:Bad

Me:What do you mean?

Her:The Thomas guy is dead

My heart stopped for a moment

Me:What do you mean?

Her:I'm looking at it now it's on the daily news

Me:Shit

Her:She's stronger than I thought

Me:We'll talk Aunty

I dropped the call

Me: Alex stop the car

Him:Why?

Me:Just stop the damn car!

He did

Him:What is it now?

Me:What do you know about that woman your Boss?

Him: Not this again

Me:Alex...I beg you

Him: Why do you want to know? Are you an undercover cop or something?

Me: You watch alot of movies now talk if you don't...

Him:If I don't what? huh? I got nothing to lose

Me:I do Alex and a lot

Him:Tell me,who are you?

Me:My real name is...Kate,Kate Blom

Him:Kate Blom? From where?

Oh Lord!!!

Him:Oh I know who you are

Me:You do?

Him:Yes you are the Man's daughter

Me:The Man?

Him:The Big Man but Nahhh it's okay your secret is safe with me

Me:So will you tell me?

Him:Why would I the Big Man will kill me

Me:He won't trust me

Him:What's in it for me?

Me:What do you want?

Him:Oh I like this game

He smiled

Me:Not that

Him:Then I won't talk

Me:What do you want then?

Him; You

Me: Okay

Him;You're kidding me

Ofcause I am

Me: I'm not

Him:It's better be worth it that woman is no human

Me:Carry on

Him: Teresa is a monster

Me:Who's Teresa?

Him:The Boss

Me:Oh

Him:Anyway I've been a witness in some of her crimes

Me:What crimes

Him:Scamming people's money and a murder

Me:What murder?

Him:Of Paige Jackson Mahone

What?

Me:What?

Him:You know her?

But he wasn't one of those men

Me:What did you do?

Him:I was the chauffer,I swear I knew nothing that she was killing her and...

Now that I think of it,yah the was a guy on the car

Me:Why you never said anything!?

Him:She threatened to kill me or throw me to jail

Me:For what?

Him:She was gonna pin the crime on me

Me: Why did she kill her?

Him:It's, it's uhm kinda complected

Me:I need answers

Him:What's with you and the case?

Me: Alex talk or I'll call my father

Him:Okay okay no need to get all worked up.Teresa had a best friend called Olive.Olive looked exactly like Paige

Me:What's wrong with that?

Him:It's weird, they resemble so much and when Paige died she found out that Paige wasn't a Mahone

Me:Pardon?

Him:Paige's parents were not her real parents

Me:But how? That's impossible

Him:That raised so much suspicion on Teresa.She knew Olive slept with the guy she loved that's when Paige was born

Me: Woah woah woah what are you saying is my...I mean Paige's parent were not her real parents?

Him:Ahhh yes

Me:Oh no

I controlled my anger and tears

Me;Tell me more

Him:Teresa wanted a baby with guy but he never noticed her he only had eyes for Olive

Me:So Paige died for their sins? It's sad

Him: There's no day pass by without me thinking about that girl,she was so clueless

Me:How do you know so much?

Him:I've worked for Teresa for years people come and go and I'm still there bcz I've never double cross her and this is my first time sharing this to anyone I hope I don't regret it

Me:Where is Olive and the guy?

Him:Olive died but the Guy,nobody knows.People say he quit the bad life and started from the bottom he became poor I don't know if he's still alive or he eventually died.

Me: But this...

My life was a fairytale until,I got married

Him:Your father won't kill me right?

Me:Who else knows about this?

Him:With Teresa? You never know i maybe not the only one or this story may not be true

Me:What do you mean?

Him:That woman is The Boss

She can be God for all I care I'll kill her

Me:Drive

Him:Your father...

Me:Alex pls

Him:Okay

He drove...I'm pissed I need answers but where!?

•

•

•

I'm sorry I know it's short but I'm tired

[12/22, 12:42] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

We drove back to the house I need to be alone. We arrived I went inside in a rush I bumped into Peter

Me: Sorry Sir

Him:Ohhhkay

I ran to my room I closed the door. But why this is happening to me? Huh? Why? Why I'm being lied to? I'm so pissed I want my parents to answer me but I can't be in contact with them it will rase suspicion. I have to know who is this Olive where did she live and that sperm donor of mine and what happened to them, bcz I have a feeling that witch knows something. And as for the guy who died,I'm sure she did it after getting that phone call maybe she thought it was him and he was threatening her.Ok Paige pull yourself up you got this.I searched the

Thomas Word's death it says here

Me:He was...murdered and he was,poured acid on, it's her it is her this is how she kills people. She pours acid on.Well well well it won't be hard knowing your victims Miss Teresa.So she tried killing me and Thomas word but she succeeded on him,I need to know who else.

I pulled myself together then went back to the kitchen

"I'm back"

I looked at the door it was Kelly

Her:Hey girl

Me:Hey

Her:The kids are at school right?

Me:Yes

Her:Good now here I brought them these

She gave me bag full of toys and clothes

Me:Okay I'll give them

Her:Yah they are mine too you know. Their Mother was nothing but nice to me she really deserves to be here and watch her kids grow but it's so sad

Me:What happened to her?

Her:We still don't know exactly you know how police are like.I mean it's been 5 years now

Me:What do you mean you never found her?

Her:No we did but we don't know what exactly happened to her

Me:Oh how did you find her?

Her:In the sea

Some other girl was killed the same time I was killed? Well almost killed?

Me:Oh that's terrible

Her:Very and it hurts Peter pls don't ask him about it

Me: Yes

"Kelly can we talk"

The witch asked

Kelly:Actually no Teresa I was on my way out

Her:Pls

Kelly:Okay.Excuse me Amanda

Me:Sure

They went to the study office. I looked around and I saw no one the maids were not around so I took advantage of that moment I went to the door to listen

"You're crazy"

That's Kelly's voice

Her:Like you're disturbed in the head

"You don't understand"

That's the witches voice

Her:She died didn't she?

Teresa:Well yes but what if she survived?

Her:Wasn't she taken by the police to be examine? Teresa I can't be your diary of your wrong doings okay? I can't even blv you really killed her.Your son

will never forgive you for this

Teresa:Who said he will find out?

Her:He will?

Teresa: Will you tell him? You know what I did to that Paige be very careful you even have a daughter now

Her:Don't you dare threaten my daughter

Teresa:It's all in your hands Kelly. You would've been happy if you didn't felt guilty and divorced Peter

Her:I couldn't be with a man who lost his wife the only wife he loved.Peter stopped loving me when he married Paige,he was happy I couldn't replace her and no one will. He goes still goes to sleep thinking about her while you sleep like a baby.He's suffering and it's all your fault.Don't ever talk to me Teresa I'm done

I ran out of the sight I hide.I heard the door opens up and being slammed. Someone is angry,so Kelly knew all along and never said anything to anyone now the Witch is unstoppable.

"What are you doing here?"

Oh shit!

Me:I...Uhm I'm looking for magazine's

There were magazine's on that table I said taking one then walked away,hoooo.Now all I have to do is be friends with Kelly then she trust's me then she tells me everything she knows.

"Hey I'm leaving if anybody ask where am i, tell them I'm out with friends"

Me:Yes Ma'am

She walked.After she left

Me:Alex we got someone to follow

Him:I don't like this

Me:Or should I call my Daddy?

Him:Okay okay

This thing works I wonder who is Big Man

Me:Do not lose her please

Him:Ok

We drove all the way she was driving but we were

behind some cars so she wouldn't even think she's being followed. She stopped on some restaurant

Me:What is she doing here?

Alex:Maybe eating

Me: No she's meeting someone

Alex:She can't even have some alone time and enjoy herself...

Me:Who's side are you on?

Him:Yours ofcause

Me:Then act like it.Okay she's inside I'll look close

Him:What if she sees you

Me:She won't.... now chill

I walked out I went to the restaurant I walked in I looked around.

"Can we help you Miss?"

Me:No no

I saw her on some table with...

Me: Dad?

Wtf?! I ran out then to the car

Me:Drive back to the house

Him:What happened?

Me:Nothing she's ummm just enjoying herself just drive

He drove

Him:I told you.She maybe evil and all but she's a human

Me:Alex?

Him:Mm?

Me:Stop talking

Him:Okay

•

•

•

I was at my room trying to digest the today's news.Wtf is going on!? My phone rang...I'm not in the mood its Athi

Me: I'm not in the mood for you at all

Him:I was just checking you up

Me:I'm okay Athi actually I've never felt alive in my life

Him:Are you being sarcastic now?

Me:Look Athi I'm fine can you drop this now?

Him:Okay fine!

Me:Fine!

Him:Bye!

Me:Whatever!

I dropped the call.The time to pick up the kids came. I picked them up to school Kelly took Elle I went back to the house.

Me:I'll make you lunch go and change

They ran upstairs

Me: No running

They will fall and it will be ugly.I made them lunch

"Hey beautiful.."

I looked up it's Peters little brother

Him:Finally we're alone

He winked at me WOW. I carried on making the kids food

Him:So? Amanda right?

Me:Yes

Him: I'm Ben.A and B that looks like a power couple there

Does he pick up girls like this? No wonder he's single

Him: Ok uhm is that a scratch?

Me:Where? How did I get a scratch?

I said touching my face

Him:You got it falling from Heaven bcz you're an Angel

He smiled.Lord help me

Him: OK uhm so I lost something

Me:What is it?

Him:Your number

He nodded smiling,he'll be single for a while

Me:Excuse me

I took the food to the kids table

Him:Okay I got a better one

He cleared his throat.

Him:Uhm...

Me: Eat kids

I went back to the kitchen and he's behind my tail this guy.The witch walked in then walked upstairs.

Ben:So your number?

Me:No Sir

Him:Call me Ben

He winked then walked away. The horror.I washed the dishes after they were done then we played. Time went by we all ate dinner Peter was not back from work but his Father was here.After dinner I put the kids to sleep still Peter is not home, he should at least see his kids to bed but he's still moaning for Paige it's been freakin 5 years he better suck it up.I

walked downstairs he got in DRUNK I'm so tired of this now

Him:Amanda hey

Me:Sir

Him:Are my babies asleep?

Me:Yes Sir

Him:Good good

He walked towards me

Him:You smell good

And you smell alcohol

Me:Thanks Sir.I need to rest

Him:Woah woah wait

He held my arm he looked at me then let me go he brushed his face

Him:Go

I don't know what was that but your kids need a father! I wish I could say that out loud.I walked away I turned he was checking me out then he left.Wtf!!!!

He can't be checking some Nanny out! I mean it's still me but still! He can't! Well maybe not argggggg idk!

[12/22, 12:42] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 07 ×•••×

•

•

•

I took a paper and a pen I wrote "You're living with a snake" I slide it down my envelop then wrote "To: Peter Jackson"

Me: All done, let's see how this goes

I went to take the mail I put the letter to those mails.I walked inside

Me:Morning Sir

Peter:Morning Amanda

Me: Mail Sir

I gave him.He took all his I went to the kids room I

did my job I did bath for them I bathed them

"Who sent this?"

He asked me with the letter in his hand

Me:I don't know Sir maybe the mail guy

Him:No it doesn't have an address

Me:Oh I don't know

He walked out. I carried on with my kids

Me:Aren't you ready for school?

Them: We're ready

Me: Good

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I went to my Dad's bedroom

Me:Dad?

I walked in a rush

Him:What? What? Whaaat? Peterson?

Me: Wake up look

He stood up I gave him the paper

Him:And this? What is this?

Me:I don't know

Him:Where did you get it?

Me:Amanda gave me the mail it was with the mail

Him: Who will send this?

Me: I don't know and don't care all I want to know what do they mean by it?

Him: The only snake we're leaving with is your Mother

Me: She only cheated and you guys divorced what wrong will she do now

Him:That woman broke the Mahone family...

Me:She wasn't alone

Him:Stop defending her,she's evil that's it

Me: What evil doing must she be doing now?

Him: I don't know Son and I'm tired

Me:No Dad

Him:If it's not your mother then its that Amanda girl

Me:Amanda?

Him:Yah she just showed up in our lives what if she's with other guys

Me: But Amanda is a sweet girl

Him:A sweet girl? What you like her? Peter don't trust anyone in this game

Me: But no Amanda is not that kind of a woman.I mean no..

Him: Peter I need more sleep

Me:Dad this is serious

Him:It's your Mother if not it's no doubt it's Amanda and plus you're falling for her that's more point's she's here to seduce you and take all your money

Me:Dad? No it gotta be someone else

Him:Then it's your precious Mommy go and

investigate

Me:I will Dad

I walked out.Amanda walked the kids downstairs they were laughing and talking my kids really love her it's impossible she is trying to seduce me.

•

•

•

Teresa's POV

Her: So who do you think is trying to scare you?

Me:I don't know

Her:You better know bcz time is running out

Me: I can't be exposed my son will never want me back

Her: I bet so

Me:Ok shut up you bitch or I'll kill you

Her:You killed everything that was mine you witch you deserve everything coming your way

Me: Ok ok you brought this to yourself by sleeping with the man I loved

Her:I told you I was drunk and I'm sorry

Me:You sorry? Sorry will never fix my life now you'll never see your precious boyfriend, you'll never see your daughter and you'll never see the sun

Her:I'll get out of here

Me:You've been saying that for the past 25 years you witch

Her:You have no heart

Me: You do? We both heartless here you knew I loved that guy I told you every single day how much I'd love to be in his arms but no no Olive knew she was eyeing him like I was.You're the worst friend anyone would have

She cried

Her:I was drunk I don't even remember that night

Me:I saw you together in the same bed,NAKED for God sake

Her: I'm sorry!!

She was even crying

Me:I don't want your sorry, I'll kill every bit of you you'll die of a broken heart you witch.I'll kill your grandkids

Her: Over my dead body Teresa

Me:Oh that can be arranged.But you know what? No that will hurt my son I should find your "boyfriend"

She looked at me

Me:Yes yes I mean he needs to know he had a daughter then she died after giving birth to 3 beautiful ,adorable boys he would be so proud right?

Her:Leave him alone

Me:Scared I'll kill him? I'm not a monster Liv.I mean I maybe one but at least I spare your life,you're still here alive you eat everyday what more do you want?

Her: I never got a chance to go to my daughter's funeral

Me: Yah it's a shame but her real Mother was there

and that handsome Dad of hers.Her Dad is the most handsome man I've ever seen more than that boyfriend of yours.I mean his arms are so strong when he holds me mmm...oh I should not get into deep I mean when was the last time you had a man's touch, 25 years ago

I laughed my lungs out

Me:You're a virgin all over again.Don't you miss being loved Liv? It's more nicer nowhere days we have new styles ey

I laughed

Me: We do it everywhere Liv shower,kitchen, lounge,garden,car,even in the pool it's amazing and on the floor the best.And I ain't talking about styles honey

I laughed

Her: You'll never stop being a whore even at this age

I slapped her

Me:My age means nothing look at me, they came to me running including Paige's father.I swear to God

he calls me he can't get enough

Her:You'll pay for everything

Me: You've been saying that for a while too but look at you,locked up in some abandoned house basement it's so sad.Oh well here is your food

I threw the take away on her face

Me: Stop thinking too much now eat.And don't go anywhere,oh I forgot how will you leave with those chains

I laughed walking out

•

•

•

My phone has a tiny problem I used my Sister's so I'll continue later y'all

[12/22, 12:43] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I couldn't focus on work today that letter changed my whole day. I pecked all my stuff

"Hey stranger"

Tanya walked in wearing only a coat

Me: I'm not in the mood for your tricks

I stood up

Her:Come on

She walked to me then blocked my way

Her:You look tense hmm how about I give you a massage?

She licked her lips

Me:Tanya not this again I'm tired

Her:Calm down

She made me sit on the sofa

Her:You need to relax.Guess what I got underneath?

She untied her belt

Me: Arg Tanya

I shook my head

Her:I got nothing

She smiled showing me

Her:Like what you see?

She leaned to kiss me I pushed her

Me:Your husband must be wondering where you are Tanya and I need to see my kids

Her:Are you rejecting me? Well this?

Me:You're not the only hot girl in the universe Tanya I think it's time you know

Her:Well I'm better than any girl you've been with

Me: Bye Tanya

I walked out.I drove home I got in I saw my kids playing with the kids

Me:Hey guys

Them:Hey Dad

They didn't even come and hug me they never do that

Amanda:Won't you hug Dad?

Them: Ok

They came to hug me then went back to Amanda,ok I'm invisible to them ever since she was here

Amanda:Go and brush your teeth I'll be right there

They ran upstairs

Me: No running!

Amanda: They never listen to that

Me: They'll fall and pretty bad

Her:Yah.Can I ask you something?

Me:Sure

We set down

Her:Look uhm,it's about Klein I've never got a chance to speak with you bcz you were kinda drinking a lot no offence though

Me:None taken

Her:Anyway what happened to him? Well I guess he's okay now but when I got here he would cry and say he wish he had a Mom

Me: He uhm,I don't know honestly. When their Mother gave birth to them and we were at our house she went to the store to get something, Klein was the only one who cried the whole day and night that day.They never got a chance to bond with her and it broke my heart bcz her walking out of that door mad at me was the last time I saw her. I think Klein felt their was something happening to his Mother at that time, ever since then he was always quiet and alone

A tear escape her eye

Her:I'm so sorry

Me: Thank you

Her:Its heart breaking really

Me: It's okay I'm happy now Klein is happy

She wiped her tear

Her: He is doing just fine alright,He plays with his

brothers too

How can someone I just met remind me so much of someone I love.We just looked at each other and her eyes are saying something. She's so beautiful no doubt but I can't toy with her feelings she reminds me of someone

Her:Oh uhm I better go and get the kids ready for bed

Me:Sure

She left.I gotta get these thoughts out of my head bcz lord knows how much I'd love to kiss her but it would be unfair I want her to be someone she's not.She came downstairs

Her:They're already in bed all by their selves

Me:They are growing pretty fast

Her: Yep and goodnight Sir

Me: Goodnight Amanda

She went to her room.I set there like an idiot just thinking about Paige.When will I move on? My kids need a Mom,a person who they will love and she

loves them back.My phone rang and it's Kelly

Me:What?

Her:Can you at least be a little nice to the mother of your child?

Me:What do you want?

Her:I called to ask if you got Amanda's number?

Me:Why would I?

Her:I'm not an idiot can you pls

Me:Why?

Her:Regarding Elle,Peter just give me her number

Me:What about Elle are you leaving again?

Her:No for emergency just in case plus Amanda is a good nice girl she's the kind of woman I would let my child be around with as a step Mom not those girls of yours with long nails,fake ass and weaves

Me:That wasn't necessary

Her:Number dude

Me: I can't do that she's my employee

Her:Peter!!!!?

Me: How about you come here tomorrow and ask her yourself

Her:I'm still looking for what was driving me so crazy about you bcz you're pathetic

Me: Bye

Her:BYE!!!!

She dropped the call.Yah yah whatever.I laid there for few more minutes then got up.I heard music playing,soft smooth jazz like.I walked closer to Amanda's room her door was not slightly closed,I swear to God I'll never get that image out of my head. With her in panties and bra laying on the bed.I wanted to walk in and so something I will regret later on.She stood up then walked around my Lord her ass.Ok breath Peter,but she is not this fine in jeans. I should probably go before she catches me,she took her gown then got under covers I went to my room.I thought about her then Paige showed up in my thoughts,no no no she thinks I'm betraying her

Me:I will never touch her Beab I promise you

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:43] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 08 ×•••×

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I slept peaceful last night without alcohol. Now I'm not going to work I'm tired noway.I woke up then put on my sweat pants then got busy on my cellphone. I heard a knock

Me:Come in

"Excuse me Sir"

Oh shit Amanda the girl I saw naked last night, well almost naked.

Me:Amanda? Pls come in

I got up

Her:Ow uhm I...I uhm my Aunt is not feeling well she asked if I could go and see her after I take the kids to school

Me: Yah sure it's okay you can go,what is wrong with her?

Her:I...Uhm I don't know yet Sir

Me: Yes yes ofcause

Her:May I go now?

Me: You're in a rush?

Her:Well I was gonna get the kids ready

Me:Oh yah it can be tiring

Her: I just enjoy it,may I?

Me:I wanted to ask you something

Her:Yes Sir

Me:What made you be a Nanny and not go to school bcz you're still young

Her:I lost my parents, I lost my parents at a very

young age it was hard growing up as an orphan

Me: You have your Aunty now

Her:Yes but...

Me: Yes but? Are you lying to me?

Her:No Sir how could you say that,no I'm not lying to you

Me:Why you're here?

Her:To work Sir

I got close to her

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I know what he's trying to do, now he likes the Nanny.I mean I can be replaced by a Nanny how is that even possible,I mean look at me.Now I have to act scared at his questions and stuff I'm just distracted by his abs and the sweat pants his

wearing are revealing.

Me:Sir I'm only here to work

Now I'm pinned on the wall

Him:Why I don't trust you

Me: Am I giving you reasons to?

Him: No it's something else

Me: Sir you're not making sense and I gotta help the kids

He wants to kiss me this thirsty beast!!! Why can't he suck it up that he can't have any girl he lays eyes on especially this one he'll distract me.He breathed on my neck

Me: The...uhm...kids?

Ok I missed this,a lot

Him:They can wait

I have no freakin idea how he grabbed my butt and kissed me at the same time.My heart is on the clouds again I'm jealous, I'm not Paige to him I'm just some Nanny. I've seen him checking me out I'm

jealous this is my man and he likes this girl now,it hurts.Our lips moved the same pace it was like I was kissing him for the first time all over again. Wait!!! Wouldn't he notice my kisses, he quickly pushed me then looked at me

Him:No no

He moved back shaking his head

Me:I'm so so sorry Sir

Don't tell me he knows

Him:I maybe going crazy

Me:No no you're not going, crazy

Him:Why everything about you reminds me of her?

He looked at me sad I wanted to cry

Me: Of who?

Him:This is all my fault, I'm seeing things. I mean it's impossible you're her but your lips your kisses

He still remember my kisses? Ofcause it's me my love but I can't tell you

Him: Just get out

Me:Excuse me?

Him:Leave!

Me: Excuse me Sir

I walked out with tears burning down my cheeks, this is just hurting me I need to end this.

•

•

•

Now I'm at lunch with my Aunty

Me:It's hard being in that house Aunty I can't do it

Her: You're there for revenge Amanda and you're close now, you can't be distracted by your husband

Me:He's always there I can't resist him.Aunty I love that man,I slept with him everyday next to him,I spent 9 months carrying our babies with him.He's the only man I ever loved

Her:And the son of a woman who killed you and all

bunch of other people, and more to come you need to stop her

Me:You're right

Her:I know you love Peter and you still have time to make it up to him all you need to do is to expose her Mother

Me:Yes

Her:You're not agreeing enough Amanda

Me:I agree Aunty

Her: Good I also got information...

"Guys guys you won't blv what I got"

Athi said sitting down next to us

Aunty: This is a restaurant don't speak so everyone could hear

Me: Talk

Him: I followed that woman this morning and where she went wasn't pleasing at all

Me:What do you mean?

He took out his phone

Him:I took some pictures

He showed us the a picture of an old cabin house

Me:And?

Aunty:Wow she went here?

Him:Yep and she was with plastic bags

Me: This sounds interesting

Athi:What do you think it must be?

Aunty:We got one way to know

Me: What's that?

They looked at me

Athi:Why you're slow?

Me:And why you're being a jerk?

Aunty:Ok stop.We're paying that place a visit

Me:What? What if there are her witch stuff

Athi:What a broom?

Me:You should get laid

Athi: By you?

Aunty:Can you stop? Tonight we are going there

Me:Fine I better go

Athi:Are they treating you well there?

Me:Yes

Athi:And, Peter?

Me:Excuse me

I left him with his jealous ass

•

•

•

I'm at the house again and it's late.I need an excuse to leave here.

Beep

That's my cellphone

"We're here"

Oh God how can I go.I took my purse and cellphone

then walked out

Me: Sir?

Shiiit

Him: Amanda

This is awkward

Him: How is your Aunt!

Me: She's not doing good, actually she's calling for me

Him: I can take you

Me: No! Uhm I mean no.My boyfriend is taking me

Him: Oh your boyfriend I forgot you're in a relationship

Me: I am.May i?

Him:Yes ofcause

I walked out closing the door behind me

"Where are you off to this time?"

Me:Alex

Him:I can take you

Me:No thank you

Athi parked at the gate then he stepped out,doing it on purpose.

Him: You look beautiful

Me:Do I? really?

Him: Sorry

We got inside

•

We arrived

Me:I can smell it

Athi: Dramatic much?

Aunty:Ok let's go in

We walked out

Me:Turn on your flashes it's pretty dark out here

We turned our flashes on

Me:Ok this is it

We made our way in.

Me:So much dust

Athi opened up

Aunt:Its dark

Me:How can a normal person stay here?

We got inside

Me:What's that?

We got close Athi opened up

Aunty: A basement there are even stairs

Me:Ok who's going down?

Me and Anty we looked at Athi

Him:Ah no don't look at me

Me:Pls

Him: Ahhh fine,but you'll follow

Me: Ofcause

He walked in

Aunty: Go on we're behind you

He was inside

Him: Oh shit

Me:What?

Him:You would have seen this if you were here

Me:Athi come on

We walked after him

Me:Is that? A human?

Aunty:Let's help her/him

Me: What?

Athi: Yah Mom,what?

Her:Come on,who knows how much time was she here?

Me: It stinks here

Athi:Can we take her and go

Me: She got a lot of secrets

Aunty went to shake the body

Me:Aunty don't

Her:She's not moving

Me:She?

Her:Yah it's a woman help me out

Me:Fine

•

We took her to the car

Me:She stinks

Athi:What happened to her she looks like she fainted

Aunty:She has a pulse at least

Me: Let's go quickly I can't be out of the house this time Peter will talk

Athi:You're Nannying him or his kids

Me: That are mine too,care to shut up!

Aunty: Why can't you get along? Athi drive

He drove

Me:Where will she stay bcz you're clearly not taking her to the hospital

Aunty: We'll stay with her so she can tell us,everything

Me:I'm loving that

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:43] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 09 ×•••×

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I was woken up by a phone call

Me:Hmmm?

"You're coming today right?"

Me:Uncle?

Him:I need you here today

Me:But Uncle...

Him:No excuses young Lady

Me:Yes Uncle

He dropped the call. He's mad about the woman in his house, oh God.The kids are not going anywhere today it's gonna be a problem but I'll try.My door opened up

Me:Hey

Klein:Can I sleep with you?

Me:Ofcause come

He ran to my bed,we cuddled I kissed his cheek

Him: I want you to be my Mom

What am I going to say! Oh God

Me: Well uhm...I don't think your father would like it

Him:But I like it

Me: I will be your Mom if your father agrees to

He smiled oh my God I love this little munchkin right here,he's my favorite well not exactly my favorite but

I'm closer to him than others but still I love them all,just don't get me wrong.

Me: Let's sleep

We took a nap

•

I was woken by a knock on the door.What time is it?

Me:Oh no

I took my phone it's 10 oh no.The knock got harder Klein is sleeping peacefully I quickly got up the door burst open

Me:Sir?

Peter: Why didn't you wake up? My kids were starved!

Me:I'm so sorry Sir I...I..

I don't know what to say

Him:Why didn't you wake up! I'm not paying you to lazy around!!!

Ok he's being a little dramatic don't you think?

Me:The kid is asleep...

Him: I'm taking my son!

Me: Sir you'll wake him up

Him:He's my son not yours now here

He gave me his card

Him:They are visiting their Grandmother this weekend. Go to the shop and buy something

Me: What should I buy?

Him:She loves meat all kinds of meat,buy some

Me:I still don't know Sir

He took Klein he woke up

Me:You woken him up

He left.Why he's being a jerk it was just few hours besides that happens to anyone.

•

I was done with my morning process and guess who I found nervous as a wreck.

Me:Good morning Ma'am

Her:There is absolutely nothing good about this

morning

She walked out slamming the door, I just love seeing her mad.

"why you're still here!"

Peter,ok he's becoming annoying

Me:Sir, I...I was on my way out but I thought...

Him:Pls don't think just go

Me:What about the kids breakfast?

Him:I already made them they are my kids you know

Wow way to go "Dad" here goes the Father of the year award

Me:I'm so sorry you had to do that

Him: Just go Amanda

I walked out of the door

Me:Alex? Ale...

"Here,my Queen at your service"

I just smiled

Me: Let's go to the butchery

Him:Ok I thought it's those spy's again

Me:No,not for now ofcause

Him: Ok let's go

We hop in the car

Him:So,Amanda.That guy from last night is your boyfriend?

Me:Uh yah

Him: Oh you have a boyfriend

Me:Yes don't you have a girlfriend?

Him: I do but...

Me:But what?

Him:I just don't trust her

Me: What do you mean?

Him:I feel she's being unfaithful

Me: Oh I'm sorry

Him:And I just don't understand when I do everything

she asks of me

Me:I don't know what to say really

Him:Nah it's okay I like someone else too

Me: Oh may I ask who?

Him: You wouldn't know her

Me:Oh she's s friend?

Him:You can say that

Me:How long did you know her?

Him:Why so many questions?

Me:I was just curious

We laughed

Him:Don't be

We arrived

Me:Ok let's go in

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Dad:Make sure she doesn't see them

Me:But Dad this is wrong

Him:Come on Peter we need to put more in your Mother's room too

Me:I hope she doesn't see these cameras or...

Him:Or nothing, hurry before she comes back

Me:I'm done they are hidden all two of'em

Him: Your mothers room now

Me: Let's go

We went to my Mother's room we did the same thing, hiding cameras.My Dad don't trust them so I'll be watching Amanda Dad will be watching Mom,I just want Dad to get the thought out of his mind that Amanda is trying to seduce me.Anyway after I was done I threw the boxes on the bin I saw Amanda walking in with Alex laughing.

Alex:Yes Boss

Me:Alex

Amanda:We bought Pork,Beef,Lamb...

Me:It doesn't matter she doesn't like Pork put it in the freezer

I walked upstairs.

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

Me:Thank you Alex

Him:Anything you want just say the word

I laughed

Me:I will

Him: Bye

Me: Bye

He left

I took the pork I store it in the freezer.The left meat I wrap it in paper and plastic so when it's melting the plastic bag doesn't lick.I took all the other plastic

bags I threw them on the bin...and what's this? A spying camera? Is he spying on me or what? Oh Paige are you making him doubt you? I mean why would he buy this and think of something to get me out of the house? He put the cameras on my room,but he don't know I'm smarter than him and his family combined how could he not trust me.I have to act normal by normal I mean the normal he wouldn't be able to stand.I went to my room my door wasn't slightly closed, so he was here for real.I walked in I inhaled his Cologne, he was here he's Cologne smells so good.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me:Yes she's in.What is she doing wondering around?

I should finish watching.She first got busy on her phone then it rang yes that might give me some information, but I don't like doing this and I hope she's innocent.

Her: Hey

She laid down with her phone on the ear

Her:I'm great you?

...

Her:I miss you too

...

Her:It's been a while ofcause

She laughed,ok this is no information

Her:I feel hot already

...

Her:No I can't I'm at work

She took off her jeans,GODAMN!

Her:I'm changing

She laughed again OK I'm annoyed right now

Her:I'm changing stop having big imagination

...

Her:I can't see you I told you so

She took off her shirt,wow

Her:I love you too

...

Her:Shut up

She was laughing and giggling. She's not doing anything wrong.Look at her

Her:Kisses bye

She dropped the call.She gave me her back then took off her bra,oh shit I got hard ohh...

"Peter!..."

Dad just barge in I almost had a heart attack.

Me: Dad you knock first

I closed the laptop

Him:I'm sorry Son but I was here to tell you I'm needed at work now

Me:Oh ok

I nodded can't he leave now?

Him:Won't you even ask what I'm needed for?

Me:No go and do your business old man

Him:Are you okay you look tense

Me:No no I'm fine

I was hiding my boner with the laptop

Him:What are you doing?

Me:Work

Him: What work?

Me:Dad work

Him:Were you watching porn? Oh my poor son why don't you hit the club at least to release? I understand you miss your wife and all but you're frustrated

Me:I'm with someone Dad

Him: No not her I don't like her.My son here

He gave me an address

Him:Go to this club it's filled of women, any kind you want and you can get them anytime you want

Me:Dad? You go here?

Him:I'm old for that now besides I'm seeing someone

Me:Wow

Him:Anyway look up that girl I gotta go

He walked out closing the door I opened the laptop, DAMMIT.She's done thanks for nothing Dad now what am I going to do?!!!

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:44] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

I'm done dressing now, if Peter is not a thirsty beast he will get rid of those cameras at once.Bcz I tried my best I faked a call and stripped naked I mean hello not everyday I do that.My scar!!!!! Paige how could you be so careless but I doubt anyone can

notice it up there.Besides it's just a small scratch its not that obvious I doubt he can see it. Anyway I took my purse and cellphone I walked out,then I opened the front door,Oh no not now

Kelly:Hey girl

She walked in with Elle

Me:Hy Miss

Elle:Hy Miss Amanda

Me:Hey Elle

Elle:Where are the boys?

Me:In their bedroom

She ran off

Kelly:No running Elle! So where were you going?

Me:To my Aunty's place

Her:Ohhh can I get your number regarding Elle you know

Me:Sure

She gave me her phone I typed it

Me:There

Her:Oh thank you

No matter how nice she is nice she will always be a snake to me

Me:I better go

Her:Wait a second.I wanted us to chat you know get to know each other

Did I hear that well?

Me: But I'm nothing but a Nanny to him

We heard a knock Kelly opened up

Kelly:You?

"Yah me"

Isn't that Kim's voice? This Lady walked in she faced me,it is Kim

Her:Oh hy

Me:Hy

I smiled like an idiot because she looked different like hell. Her hair,attitude she even gained alot of

weight.

Her:Where are my pretty boys

Me:In their bedroom

Her:Who are you?

Me:I'm Amanda their Nanny

Her:Oh

Peter walked down he avoid eye contact with me,what is it? Saw things you shouldnt have

Kim:Oh here comes the King

Peter:Kim

She was being sarcastic, did I miss something?

Her: I just came to take the boys out

Him:Sure

She walked upstairs

Kelly:Arg I can't stand her

Me:She seems nice I like her.

They both looked at me

Me:What? I should go

Peter:Where are you going?

Me:My Uncle called

Him: Oh

He looked at me,I'm sure he thinks about the other call I made in there,that steamy chat.

Kelly:So when are you free about my offer?

Me:I'm never free even now I'll take just a little time

Kim walked downstairs with the kids

Kelly:Bring back my daughter early

Kim:I will don't worry

Peter:And the boys pls

Kim:I will never do otherwise Mr Jackson these are my best friends kids

Awwww,she walked out

Me:I'm leaving too

Him:Don't be late

He walked to me and I'm chilled asf

Him:I'll talk to Alex to take you

He walked out I walked after him,he went to talk with Alex.They took a while talking Alex was even laughing Peter was being serious then he left checking me out Alex came to me laughing

Him:In the car Miss

Me:What was that?

Alex:Nothing let's go Miss Amanda

We walked in

Him:You'll direct me

Me:Sure

He drove I directed him.After a few we arrived

Me:There we go

Him:Let's go

Me: No you can't

Him:It's the Bosses orders

Me:What?

Him:I'm just following orders Miss

Me:Stop calling me Miss

We walked out

Me:Stay here outside

Him:Nope I'm coming in with you

Me:Wow

We walked in

Me:Hy

Athi was busy on his phone

Him:Hey my love who's this?

That wasn't freakin necessary

Me:He's the chauffer

Him: Oh I missed you

He came towards me I gave him a "don't you dare" look he laughed

Me: You can stay here Alex I'll be back

He nodded Athi held my waist then he whispered

Him:I love this acting

Me:Idiot

I whispered back he laughed squeezing my butt I got his hands off then we were in my bedroom

Me:Don't you ever lay hands on me

Him:It's good acting plus I like it

Me:I hate you...what's that?

Him:It's the woman

I walked to her

Me:She's clean

Him:Mom cleaned her

Me:Why she was cleaned by Mom and me by you?

Him: And I enjoyed every moment

Me:Arg

"I want her out of here...oh she's clean"

Uncle walked in

Aunty:Yes I bathed her

Uncle:I can see her now properly

Aunty:Ah excuse me

Uncle:No I mean she's...

Aunty:No no don't finish it I don't want to hear it

Me and Athi laughed

Me:How is she Aunty?

Her: Still unconscious

Me:We need her to be okay

Her:I'm using traditional medicine to her too she will be okay in no time

Me:Good to know, and I should go now

Aunty:Can't you stay?

Me:No

Athi:Her chauffeur is in the living room waiting for her

Uncle:Couldn't he wait in the car?

Me:It was the Bosses orders

Athi:By Boss you mean your precious husband?

Me:Yes Athi I do mean my precious husband. I better go bye guys

I walked to the living room

Me:Let's go Alex

We left we walked to the car he drove all the way back to the house

Me:Thank you

I went to the house then to my bedroom

•

•

•

Peters POV

She arrived and quick so that means she didn't meet her boyfriend.I ran downstairs then to Alex

Me:Alex my man

Alex:Boss

Me:What happened?

Him:Well...

Me:Something happened

Him:Not really Boss but the guy was there

Me:And?

Him:He was touching her you know

Me:I knew that

Him:But then

Me: It's worse?

Him:They went to the bedroom

Me:Oh

Him:But she was quick

Maybe it was a quicky you never know

Me:Did you see her Uncle?

Him:No

She lied

Me:So maybe it wasn't her Uncle's house

Him:Maybe because even the guys car was parked

there

Me:Hmmm

Him:Why concerned Sir?

Me:I'm just looking after her

Him:Ohhhkay

Me:Just that nothing more

Him: No no I get it

He laughed

Me:Ok you should stop laughing bcz i don't see anything funny

Him:Sorry Boss

Me:Good keep a close eye on her

Him:But Boss I'm a chauffeur and I'm not paid for that

Me:I'll pay you,I don't want that guy ever near her if you do that and you keep me updated on what she does I'll pay you

Him:But Boss don't you think it's a bit much?

Me:Do you want the money or not?

Him:I do...

Me:Then do as I say

Him:Yes Boss

•

•

•

Sorry for taking long

[12/22, 12:44] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 10 ×•••×

•

•

•

I was still asleep when I heard little hands on my back,I almost jumped out of bed when I saw Klein asleep next to me. I wonder when did he get here.He looked so cute i kissed his forehead he woke up

Me:Did I wake you?

Him:Yes

Me:I'm sorry just sleep more I'll take a shower

He nodded I took my things then walked out I saw the Witch talking on the phone.It's been a while seeing her I wonder where has she been. She looks like she's shouting on the phone, she looks like she hasn't slept in ages.She saw me looking at her

"WHAT!?"

I ran to the bathroom jeesh,she is stressed. I took a bath then went back to the bedroom I lotion then wore my jeans and a T-shirt I hate wearing like this but I got no option I just really miss my clothes.

Me:Is that a

Shit a pimple!!!! Ok girl don't freak out.I took my cream I moisturized it I can't have a pimple hell no poor Amanda's face.Klein woke up

Me:Hey boy

Him:Hy

Me:Let's get you clean

Him:But it's Sunday today

Me:Yes you need to bath anyway

Him:But I don't want too

Me:I know you don't bcz you're a boy obviously but you have to

Him:Okay

I picked him up we went to their room

Me:Wakey wakey boys

They got up

Me:I'll fix bath for you

I put Klein down I did the bath water for them

Me: Okay go in now

I bathed them, they fooled around you know kids then I helped them out I dried them then lotion and all that process.

Me:Here are your clothes I'll make breakfast

Them:Okay

I walked out

"Can I come with you"

I turned to see Klein. I just love him so much

Me:Ofcause you can

I helped him wear then we walked out

"Hey my Queen nice to see you here,again"

Oh God, Ben

Me:I live here Sir

Him:Oh,yah right. That means we got time to be alone you know and talk

Me:Sir,There's a kid here

Him:Ofcause,is that a yes?

Me:No Sir

Him:Next time? Okay I'll be waiting

He walked pass me licking his lips,ew ew ewwwwwww no wonder he doesn't have a girlfriend. I went downstairs I prepared breakfast for kids I heard a door bell I went to open Klein was sitting on his chair.Anyway I opened up it's Peters girlfriend I'd

love to spit on her face but I did the opposite I let her in with a big smile she returned the favour

Me:Hy Miss may I help you?

Her:Call Peter

Me:Ofcause

I walked upstairs I went to his door I knocked he opened up

Me:Hy Sir your girlfriend is asking for you

Him: Call her here

What? Hell no you're not having her in your room,have me instead

Me:I think she's in a hurry Sir

Him:Just call her here

Me: Yes sir

He closed the door argggggg!!!! I walked downstairs

Me:He's calling you upstairs

Her:Oh that's great I really need him next to me at this weather

She ran upstairs. I'm soooooo pissed!!!!! I'm fuming with Anger,I swear to God I'll do something I'll regret

"Mommy"

I turned to look at Klein, he called me Mommy oh my God.I just smiled walking to him

Me: What is it baby just say the word

I hugged him

Him:I'm hungry

Me:Yes yes ofcause

I got up then finished making breakfast

Me:Here I'll call your brothers

He ate I went upstairs

Me:Boys your food is ready

I saw the Maids putting food on the big table,the breakfast is ready.I rash to Peters room I knocked, maybe I waited couple of minutes he came to the door shirtless wrapped a sheet on his lower part.He already hit it? It was pretty quick if you ask me

Him:Can I help you?

Me:No but the Maids are done making breakfast

Him: Ok

Me: You should go and eat

Him:I'll go

Me:I mean breakfast is the most important meal of the day

Him: I know

Me:So?

He laughed

Him: I'll go

Me:Now?

Him:Shall I go like this now?

Me:No no just take your time

Him:I will

Me:Okay

He closed the door I listened on the door I just heard

giggles,I'm so heart broken I mean that is my husband there with another woman,do you know how much it hurts? No it pains like shit.

"Can I help you?"

I almost got a heart attack it's Peters little Sister

Me:No no

Her:I'm Dora

Me:Hy Dora I'm Amanda

Her:Are you sure?

Me:Excuse me?

Her:Or shall I say Paige Mahone?

•

•

•

I'm typing continuation now

[12/22, 12:45] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Me:What?

Her:You can't fool me

Me:I have no idea what are you talking about,excuse me

She held my arm

Her:You will explain to everyone

She held my arm tighter

Me:I have no idea what you are talking about and you're hurting my arm

She opened some room she dragged me in then she closed it

Her:I knew you never died

Me:Hey listen here little girl I told you I'm not this Paige you're talking about

Her:I'm 18 I'm no little girl so? Shall I talk or you will

Me:I need to do my job my...I mean the kids are...

Her:Your kids don't be nervous saying it

I looked at her with her glasses on

Me:I'm not this girl you're thinking I am really

Her:Paige Mahone died in the sea but how did she end up in the sea? No one said anything about that.Paige Mahone's body found unidentifiable how's that possible why didn't they do samples to her kids? I thought I should do my research.I did DNA test from that woman found in the sea and compared it to one of your babies,don't worry I used hair sample.Anyway it came back,negative. If those idiots of Doctors cared to do that we would have found you if the idiot brother of mine was a bit concerned he would have known. I spent years trying to find you,years went by then you came along.I noticed things no one did,your teeth, fingers, the way you put on make up..

Ok she's good

Me:Oh woah woah woah you're just waisting my time

Her:But I thought no no these things can be

common.I saw how you look at my brother or the kids I thought it was stupid of me to even think you can be her.But since I'm a scientists I did some DNA test with a strand of your hair and Klein's hair guess what? It came back 99% positive.With no doubt

Me: Wow great joke but not funny

Her:I want to know what are your intentions with my Family

Me:I can't listen to this

Her:Oh you will now talk

Me:Look girly you're mixing up things here.And how did you get my hair bcz you never came near me

Her:Hair brush I'm not an idiot

Where is she coming from??!?¿!?!!!! She'll ruin my plan

Me;I'm not her

Her:What are your plans with my family or I'll spill the beans

I looked at her she fixed her glasses

Be free to talk I don't have cameras like Peter did in your room

Me:This is stupid

Her:You don't wanna talk? I'll call the police for faking your own death and coming back as some mobsters daughter

Me:Mobsters daughter?

Her:Oh my God do you know now? I don't even know what do you know or don't

Me:What mobsters daughter

Her:You look like some mobsters daughter she is quiet famous in their world

Me:What are you talking about

Her:Just tell me why you're here and how the hell did you get everybody fooled or all call the police

Me:Fine,I didn't fake my own death. Her:What happened?

Me:I was killed

Her:Killed?

Me:Yes but some family was hunting on the woods they found my body near the water I was half heard

Her: And the face was part of the scam?

Me: No I a surgery bcz I was poured acid on

Her:Oh my God

Me:Yah happy?

Her:How will I know you're not lying

Me:Why would I fake my own death and leave the love of my life and my new born babies and come back again as someone else?

She just looked at me

Me:This hurts me more than you do okay? I can't stand this situation

Her:I'm sorry

Me:You just don't understand

Her:Who tried killing you?

Me:I don't remember clearly

Her:I can help you

Me:No no it may be dangerous

Her:Then why you're here not getting revenge on whoever did you wrong

Me:I still don't know who it was I just want to be close to my children

Her:Let me help you I can get anything

Me: Ain't you at school?

Her: Yah I am but....

Me: We don't know who are we dealing with it might be dangerous

Her: What am I suppose to do with this knowledge? And this case I deserve to know it took me a while to finally reveal it

Me:I'll tell you if I got anything else

Her: Sure and I'll help you with Peter's girlfriend

Me:That'd be awesome

She smiled

I walked out the girl walked out of Peter's room

angry slamming the door. I wonder what happened

•

•

•

I'm at my Aunt's place without Alex Athi picked me up

Me:She told me everything

Aunty: Wow So she knows the real you

Me:Yes Aunty quiet shocking

Her: What did you say

Me: I was amazed really but I didn't say it was her Mothers fault I handled it just fine.

Her:What did you say?

Me:That I don't remember the person who tried killing me

Her:Good at least she blvs you imagine if she didn't

Me:Yah it would have been ugly

Her:She can be our ticket to victory

Me:,No Aunty I still don't trust her why did she investigate my case like that? Noway our ticket to victory is that woman on that bed not Dolly or whatever her name is,I don't trust her

Her:You think she's working with her Mom?

Me:Aunty that will be dangerous no it be

Her:I'm just saying

Me: No maybe she's not telling me the whole story.Why did she start to investigate my death she didn't just investigate bcz things were not adding up

Her;Maybe that's why

Me:No no I can't get it

Her:You're thinking a lot just go and rest you need it

Me:Yah maybe you're right where's Athi?

•

•

•

I was taken back to the house

Me: Thank you

Him:Anytime.

I walked out I went inside I went to spend time with my kids till it was late time

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Something is just attracting me to this woman I just can't get enough of her.Her body draws me in to her every time and that's how it cross my mind,I'm a fucken sex eddict.I always want some excitement I should go by a week without anything even kissing because this is not healthy. And I can't stop looking at her sleeping so peacefully.She looks so beautiful.She had been asleep for a while now she looks like she's having a nightmare. What is she doing? She is screaming and crying.I put on my headsets

Her: Pls leave me alone I beg you think about my

kids...pls pls don't!!!!!

I got them off.WTF? Kids?

•

•

•

I'm tired as hell

[12/22, 12:45] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 11 ×•••×

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I woke up.'the dream I had last night, I saw that woman trying to kill me again. What am I not doing right now? I can't dream about it with no reason but what about Dora? She knows so much about me it ain't funny.I don't trust her she can tell her mommy." My phone beeped

She is awake from Aunty

'Would you look at that, God works in mysterious ways he'll always find a way.' I got up I took a shower then went to my room my phone rang

Me:hello Aunty

Her:When are you coming here?

Me:I don't know

Her:You should come she is talking

Me:Noway

Her:We are not even asking her she's there telling us everything

I dropped the call then texted her

After I take the kids to school I'm there

It was sent.I quickly got dressed then went to the kids bedroom I did their morning process Peter walked in

Him:You seem to love kids

Me:Yah I do

Him:Why you don't have yours?

Me:I don't have time I'm always working

Him:Don't you want them,now?

I got up looking at him

Me: Why's that?

Him:You look good with kids

Me:I do love them but I don't want them although my boyfriend wants them,now that you say it I should consider having a baby

Him: No that's not what I meant

Me:Oh?

Him: You don't have to try for a baby

He's so thirsty for this girl it makes me so freakin mad.Hello? I can't be replaced by a Nanny well a hot Nanny to be specific

Me:I mean I also want to have cute babies like these one day

Him:You can but not with just anyone

Me:Pardon?

Him: I'm late for work,bye boys

He walked out.Yah you're damn straight you're late for work. Did he just want babies with a Nanny? How desperate can he be? After that awkward conversation I finished bathing the kids

_

I'm at Aunty's house with Alex he's outside this time

Me: She's still talking?

Aunty:No but I recorded it.

Me:Genius move

Her:I know

She laughed we walked in her room

Me:Why did you tie her?

Her:She tried killing herself

Me:Oh wow she's coming together now she's healing even her face is getting to her normal state

Her: Yep

Me:You should open your own little hospital helping people, people are dying in those hospital

Her:I should

We laughed

Her:Here is the recording

She gave me her cellphone I pressed the play button

"...she wants everything that was mine.she's evil she killed my daughter my poor beautiful Anesthesia she was nothing but a happy soul. I just know it she didn't deserve her hatred.I curse her I curse her life she will never find happiness. He'll die alone her worst nightmares will rise and she'll have no one to turn to everyone in her world will crumble down."

She cried

"She should have killed me than having me locked up.She needs to be stopped she can do worse much much worse. Her other plans are failing she can't control everything now even her husband left her. She thought she would handle him forever but some people ancestors ain't weak they opened his eyes

they will do the same to everyone around her."

Me:That's all?

Aunty:Yes

Me:Why didn't you ask questions?

Her:When she starts talking again you will,not me

Me:At least we know she had a daughter named Anesthesia

Her:Yes and she killed her

Me:Why?

Her: I don't know

Me:Wake her up again

Her:She's been sleeping for a few let her rest

Me:My life depends on her

Her: Fine

She woke her up with cold water sprinkled on her face she quickly woje up shouting I held her hand

Her: Who are you? Where's my pretty daughter I know she grew up and was pretty

Me:Aunty she's losing right?

Aunty:Could be

Me:Record us

Her:Okay

Me:Hy name is Amanda I want to ask you questions

She looked at me

Me:I guess you already know Teresa

Her:Teresa

She sounded angry

Me: Okay we are going somewhere. Can you tell me about her crimes

Her:Her crimes? You can never find her evidence

Me: Why?

Her:Ask her friends those Mob friends they know much than I do

Me:What Mob?

Her:He is called Big Man

Me:Big Man? Aunty cut

She cut the recording

Her: What is it?

Me: Big man? Alex and Dora said I look like a mobsters daughter and Alex mentioned his name

Her:What?

Me: Big Man

Her: Oh

Me: What is going on?

"You will never know she might be playing with your mind right now,no one can defeat her not even me"

The woman said I walked out of the room

Me:Aunty this is just...too much

Her: You think Alex is working with that witch?

Me:I don't even know who is she working with now

Her: You need to find out

Me:How?

Her:The one and only way

Me:What Aunty?

Her:Crime,find Big man you need him

Me: How?

Her:Easy use Alex he already know much

Me:But how will I do all of this

Her:You're a woman Amanda,do what you gotta do

Me:I can't seduce him

Her:Your life depends on it

Me:Fine!

Her:Good luck

Me:I've never seduced anyone before

Her: You're a very beautiful sexy innocent lady just play with charms.Tomorrow you're visiting Big Man

Me:Arggg okay

I left I went to the car

Me: Okay Alex drive back to the house

He drove.I looked at him in the view mirror he ain't bad looking and I can work with that.

Him: What?

Me: Nothing

Him:Well your looks are scary

I laughed

Me:Oh come on

He drove all the way to the house I went inside. I freshened up I put on my sweet perfume I was gonna slay it now.I walked out of my room

"Where are you going?"

Peter? Why is he here?

Me: To Alex I forgot something

Him:Oh you look nice

Really?

Me:Thank you Sir

I rash out I went to knock on Alex's door he opened up,he's top less okay I wasn't told he's this fine

Him:You're the first woman to come in my door,want me to drive you somewhere?

Yes to crazy land look at you I'm in love

Me:No can I come in?

Him: Sure

Me:It's pretty hot here

Him:Yah I like it like this

So you can handle the heat Mr Alex? I like

Him:Want something to drink?

Me:Water pls

Him:Coming right up

He gave me a glass of water.I made it seem like it split on me my shirt was wet I quickly took it off

me:ah cold

him:I'm so sorry

he took it

him:I'll dry it for you

me:sure

He left them came back he came back with a shirt

him:At least you don't get naked

he laughed a faked one too bcz that is the whole point me getting you on,how does people do this thing?

Him: So what brings you here?

me: Visiting a friend wanna sit?

him:Sure

we took seats I set next to him

me: You once said your girlfriend is being unfaithful

him: Yah

me:Why don't you?

him:Excuse me what?

me:I mean why don't you have fun like her

He looked at me

Him:You're right

Me:Just enjoy life

him:Yes

j got close to him

him: What are you doing?

me:Me doing? Nothing

him:Amanda look you're a taken woman I won't touch you in anyway now I see why you're here.Look if you want Whatever you want call your boyfriend

He got up mad then came back with my shirt all dry

him:You know your way out

I took off his shirt I wore mine

me:I'm sorry

him:wait

I was about to walk out then stopped looking at him

him:Look I'm not your guy the man that likes you is the Boss

I already know that

him:Besides you're with someone

me:Thanks

I walked out.Now how in the world would I find this guys address I can't just ask Alex while his mind is functioning well.He already knows I'm that guys daughter I can't blew that cover I needed to seduce him then ask him while he's not thinking straight but I failed.I walked in the house

"Amanda?"

me:Sir?

him:Can you help me here

me:Sure

I helped him collecting papers that fell

him:Thank you

me: Its no problem

when were done I gave him he looked at me then shook his head taking the papers

me:What?

him:Nothing Amanda I'm being silly

Arggg can I kiss you Pls just once? You look so adorable right now

me:Sir?

he looked at me

me:Just don't be afraid to do what your heart tells you but if you feel like you'll regret it just don't and what you're expecting might be just that

I turned away to my room.I'll just Google this Big man's house what I should gave done first than embarrassing my self

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:45] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 12 ×•••×

•

•

•

I got Big man's address I'm visiting there today but first I gotta get my beautiful babies ready for school.I did my hygiene process then went to get the kids ready.After that I made them breakfast my phone rang it was Aunty

Me: Hey Aunty

Her:Got the address?

Me:Yep

Her:You're going there?

Me:Yah today I got no choice

Her:Good luck sweety

Me:What about the woman how is she?

Her:Doing just fine.She needs time to heal inside and out

Me:I just want her to recover too it's too much

Her:Have you seen that Witch?

Me:It's been days now no I haven't seen her

Her:She's loosing her mind where ever she is

Me:I want her too so bad

Her:She will eventually

Me:Yah she will

Her:I gotta get to work,bye

Me:Wait where is Athi?

Her:Here

Me:He didn't go to work?

Her: You should ask him that

Me:I rather not but I want him to take me to that guy this afternoon

Her:He'll be there

Me:Bye

Her:Bye

I dropped the call. Today I'm so happy I can't wait to look at that guy with my naked eye. I want to ask him sooo many questions I hope it all goes well.

•

•

•

I already took the kids to school now I'm waiting for Athi to pick me up.Now I'm at the garden waiting then I saw Nicole who is Peter's girlfriend,I swear to God when he finds out I'm Paige I'll kill him for replacing me with that.I quickly walked in the house I'll attende the door. She ring the door bell I went to open

Her: Oh hey is Peter here?

He walked downstairs

Him:Leave us alone Amanda

Me:Yes Boss

And ofcause I didn't leave them alone I just his from them then listened to their conversation

Her:My love I'm sorry I over reacted that morning it's all my fault...

Him:It's not it's mine.I shouldn't have said her name while we were making love

Her: And I forgive you

Him:Just don't Nicole. It's clear I'll never get over her

Her:I can make you forget

Him: Nicole you're a sweet girl you deserve better than I give you.I still love my wife

Aw I want to cry

Her:But she's never coming back

Him:I know and I rather not play with other girls feelings. I couldn't protect her but I gotta protect my kids,they need at least a stable father in their lives.

Her:You're breaking up with me?

Him:Yes Nicole yes I am...

"Stop doing this"

I quickly looked behind me my heart almost stopped but it was Dora

Me:You scared me

Her:When will you stop doing that?

Me:I don't know

Her:Why don't you tell him already?

Me:He'll hate me if I do

Her:You got no choice either

Me:I do,I got to just stare at him and be my kids Nanny

Her:And you think that's healthy? Just go to him and explain yourself

Me:I don't have anything to say until I find out who did this and why

Her:You'll regret not telling him sooner

Me:I won't

I got a message

I'm outside

Me:I gotta go

Her:Bye

I walked to the lounge they looked at me

Me:Sorry Boss can I go somewhere?

Him: Where?

Me:To my Aunts place

Him:Tell Alex to drive you

Me:No Athi is picking me up

Him:Who's that

Me:My boyfriend

Him:Can I have a word with this guy?

Me:If he's not in a rush

Nicole:But we're still talking Peter

Him: I'm coming back

We walked out I saw Athi from far balanced by the car.We reached him they bro greeted I have no idea what was that

Peter:You can get in the car Amanda

Me:Yes Sir

I Athi opened the door for me I walked in then he closed it.They had a conversation I couldn't hear anything at all.They were talking silently

,after that they hand shake Peter looked at me then

he walked away Athi got in the car.I watched Peter walking away, I still want him for myself.

Athi:Let's go now.You'll do Google map so we can get the directions OK?

Me:Sure your phone?

He gave me.I did Google map

Me:What was that about

Him:He's jealous that's all

Me:What did he say?

Him: That I should not bring you back late

Me:And?

Him:He told me how he values your work and how hard working you are

Me:Oh

Him:He's a good man I think when you come out he'll accept this new you

Me:He will not

Him:Why do you say that?

Me:Bcz I know him

Him: And you do

We drove to the Big Man's house

Me:Damn,it's huge

Athi:Yep,want me to take you in?

Me:No I rather you not.I don't want to involve you in my business now this is way dangerous

Him:Sure

Me:Just wait here

Him:Sure

I walked out of the car then walked towards the gate.I was asked my name then I was let in.I walked a long distance to the door I rang a door bell.A young beautiful maid opened up

Her:Pls come in

I walked in

Her: How can I help you?

Me:Can I see your Boss pls

Her:Ofcause

She led me to his office,I could see her whole thighs her skirt is way too short.She opened up some room I was led inside

Her:Sir someone is here for you

Him:Let her in and close the door

His chair was facing the window I went to sit down

Her: Who are you and what do you want?

His voice is scary

Me:Im here to talk business

He turned his chair oh his even scary in the face and he got one eye.He looked at me then laughed,OK this didn't go as planned

Him:Is this a joke little girl

Me:I maybe little but what I'm saying is true.I want to talk business

Him:Ok go ahead

Me:I want you to get me all the information of dirty

work of Teresa Jackson

Him:She's no Jackson no more

Me:Yes her

Him: What's in it for me?

Me:I'll pay you

Him:How much do you offer?

Me:Depends on the work

Him:Now you sound like my Boss but no little girl that woman double crossed me many times then she disappears I'll do it for fun,I won't charge you and I don't usually work for people this is my first time.Who told you about me?

Me:I've heard people

Him:Hmm

Me:You're taking it?

Him:Yes but I'll kill her

Me:No,no don't kill her.She needs to be locked up

Him:She needs to be killed she's smart than you

think,you should not do this criminating ish she needs her heard cut off

Me:I don't want that

Him:Who is she to you?

Me:Nobody

Him:Nobody? Hmm

He stood up

Him:You look like my daughter though

"Dad I couldn't find...."

A young girl walked in she froze when she saw me

Her:Dad I couldn't find it

Him: On my bedroom sweety

Her:Sure

She eyed me then walked out.She does look like me but not that much,maybe someone who doesn't know her that much might say I am her.

Him:See? You look like her .Who's your Mother maybe I had something with her too

Me:I have my both parents maybe it's a coincidence they do happen

Him:Ok anyway. I'll be gladly to help you she deserves to be locked up especially killed

Me:Thank you Sir

Him:Anytime

I walked out.Wait that was easy,he'll help me I left I went to the car

Athi:So?

Me:Done he'll help

Him: Like that?

Me: Like that

Him:That's good

Me:It's awesome.

•

•

•

Sorry I didn't write last night I was caught up

[12/22, 12:45] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 13 ×•••×

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I was woken up by a cellphone

Me:Hello

"Amanda, when you get the time pls come here as soon as you can"

Me:Aunty? What is it?

Her:Just do what I said,pls

Me:Okay

She dropped the call. What was that? I wonder what happened and I should wake up.I did my hygiene process and the kids too.

Me:Come kids I'll make breakfast

I picked up Klein

"Hey,girl"

That's Ben,just great!

Me:Morning Sir

Him: I was thinking how about you and me,date tonight?

Me:Sir I'm working

Him:I can talk to my bro

Me:I'll make the kids late for school

I said passing by he smiled at me that's one of the reasons why I should hurry with the revenge bcz I can't stand Ben hitting on me. I quickly made them breakfast. The Witch walked downstairs

Her:Morning

She looked at me smiling

Me:Morning Ma'am

She's scaring me why is she smiling?

Her:How are you?

Me:I'm doing just fine Ma'am what about you?

Her:I'm happy,so happy.Have you heard people try to ruin you but you're million times smarter than them?

Me: Yes,many times

Her:And yet you're still here,you should be happy about yourself you accomplishe their evil doings

Me:I celebrate it everyday

Her:Good

She smiled walking away I faked my smile. SHIT!!! What does she know?!?I got a message

Don't mess with me

Who could send this to me? I looked around i couldn't spot the witch. Do you think she knows something Paige? But she can't who would have told her? Dora!!!! I knew she shouldn't be trusted.

Me:Kids I'll be right back okay?

Them: Ok

I rushed upstairs I budged in her room I found her dressing up for school

Me: Who else did you tell about me?

Her:First of all you knock in my room

I went to lock the door then went to her I quickly chock her

Me:Look at me,I'll do anything for my kids and my husband don't you dare test me! Who did you tell or I swear your soul will leave your body at this instance

She said something I couldn't understand

Me:Oh I'm choking you

I quickly let go

Her:I told no one about you

She said breathing loudly

Me:You don't fool me

Her:I swear

Me:Someone sent me a threat and I don't like it

Her: What did it say?

Me:I'm not telling you anything from now on. Listen here I died at Paige that annoying little girl,my name is Amanda and I'll kill for my family do you hear me?

Try me I'll blow your brains out

I walked out I bumped into Peter's Father I was fuming with anger

Me:Sorry Sir

I looked down so he doesn't see me angry

Him;It's oka...

I quickly walked downstairs

Me:Are you done kids?

Them: Yes

Me:Let's go to school then

I took them to school then Alex took me straight at Aunty's house,I left him outside I walked in

Me:I'm here

I saw them on the couch Athi looked injured I rash to him

Me:What happened?

Him:It's nothing...

Me:Nothing? Look at you,were you shot?

Aunty: Stabbed

Me:By who?

They looked at each other

Me:Someone pls tell me

Aunty:It was a message from them to you

Me:Me?

Aunty:They said don't mess with them

Me:But? Who?

Athi:You need to leave here

Me:I will never leave my kids Athi

Aunty:But you're putting your life at risk

Me:I rather die for the second time than to leave my kids again

Athi:Its dangerous

Me:Where did they do this?

Him:Outside at my workplace last night

Me:They followed you

Athi: What if it's that Big Man

I passed up and down in the house my head is spinning around I don't know what to think anymore.

Me:I don't know I don't know

I just cried

Me:I hate her so much with all of my being I despise her sooo much

Aunty: Go back to work it's ok Athi is doing okay now

Athi:Yah go so you don't raise suspicion

Me:Yah you're right

I walked out I saw police coming to the house

Me: Aunty? The police are here

They ran my way I was lost as hell,or did they found out about my true identity? I tried running away they catch me

"You're under arrest Miss Jade..."

Me:Under arrest? WTF? No I never did anything wrong

I tried getting myself off them they were on me like glue

Aunty:What is going on here ?

"You're arrested for smuggling drugs,check her purse"

One police did he came up with a steak of drugs

Me:Is this a joke?

Him:You're arrested for smuggling drugs, murder...

Me: Murder?!!! And who the fuck is Jade!!!

I was beyond shocked

Him:Everything you say or do will be used against you in the court of law,if you can't afford a lawyer...

My mind just went miles away,this is not happening.No it can't be

•

•

•

Narrated

They all set around the table with champagne celebrating

Big man:It's all done

Teresa:She came back from the dead,just imagine

Amanda's Uncle: I did an amazing job

Jade:Thank you Daddy,now she'll pay for all my sins.Thank you Uncle for making her look just like me,now it's all in Judges hands

Teresa:But first we need to get your finger prints and all that bcz when they scan her Paige will show up and we don't want that

Jade:Ofcause,I will

Teresa:She's one hell'la strong woman trying to ruin me she doesn't know I have connections and partners all over.The day you told me Paige is alive...

She was facing Amanda's Uncle

Her:I got goosebumps

Him:Me too I knew she was gonna drag all of us to the mud, I couldn't let that happened I worked so

much

Big man:She is saving all of out asses by going to prison,she's saving me from going to jail and my baby girl

Jade:She'll rot in prison as me while I enjoy life,life is so unfair

They laughed sipping their champagne

•

•

•

It's not the end.Pls don't get tired of going by my slow pace it's not over yet.Amanda is stronger than that

[12/22, 12:46] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

This gotta be a joke if not I'll go crazy!!!

Me: I'm innocent!!!

"Hey shut up you're making a lot of noise!!!!!!!!"

Me:Sir pls help me to get the hell out of here I don't even know this Jade girl...

Him:Nice try but you don't fool me.I know you very well

Me:This a mistake

Him:Nope

Oh God

I set down on the bench there,I'm in a cell.Think Paige think think if I got arrested there is one worst thing that could happen,my true identy will be revealed at least I won't be this Jade girl but still I made a crime of faking my own death,well that's how ppl will see this whole situation. What about my kids? My beautiful children! I want to see them

Me:Sir,can I make s phonecall?

Him: No you can't

Me:No no I haven't made a phone call here ever since I got here,I know my rights Sir

Him: Well then I'm busy

He was just sitting on some comfy chair reading some magazine and he had a nerve to say he's busy! Bustard

Me:I'll sue this police station, you clearly don't know who am I

Him:What? You'll call Daddy?

Me:This is absurd

I scratch my head frustrated

Him:You have no idea how many people are waiting for you in jail,they will be thrilled

Me:Ok this is getting serious by a minute.Sit I'm not Jade my name is Amanda

Him: Whatever

•

•

•

Aunty's POV

Me:We gotta do something, where is your father anyway

I said checking if he haven't get back at me

Athi:How about you talk to that woman

Me:It's useless she's mute now

Him:At least try her husband Peter she was arrested she won't make it to work

Me:Yes I'll do that,I think I have his number around here....

I said checking on my note book

Me:There it is

I dialled his number

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I'm at work turning my chair around thinking about this Amanda girl.Thinking about the kiss we shared that one time.When I felt her lips on mine,how we both moved in the same pace how she knew how I like my kisses. She knew how I liked to be kissed i kissed my wife again when I kissed her.My emotions took over bcz I wanted it to be her so bad.I wish I could kiss her again,am I falling for her or I want her to be someone else so bad? I don't know but I want I won't hesitate to kiss her again feel her warm lips on mine...

"... Sir? Sir?"

I finally heard someone talking

Me:Hmm?

I opened my eyes to see my PE standing over my desk

Me:Oh hy

Her:This came for you

She gave me mails

Me:Thank you

She left my phone rang

Me:Hello

I looked at the mails

"Am I speaking to Peter Jackson?"

Me: Yes who's this?

Her:It's Amanda's Aunt

I put the mails down

Me:Oh hy Ma'am is everything okay?

Her:No uhm...

Me:What happened?

Her:Amanda has been arrested

I stood up

Me:Arrested? How? Why?

Her:She was falsely accused

Me:Where is she?

Her:We at the police station we are not allowed to see her,it's okay Sir you don't have to stress yourself

Me:No,I'll be right there

I dropped the call then walked out immediately. I wonder what is she accused of.

•

•

•

Dora's POV

Me:You promised me you won't do this

Jade:Are you serious? My life was in danger

Me:Bcz of your sins Jade

Her:Come on look on the bright side,I won't go to jail

Me:No you won't but an innocent woman is

Her:Who cares...

Me:I care,what about my brother and his kids

Her:Chill no one will know even if it's Paige

Me:know what,I once thought you'll change but I guess I was wrong

Her:Beab I'm sorry...

Me:First you hid all this information from me knowingly I was investigating her death you kept quite, now you used me...

Her:I never used you

Me:Just leave me alone

I said getting up

Her:Dora wait

She held my arm

Me:Do you even love me Jade?

She just looked at me

Me:Are you even a lesbian Jade?

She didn't say anything again

Me:Wow, guess I was nothing to you

Her:Dora pls....

Me:Just stop pretending everyone around you,Paige is innocent you should pay for your sins and for killing that man who worked in my fathers Company

Her:They were orders

Me: From that so called Mother of mine? She's a devil I know but I expected a good side from you.I'm the only person who can destroy you all of you,you know that right?

She looked at me

Me:I can destroy you with one snap but don't worry, I won't but justice will come

I walked through the door she followed

Her: Don't talk like that Dora, pls

Me:Forget me,forget we ever had anything going on bcz I will although it will be hard but I will

Her:But..

Me:But what?

Her:I love you

Me:You don't

Her:Dora?

I walked down the three stair's then hop in my car

pulling my dress inside then I drove off.Poor Paige,she doesn't deserve this.I'll help her get out but first I need an old friend back I'm sure he will be glad to help her.And as for Jade,I knew she was straight way before I dated her but what happened happened, besides no one knows I'm a lesbian only her.Bcz I don't dress like one well both dress like cute straight girls no one could suspect a thing.Paige hold on I'll help you even if going against my Mother

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:46] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 14 ×•••×

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I can't blv I slept here I wasn't even allowed to see anyone yesterday nor make a call.I just miss my kids I miss my beautiful Klein,I wonder if they know where am I.I hope Aunt told Peter everything bcz it looks like I'll be here for a while.

"Miss Jade you have a visitor"

I saw Dora coming to my cell,ok I can't stand her why is she here

me:What are you doing here?

Her:To see you

Me: You did now pls go

Her:I'm sorry Paige

Me:I need to finish what I started, these ppl think I'm some Jade girl.Who tf is Jade?

She breathed heavily

Me: You know her? Well ofcause you do,you know everything

Her:Paige just listen...

Me:I do not want to listen to you right now I need to get out or my ass is in the line.My real identity will be revealed and,and Peter will hate me,my Mom,Dad,Chris and Kim.Everybody will hate me for being selfish and I'll die alone,miserable...

Her: Your identity won't be revealed

Me:Oh is that right? How do you know?

Her:Bcz those ppl ain't idiots

Me:Who?

Her:My Mom

I looked at her shocked

Her:Paige if you let me help you at first you wouldn't be here

Me:She sent you right?

Her:No someone else did

I laughed

Me:Listen to me,I spent my night in a bench.Never have I ever been humiliated in my life I've never felt so cold.There were ants, cockroaches,mouse I slept

with one eye open.I want to get out of here,pay bail or something

Her:I can't...

Me:Oh my God

Her: Listen...

Me:Just leave,Guard!!! Pls take her away from my face she's crazy!!!

her:Your Uncle betrayed you

Me:Ok she's really going Mad!!!! Guard

Her: Think about it, why he made you look like Jade? So you can pay for their crimes.Paige you'll rot in prison for being stubborn

Guards held her

Her:Don't touch me,I'm leaving.Goodbye Paige you don't need my help

•

•

•

Dora's POV

Me:Know what? I'm done, Done I can't help her

"You can and you will"

Me:No I won't

"Dora you will help her,and she'll be a free woman am I clear"

I looked away pissed

"You can be mad for all I care she's getting out"

Me:She first chocked me now she chased me out like an animal while she is an animal, behind bars

"She's angry"

Me:Oh wow what an excuse

"Be patient with her,she will be all okay"

Me:You should go and see her

"No I can't"

Me:Pls maybe she will take me a little serious

"She will take you serious"

Me:Pls go

"No I can't"

Me:Why not, it's not like there is something else you're doing

"There is"

Me:If you won't go,I won't help

"Dora just go to her tomorrow"

Me:What will I say?

"Convince her to trust you,and only you"

Me:I'm the only person she doesn't trust how am I suppose to change her mind?

"You're pretty smart girl,I'm sure you can think of something"

Me:You're such a bore

"I don't want her to see me now, it's still early"

Me:Early for what? That's my sister in-law back off

"Amanda ain't married"

Me:Back off she's not Amanda

"I'm kidding I respect her I always respected her"

Me:Good,I can't wait for her to see you she will be shocked it's been years

"Don't get over excited now,just don't say anything about me to her"

Me:My lips are sealed Boss

"Good"

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Klein:Daddy where is Mommy?

Me:Mommy?

Him:Yes Miss Amanda?

Me:Oh you call her Mommy? But she's not your Mommy

Him:Yes but I want her to be my Mommy

Me:Ohhwk she can be your Mommy

Him:Where is she? She didn't pick us up for school yesterday like she used to,or made us her sandwiches like she used to,bath us or tuck us to bed and,and read us story time

Oh God

Me: Well Miss Amanda is...uhm

"Coming back soon little Klein"

Kelly set next to us on the couch

Her: Her Aunt is not feeling too well she is taking care of her

Him:She didn't even say goodbye

Me:She was in a hurry

Kelly:But she left you a big hug and a kiss on here

She pointed his noise he giggled I just smiled looking at my boy happy

Kelly: Now go and play upstairs I gotta talk with Daddy

He ran off

Kelly:So? Mr lover boy? Head over heals in love with the Nanny now?

I chuckled

Her:You don't fool me Peter

Me:I don't like her

Her:Ofcause you do but you don't want to admit it,it's okay though. I mean she's a nice girl and beautiful she's every guys dream.She loves your kids then why hesitating on taking her as your wife?

Me:I'll never re-marry Kelly

Her:Your kids need a Mother though

Me:I'll be their Mother

Her:How? When you always at work and busy with that Nicole girl

Me: Maybe I should take you instead

She laughed

Her:No offence but no. I was crazy for you when I was young and naive but now no thank you I want something serious

I couldn't help but laugh at her

Her:What?

Me:Something serious? How? when you change men every weekend

Her:Ok that was rude pls I don't change men every weekend, I just get bored with the same dick every day arggg

Me:We dated....

Her:Don't even start Peter,me and you that was a long time ago before you got married. Now suck it up there's no more me and you plus you still love your wife I can't fuck some guy who will eventually will groan some girls name in my ear so pls.If you still into your wife,merstubate honey

Me: So much anger I also wasn't trying to get back with you

Her:Thank God you wasn't

Me:I mean I'm into nice and polite girls now...

Her:Yeassss!!! you just admitted you like Amanda

Me: I didn't mention anybody's name

Her:I read between dem lines honey

Me:You read wrong

I stood up

Her:Where are you going? It's true right?

I walked upstairs laughing

Her:Peter come on

Me:Bye

Her:You like her

"Who?"

I saw Mother Teresa walking in

Me: Teresa, I was leaving

Her:Keep avoiding me,I got news

Me:I'm done with you

I walked pass her

Her:Amanda is Paige

Me:Paige is driving you crazy huh? You'll end up

losing it Teresa,you'll go crazy

Her:I'm not crazy

Me:You will be, stop obsessing over her it's pointless. Her ghost will haunt you down and the floor will be there when you fall.

I walked away. I got in my car I drove to the bar.Since it's still early it's empty only few people drinking, playing pool and dancing. I went to the bar

Me:Cocktail pls

Him:Which one

Me:Surprise me but I want non alcoholic

Him:Okay

He started making it then he gave me I took out money to pay

Him:It's already paid

Me:By?

He pointed some old man,not old old but kinda old maybe in his 40's

Me:Okay

I took my drink then went to sit next to him

Me:Hy

The most softest hy in the history of softest hy's

Him:Hey beautiful

Me:Oh wow thank you

Him:What is a girl like you doing in a place like this?

Me:Escaping ppl

Him:Me too

we laughed

Him:Name?

Me:Kelly

Him:Call me Uncle

We hand shake

Me:Nice to meet you Uncle

•

•

•

Well it's getting interesting by day right? Who are these mysterious ppl the one who was talking to Dora and Kelly,Uncle. Is it the same Uncle we all know?

[12/22, 12:47] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 15 ×•••×

•

•

•

Aunty's POV

I haven't checked on that woman for the whole day I guess I should. I walked to her bedroom

Me:Hy

She just looked at me. She already healed she's fine.

Me:So how are you?

She didn't respond

Her:You need to run,run and never look back

Me:Why?

Her:Because you surrounded yourself with back stabbers,can't you see?

Me:And who's that?

Her:People around you

Me:I got a lot of people around me...

My husband walked in

Me:Hey

Him: Hy,you like talking to her

Me:Yah

Him:I think we should take her to people who can help her my love I mean she is not okay

Me:But Amanda need her

Him:Didn't you hear the police? She lied to us

"How dare you Dad"

Athi walked in

Athi:Amanda will never lie to us

Him:She did now her real name is Jade

Me:They said she looked like her my question is, why?

I looked at him

Me:Did you do it on purpose?

He got angry

Him:How could you think so low of me ofcause not

Athi: Should I trust you now? Should I?

Me:I should go

Him:My love?

I walked out,I took my bag then walked out.I should really go and see Peter and ask him about Amanda.

•

I finally arrived at the house when I was about to knock a man opened up

Me: Morning Sir

Him:Morning's Ma'am

We just looked at each other for a little while

Me:Oh uhm looking for Peter Jackson

Him: Oh yes pls come in

We walked in

Him:I'm his father

Me:Amanda's Aunt

We hand shake

Him:Nice to meet you

Me:Like wise

He is such a gentleman

"Oh hy"

Me: Peter hy

Him:Something happened?

Me:No no it's nothing serious

Man:Ok I better leave you, nice to meet you again Ma'am

Me;You too Sir

He walked out.

Peter:Let's seat pls

Me:Sure

we set down

Me:How did everything go?

Him:Not good since they found drugs on her purse

Me:You know she's innocent right?

Him:Ofcause I do I know she's innocent

Me:Good,I just want this mixed up over bcz they think she's someone else

Him:Yes, and mistakes can happen it will be all cleared up I already got her a good lawyer

Me:Thank you so much

Him: It's my pleasure she's my employee and the best one,why not help her

Me:This means a lot,life is too short

Him:It is,it is

Me: Do you think it's possible for her to get out and soon bcz she can't go to prison

Him:She won't, trust me

Me:I trust you

•

•

•

Armand's POV

I'm going crazy being here!

"You have a visitor"

The Guard said

Me:If it's that annoying little girl, pls I don't wanna see her

"No it's me"

That's Peter's voice,he came infront of my cell

Me:P...Boss

Almost called him Peter arg!

Him:Morning Amanda

Me:Morning Sir,how are the kids?

Him: They are pretty good and they have been asking about you

Me:I miss them so much

I really do and it hurts so bad

Him: They miss you too but they are not the only people that missed you

Now his hitting on Amanda,Gosh

Me:Oh who else?

He came close to me to the cell bars

Him:I did

Me:Oh...

Him:Look Amanda I realized something, life is too short.I once loved a woman and she left this world I wasn't ready.I spent years thinking about her but when you came along I started thinking about you and I don't know what to do with this feeling I'm feeling. I can't help but to feel this way...

Me:Sir...

Him:Pls let me finish.I really like you and I want us to

be together

Woah woah woah,this guy gotta slow down.He wants us to be together? Is he listening to himself right now? Is this how he hits on a girl? He made me think of Ben,I guess it runs in the family.

Me:Sir, you know I'm with someone right?

Him:Uhm yes

Me:Yes yes good and you know you're my Boss right?

Him:Yes

Me:Good and you know that's one of the reasons we can't be together right?

Him:But we can work something out...

Me:So I have to dump my boyfriend for you?

Him: I knew this was a bad idea

Me: Yes yes a very big one, a terrible idea

Him:Sorry to disturb your morning

Me:You're forgiven

Him:Excuse me

He left.He can't be hitting on Amanda hell no! I swear to God when I become Paige again? He'll have the h

biggest slap of his life.I get that his lonely and stuff but he can hold on for a few months right! He can go to a strip club or whatever if he's that desperate.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I walked in my car.I knew confessing my love to her was a terrible idea and because She's still angry for getting arrested although she's innocent that's a big deal.Someone opened my door

"Hey brother"

Me: Dora?

Her:Why are you here?

Me:To see Amanda and I regret doing so

Her:Why?

Me:It's nothing, why are you here? To report some boy who hit you? Don't worry I'll take care of him...

She laughed

Her:No I'm here to see P...Amanda

Me:P? What were you gonna say?

She laughed

Her:I was gonna say Pamela can you blv it? Pshhh

Me: Ahhh

Her:Ok bye I gotta go now

She walked out

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

One of the guards came to my cell then opened up

Me:I'm leaving, I'm going home?

Him:No,just shut up

He took me to some interregional room

Me:What am I doing here? Here to ask me about my crimes?

He closed the door from the outside

Me:Well it was about time!!!

After some time he opened up

"Hey Amanda"

Me:Oh Dora

I rolled my eyes

Her:How are you?

Me:Well let me think uhmmm I've been here for 2 whole days,I haven't showered in 2 whole days,I eat hard bread they don't even warm it,my hair is a mess,my teeth need to be brushed,my clothes changed,I sleep on a bench without a blanket and what's worst I'm growing pimples, PIMPLES!!! Now just imagine how must I be feeling?

Her; Wow

Me:Why you're here? Again?

Her:I'm with someone today

Me:I love surprises but I don't think I like your

She went to open the door a man walked in facing down, then he looked up

Me: Romeo?

Him:Hy Paige

•

•

•

To be continued...

[12/22, 12:48] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Me:What are you doing here

Romeo:To help you

Me:But...

Him:It's okay, I know you don't trust Dora but she is not a snitch the people you should look after are out there

Me:I don't trust anyone right now

Him:And I don't blame you

Me: Even you

Him:Why would I want you to jail?

Me:I don't know you tell me

Him:Paige I want to help

Me: Then do so...

Him:I want your co-operation

Me:How can I trust you first?

Him: I want you free to be with your husband and children

Me: I wouldn't want anything more

Him:Then let us help you

Me:Prove your loyalty first I'm sick and tired of people pretending me

Him:I already did

Me: Did what?

Him:You'll be out by tomorrow

Me: What do you mean?

Him:Tomorrow you're getting out and you'll be home arrested

Me:What? What difference does that make?

Dora:You'll have your make up and clean clothes

Me:Good point but what about my kids?

Him:They'll visit

Me:Peter is stubborn what if he doesn't want to

Dora:He likes you he will

Me:You mean Amanda I can't wait to be Paige again I'll show him flames

Dora laughed

Her:You're jealous of yourself

Me: Can you proceed Sir pls

Dora laughed even more

Romeo:He will take the kids to you but the crimes that are pinned on you are still there okay? So you need to be careful

Me: Well it's better than going to prison and wearing that orange uniform ew so disgusting whoever designed it

Romeo:So spend one last night

Me:But it's so cold

Him:I got you a comfortable cell

Me:Are you being for real?

Him:Yes

I ran to hug him

Me: Thank you thank you thank youuuuuuu sooo much this means a lot

Him:You're welcome

Me:I owe you big time

Him:I did it for I....

Dora:Ohhhkay we better go now Romeo it's time for that meeting

Him:What meeting

Her:The meeting you know

Me: It's okay go to the meeting

Dora:Okay bye

They walked out

•

•

•

Dora's POV

Me: What is wrong with you?

Him:To me? You called me Romeo I'm your Boss young lady

Me:Next time act like one and stop hitting on Paige bcz if my brother finds out abt all of this we are all in a deep shit especially you and for hitting on her

Him:Your brother is a big dog that barks with no

biting

Me:So is you can we go?

Him:I'm your Boss

Me:Sorry Boss

Him:You better be sorry or I'll call Nev on you

Me: Ok sorry Boss pls don't call him

Him:What's with you and him he likes you

Me:I don't

Him:Okay sorry

I got a message from Jade

"Pls let's meet at our usual spot"

Me:Sir I'm not feeling too well can you pls drop me home?

Him;Is it bcz of Nev...

Me:Sir pls

Him:Ok ok we'll drop you home

We arrived I walked out.I went inside the house I

took my car keys I drove to where I suppose to meet her I don't know why but I felt an need to.I drove till I reached it,I saw her sitting on the rock she looked so beautiful

Me:Hy

Her:Hey

She smiled

Me:So?

Her:Sit next to me like old times

Me:There are people here today what if someone sees us

Her:Do you care?

Me:I...

Her:Come

I went to sit next to her

Her: I'm sorry

Me:About?

Her:Everything

Me:What everything?

Her:Being selfish and stupid I almost lost the love of my life.I'm so sorry I turn myself in

Me:What?

Her:You heard right

Me:You'll turn yourself for real?

Her:Yes I will I'll do anything for you

Me:But

Her:I love you Dora don't ever doubt that

I shared a tear

Me: I love you too

We kissed in public I'm so nervous some people can be disgusted,then we pulled the kiss

Her:I want our first night together tonight

Me:What?

Yah yah I'm lesbian but I've never been with one before.I have one ex but we never did anything just kissing this will be my first time

Her:Our first time?

Me:There's nobody I would want to be my first other than you

She smiled

Her:Come let's go

Me:Where?

Her:You'll see

We ran off giggling

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Kris:Daddy wasn't that Dora?

Me:No no it wasn't her.Who wants ice cream

Them:Me!

Me:Let's go then

We walked to the ice cream truck.Dora kissed that

girl,Dora is a lesbian? Anyway we went home after that

Mom:Oh my son you must be tired.Nicole is here

Me:I'm tired

She came from the kitchen holding a tray full of food

Mom:She's a wife material right?

She has been on my neck that I should marry her for years now

Me:Mom? Why don't you marry her and leave me alone

I walked upstairs angry.I walked to my room beside my bed there is Paige's photo which I'm never getting rid off ever. I watched it and remembered all our memories. The day she freaked out bcz she got a pimple,the day she was angry at me bcz she thought I cheated,our wedding night she slept next to the fire place,the days she will get jealous of Kelly,the day we found out she's pregnant I just miss those days with her,I miss her so much this is all hard for me to bare.Amanda pop in my mind,I

thought of her.She reminds me so much of Paige

Me:I can't take it no longer

I called the station,I need to see her.It was getting late I walked downstairs

Mom:Son, where are you going?

Me;Don't wait for me

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

"Visitor"

Me:At this time?

Him:Get up!

I got up,why a visitor at this time while I'm in my beautiful bed arggg. I was taken to a different passage

Me:I'm sleepy but I know pretty well this is not the way

He didn't answer he opened some door I got in.

Me:Where am I?

He locked from outside I was freaked out.I started banging the door crying

"Hey hey don't be scared I don't hurt you"

I turned to see Peter

Me:Sir?

Him:Hy can we talk

Me:Why are we here?

Him:To talk

Me:About?

Him:I don't know but I got a lawyer for you he's working on your case

I won't disappoint him

Me:Thank you

Him:Yes can we sit?

Me:Sure

We set on the bed there

Him:Uhm I don't know why am I here really

Me: But you drove all the way

Him:I did but I don't know maybe I missed you

Me: But I'm nothing to you

Him:But there's something about you

Me:Oh

Him:Your eyes,smile and laughter that I can't get out of my head

Me:Sir....

Him:Don't call me Sir pls

Me: Mr...

Him:Not Mr either

Oh he really loves this Amanda girl huh!?!???????!!!!!?!!!

Me:Okay uhm Peter

Him:Yes

Me: I know I remind you of your wife but I'm not her...

Him:I know that

Me:But I can be her

Him;Excuse me?

Wtf Paige are you crazy!?!?!

Him:No one can be Paige

Me:I'm sorry...

Him:No you're not

He stood up angry walking to the door

Me:Wait

He stopped I went to him

Me:I know I was wrong for saying that

He looked at me he looks so sexy when he's about to cry,was he gonna cry? I just kissed him then pulled back

he looked at me,he kissed mercilessly I responded. We walked to the bed kissing thank the lord I bathed bcz phew I was gonna stink.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:49] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 16 ×•••×

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

I just want to die,I'm such a horrible person.How could I lid him along and not say anything? Last night we did the deed but after that I wanted to leave,he was so heartbroken he didn't understand why. And the deed,we connected like the ol'times.He felt my presence I know it,it was so amazing. I'd love to be with him again but,I can't till I tell him my real I identity and I will today when I get released I promise it.

"Miss Jade,wake up"

Me: How nice

Him:Get up

I got up he opened up

Me:What? Another visitor?

Him:Kinda

I walked away with him

•

•

•

Dora's POV

It's the morning and no one is beside me, where is Jade? I saw a letter next to me

"Good morning my princess,I had the most wonderful and magical night of my life I never wanted it to end but it did and it led us to my part of the deal,turning myself in.I love you Dora with all of my heart don't ever doubt it,don't come and see me

it will make me more sad.I already ordered your favourite breakfast just enjoy that

Jade xoxo "

I cried reading it,she is gone.

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I have zero words for last night. I made love to Paige once again the love of my life but it wasn't her...I saw Dora tip toeing walking in the front door I was drinking my wine in the couch

Me:Where were you?

Her:Peter? You scared me

Me:Where are you coming from at this time?

Her:I was with a friend

Me:From yesterday?

She looked shocked

Her:Huh?

I walked to her

Me:Spill it

Her:Spill what?

Me: I saw you kissing that girl

Her:A girl? Noway

Me:I'm not an idiot Dora

Her:I don't know what you're talking about...

She walked passed me with tears in her eyes

Me: Were you crying?

Her:I need some rest

She walked upstairs Kelly walked in

Me:Why you're here? At this time?

Her:What happened to you,you look miserable by the day poor thing

Me:What do you want?

Her: To drop Elle I'm going somewhere

Me: Where?

Her:You and I ain't no friends so pls

Me:But the mother of my child

Her:I gotta bounce

She walked out

•

•

•

(1 day later)

Amanda's POV

I'm out of jail and my name was cleared the real Jade turned herself in now I'm back home

Aunty:Great your back even the woman is all healed

Me:She talks?

Her:No she just got a reaction she can't do anything but she can write what she wants to say

Me:Awesome,where's Uncle?

Her:He left this morning

Me:To?

Her:Job I guess

Me:Mmm

More like to his crimes.I know everything now justice will tale Care of them.We heard a knock I went to open

Me:Dora?

Her:We need to talk she looked angry

Me:Okay

I let her in I closed the door

Aunt: I'll leave you

She left

Dora:Wtf did you did to my brother?

Me:What do you mean?

Her; I mean he's drinking again,he sleeps with a bottle and wakes up by it and he sleeps with your picture

Me:Paige or Amanda?

She got more angry

Her: Paige ofcause!

Me:It was just an innocent little something happened

Her:Fix it and soon...

"Girls you gotta see this"

Me:What happened?

Aunt:Follow me

We followed her to that woman's room

Aunt:Look

She gave me a notebook

Me:That's my name

There was my name written on it

Dora:What does that mean?

Aunt:She wrote it

Me:Wait what?

Dora:Why?

Aunt:I've never called you by that name actually we used Amanda not Paige how does she know?

Me:Ask her who is Paige to her

She did then gave her a pen and the notebook she wrote down. After she was finished Aunty took it

Her:Oh

Me:Oh what

I took it

Me and Dora: My daughter?

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:51] Lynne: Continuation

•

•

•

Me:What does she mean I'm her daughter

Dora: It's your Mother Paige

Me:But...that's impossible

Aunt:By now you should know nothing is impossible

Me:Mommy?

I set next to her

Me:I can't blv it

I blinked three times and tears fell down my cheeks I held her hand

Me:We need to get her out of here first

Dora:Why?

Me:Maybe they might try and hurt her again

Aunt: "They"? aren't only Teresa in this?

I sighed

Me:Aunty,Uncle was doing things behind our backs he betrayed us

Her:What do you mean?

We explained everything to her

•

•

•

Teresa's POV

Me:Your stupid daughter turned herself in we are all doomed bcz of her,fix this or I'll do it my way

Big man: By fixing it you mean kill her. I'll tore your insides out if you touch a single hair from her

Me:This is business Big man she goes down we all are

Him:Even if that so, she's my daughter I love her unlike some ppl who rather trade their children

Me:You'll go to jail being an idiot

Him:Then I'll be here waiting for them

Me:Imbecile's!

My phone rang

Me:What?

" Boss Uncle is arrested "

Me:Thanks for letting me know

I dropped the call

Me:I rather not spend the rest of my life in prison I rather die first.They just arrested Uncle and now I'm finishing what we started

I left

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

Aunty:After all these years

Me:I'm so sorry

Her:Wow

She set down

Dora:Maybe you should come to my house

Me:No!

They both looked at me

Me:I mean no.How are we going to do that?

Her:We can find a way

Me:I rather not

Her:What happened between you and my brother?

Me:Nothing

Her:Are you sure?

Me:Yep

My eyes wondered around I can't lie and say nothing happened bcz I'm guilty asf

Her: Ok you'll tell us when your ready

Me:Yes

Aunty:Now you're admitting

Me: No no,can we not talk about this pls

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

Ohhhh he's looking fine,I went to sit next to him

Me:Hy

He looked at me

Him:Hy

He sipped his drink

Me:So long day huh?

Him:Look Lady I'm not in the mood plus I don't have money

Me: Oh Wow, I tried being friendly and you assumed I'm some prostitute? Wow Jerk!

I tried walking away from him he held my arm

Me:Let go of me

Him:Ok I'm sorry

Me:Yes you are sorry

Him:Athi yours?

Me:Kelly

We handshake

Him:We started on the wrong foot how about we take this little party outside. Ok to cut the story short for you people,first it started as an angry Kelly and I ended up praising and shouting his name on the car

Me:I gotta go it's late

Him:Can't you stay a little longer?

Me:As much as I'd love to I can't

I was on top of him almost naked

Me:Now where is my bra?

Him:How about I take you?

Me:Oh no

Him:Pls

Me:Look I have a child and I'm going to my baby Daddy to pick up my daughter if he see's me in some man's car he'll think the worst

Him:Who's the lucky bustard?

Me:No I'm not with him anymore

Him:More reason for me to take you

Me:You don't get it

Him: I do

He kissed my neck

Me:Ok ok fine but no one must see you

Him: Sure but can't we do the last one?

Me:You've been saying that in the past three one's

He kissed my neck I laughed

•

•

•

Amanda's POV

Aunty's phone rang

Her: Hello?

...

Her:Thank you for letting me know

Me:What what is it?

Her:It's Uncle, he's arrested

Me:Alone?

Her:Yah

Me:I'm sorry Aunty

She set down

Dora:I'm so sorry

Me:But he won't be alone

We heard a hursh knock on the door

Me:Who must that be

I went to the door I opened up to some guy who had his back on me I think it's Peter

Me:Excuse me, Sir

"How could I be so stupid?"

It is Peter he turned around looking miserable like he has been crying.

Him:Good to find you both here

He got in

Me:Sir...

I closed the door

Him: Cut the bull Amanda or should I say Paige? The love of my life, the mother of my children

I was lost of words

Him: Really? How could you huh? Why did you do it to hurt me?

Me:No...

Him:SHUT UP I'm still talking!!!! The face wow you did a great,marvelous job it's very different. 5 years Paige the whole 5 years with nothing

Me:Guys can you leave us...

Him:Nobody is leaving here,nobody. You're all gonna get turns explaining yourselves then I'll call the police to arrest the imposter

Me:Peter?

Him:I'm still talking,Amanda.

He was angry and drunk

Him:I walked into your room Dora I found the papers everything.How could you you were my favorite

person we used to do everything together even watch Disney I would watch those princesses with you,where did my sister go? Now I'm left with a betrayer

Dora:I'm so s....

Him:Don't care,I don't care.Then there's the Aunty who helped my useless wife here to play me good job guys.You all did a wonderful job but not more that Paige she played an amazing role being my Nanny she was so helpful

I was crying so much my heart was aching

Him:What disgust me the most is I freakin fell in love with Amanda but now I don't know was is Paige or Amanda? Tell me the woman I let in my home and in my children's lives Amanda? Is the woman where so close to me I developed feelings for Amanda? Is the woman from that night Amanda? Tell me

I sobbed

Him:Stop crying stop!

He shouted his voice startled me

Him:Just stop crying

He said softly

Him:Look at me

I did he looked away

Him: Wipe those tears

I did he looked at me once again

Him:Now tell me,was everything with Amanda,Amanda or Paige?

Me:My love...

Him:Paige don't you even start answer the damn question!!!

I startled

Him:I'm sorry talk

Me:It was Paige

Him:Leave us alone

They left

Him:Everything Paige?

I looked at him.First of all he needs to calm his ass down,I too risked my neck to be where I'm at

Me:Everything I promise you

Him: As much as I'm so Angy and mad at you,I want you still.Why did you do it?

Me: I can't tel...

Him:Tell me!!!

He raised his voice again I startled again

Him:I'm sorry just tell me everything

I told him the whole story he set down

Him:And still you saw me suffering and you never said anything!

Me:I didn't know how to break it to you !!!

Him:A little effort would have mattered !!!

Me:I'm sorry!

Him:Are you really? Our kids suffered so much

Me:And you think I didn't know that! I did this for them

Him:Mom will never kill especially you she knew how much I loved you and she was very supportive after your death

Me:More like dancing a victory dance

Him: Lies,I know she didn't like you but go far as killing noway.You played me along how far were you even willing to do this revenge bcz I was certainly not gonna let my mother accused of such nonsense

Me:Arggggg you're hard headed Peter!!!

Him:More than you? I doubt

Me: Just get out

Him:I'm not getting out! You're a manipulate you played mind tricks on me

Me:I never did anything

Him:I was even in bed with you

Me:And I'm sure you enjoyed every bit you ungrateful bustard

He came close to me

Him: That night I was making love to you I actually

didn't even feel your touch

Me:Deny all you want

Him:I mean it's been years how could I.I was making love to Amanda not Paige and I actually enjoyed when I thought of Nicole my girlfriend otherwise I didn't feel anything I regretted every moment of it

His words stabbed in my heart

Me:That's not true

Him:I wouldn't have gotten back at home to my lovely Nicole if I enjoyed.I feel anything for you now,I want you out of my life Paige we were better without you

Me:You will not cut me from seeing my kids

I said crying

Him: Stop the crying my God!

Me:You will not treat me like trash Peter after everything I've done for you

Him: For me?

Me:I did all of this for us to be family again

Him: There is no us, there will never be us ever you broke us apart

Me:My love...

Him:Paige even if my Mom was guilty, if you told me sooner I would have helped you.You're the mother of my children, you played with fire Paige I can't help you anymore

Me:You jerk!!!!! You Coward!!!!

I threw things at him

Me:After all these years I lost my face bcz of you now you don't want me.

I cried

Me:I risked everything for you.My life turned upside down the day I met you I curse it I curse the day we met I curse our wedding day,you're a Bitch Peterson Jackson go to your Mama!!! The only good thing that came out of all of this is my kids.I can't blv I waisted years of my life crying for you.I gave you my all I bare you 3 kids,3!!!! When wanted no kids,I made you happy I came back as another woman I made you

happy again but you don't value anything I did for you. I changed for you Peter,you remember how you first saw me I wasn't this girl I changed for you only you.I did things that no woman can for their man I lost my life,kids,family and face in the name of love.I want you to get out and never, do you hear me,NEVER set foot in here again I don't want to ever see you.All my effort gone straight to the drain

I say all of this crying

Him:Pa...

Me: Get the fuck out!!!

I chased him out I locked the door I cried he was calling me on the door

Him:Paige,pls don't do this let's talk.Paige?

He was knocking none stop I didn't open up still

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:51] Lynne: SEASONS 2

×•••× 17 ×•••×

•

•

•

(A week later)

Paige's POV

Aunty:You gotta eat something

Me: I'm not hungry

Her:Amanda!

Me:Aunty I'm not

Athi walked pass us busy on the phone smiling

Aunty: Athi see does...Where are you going?

He froze looking at us

Him:Ahhh

Me:Let him go

Him:Yah

He ran out

Aunty:He's up to no good

Me:I better go and sleep

Her:What about this food?

Me:I'm not hungry I'm sleepy

Dora walked in with the boys they already know I'm their Mother it was hard convincing them but I tried

Them:Mommy

My heart melts every time

Me:Hey,who wants to play?

Aunty:Amanda?

Me:Bye Aunty

I ran off with the kids

•

•

•

Dora's POV

I went to sit next to Aunty

Her:It's like I'm leaving with a 9 year old,at least they eat their food

Me:How have you been?

Her: Great

Me:Are you sure?

Her:I don't Dora really

Me:I mean with Uncle arrested

Her:At least real criminals are behind bars

Me:But Teresa is on the loose

Her: Yep I hope they find her

Me:Oh hey I brought you this

I gave her a CD

Her:Anita Baker?

Me:Don't look at me I don't listen to that my father said I should give you

She smiled

Me:Do you guys know each other?

She kept a straight face

Her:We met,once

Me:It doesn't seem that way to me

Paige walked in she set next to us

Me:Aunty?

Her:What?

Paige: Whatchu guys talking about?

She took the CD

Paige: Anita Baker? I love her and her love songs

Me:Love songs?

Aunty:I got laundry to wash

Me:Oh no you're not

Paige: What's going on?

Me:Aunty and my Dad got something going on

Paige laughed her lungs out till her eyes turn red she even cried I looked at her

Her:Oh you serious? Ohw Aunty

Me:So?

Aunty:We met once nothing is going on

Me:Come on

Her:We're just,friends

Me:You can't friend zone my Dad bcz he likes you

Paige:He does?

Her:He does

Her face light up

Me:So you're admitting?

Her:No

Paige was laughing none stop we heard a knock

Paige:I'll get it

She went to the door

•

•

•

Paige's POV

My cheeks hurt bcz of laughing my God I really needed that.I went to open up,Peter!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!! My smile fade right away

Him:Hy

I raised my eyebrow

Him:Pls don't shut the door I gotta say something

Me:Make it quick

Him:May I come in?

I moved from the door he got in his Cologne, rrrrrr smells good

Me:Talk

I said closing the door Dora and Aunty looked at us

Him:Place private

I looked at him with my eyes narrowed

Me:No funny business

Him:I respect you

Me:Hmmm ok let's go

He just starred at me I returned the favour

Him:You won't lead me ?

Me:No move this way

He walked I followed,he got nice ass

Him:And?

Me:Keep on moving

He looks fine!!!!!!! Oukr

Me:Wait!

He stopped

Him:What?

Me: Carry on

He walked,yummy

Him:Are you looking at my ass?

Me:And why would I do that?

Him:I don't know

Me:Just open the door on your left

He opened up we got in

Me:Ok make it quick

I locked up

Him:Why locking?

Me:I don't want disturbance

Him:Owky uhm...

Me:Oh and I was about to change

Him:Change?

Me:Yah this is my room

Him:Uhm okay

•

•

•

Peter's POV

Me:Uhm okay I wanted to apologize about everything I said that day,I was unfair to you and I saw Mom on the news and all that...

She mumbled something

Me:Excuse me what's that?

She looked at me

Her:Nothing

Me:Oh

She gave me her back she took off her bra,oh my God

Me:Uhm and uhm...

What was I saying?

Me:Oh uhm,I know you did a lot of things for our family and I didn't show appreci...

She took off her jeans,Lord have mercy

Her:What's that?

Me:Appreciation! That's appreciation I didn't show appreciation

Her:Ok carry on

She gave me her back again,sweet Lord I'm hard asf now

Me:So uhm...

Her:What's wrong Mr Jackson?

Oh I like it when she calls me like that

Me:Uhm...

Her:Appreciation,you were talking about appreciation

Me:Oh yes, yes appreciation is uhm...

She wore other jeans,I loved the struggle she had with getting her ass on them jeans

She looked at me covering her breasts

Her:Looks like you ain't talking anytime soon well then I gotta play with the kids

She took her bra,She'll leave? Like that? me like this?

Me: But I'm not done apologising

Her:Your tongue just froze Peter

Me:Ok I'm sorry

She looked at me,I'm hard I can blow anytime she looked at my boner

Her:Really? I showed off some little skin you're already blown? You need prayers

Some little skin? Excuse you

Me:Paige I'm really serious

Her:So am I but you're not look at you

Me:If you were not striping while I was talking maybe I would have focused don't you think?

Her:It's not my fault you can't hold yourself together

Me:Well it's mine?

Her:Do I have a dick?

Me:Do I? I mean yes yes yes I do

She laughed at me

Her:No you got a pinky

She laughed even more

Me:You're not funny

Her:But you are? "Do I?"

She mock my voice

Me:I don't sound like that

Her:You do

Me:Can't I finish what I came here for?

Her:Yah sure go on my God you're funny

Me:Uhm

Her:You we're talking about appreciation

I can't think straight horny!!

Me:Can I have a glass of cold water with ice

Her:Peter?

Me:Hmm

Her:It's written on your face you're hot right now but oh well I'll get you,water

She wore her shirt

Her;I'll be back

I held her arm

Her:Don't you dare here

Me:Paige,you stripped in front of me help a niggar out at least

Her:Oh you want some? I thought,Nicole was so much better that you feel nothing with me

Me:That wasn't it...

Her:Peter,Oh fuck it

We kissed

(An hour later)

Paige:Wtf?

Me:Whoooo that was...

Her:You're done?

Me: Huh?

Her:3 minutes Peterson Jackson?

Me:What do you mean 3 minutes?

Her:Get the fuck off me

She pushed me off

Me:I'm sorry I was..

Her:What was I thinking

Me: That never happened before and you know that,I thought it was more than an hour

Her:Give yourself points bcz that performance what

horrible

Me:At least some credit woman

Her:Oh pls,where are my jeans

She looked around

Me:Beab I'm sorry

Her:3 minutes the whole 3 minutes, you should be ashamed

Me:But Beab,you were hot either ...

Her:Don't give me that bull ish about a girl being hot

Me:Know what I'm leaving

Her:Bye

Me:Beab?

Her:Bye

Me:I love you

She looked at me smiling

Her;Get out

I laughed walking out,she love me she loveeee me

"So?"

Me:Dora? You're here. Did you listen to that?

Her:No but are you guys okay?

Me:Yes

I walked away smiling

Her:Okayyy

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:52] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 18 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I called a family reunion tomorrow everybody will

gather around so I can tell them the news.Well all they know is a family reunion they don't know the surprise. It will be held in the Jackson household I can't wait for tomorrow. So now I'm with my biological Mother in the hospital,we took her there after all the chaos although Teresa is still not found.

Me:How are you feeling?

Her:I'm going home tomorrow

Me:Really?

Her:Yep,so I can be with my daughter

Me:I can't wait

Her: And I want to see the people who raised you

Me:You will tomorrow I'm making a family reunion everybody will gather around you'll be there too

Her:You're making everything so easy,I thought you will never accept me as your biological mother

Me:I know how Teresa treated you so I won't put pressure on you,I saw you there in that house tied up

Her:Worst experience of my life

Me:She's the worst experience

She laughed

Her: You do that when mad?

Me:What?

Her:You blink a lot so you won't cry

Me:I don't do that

Her: ofcause you do,your father used to do that oh my God

She laughed so hard

Me:My father?

Her:Yah I would make fun of that he hated it

Me: I see why I hate it too,so where is he?

Her: I don't know, Teresa said he changed his life after what happened to me.He left to start life all over

Me:What does that mean?

Her:I don't known I have no idea

She looked down

Me:It's okay we'll look for him

Her:It's been so long

Me:At least we'll try

Her:Thank you

Me: For what?

Her:For being my daughter

Me:You're welcome

We hugged laughing

•

•

•

Dora's POV

I'm visiting Jade again.I saw her seating on those chairs waiting for me.I went to her, I wanted to hug her,kiss her,cry on her shoulders but I can't.I set down opposite her

Me:Hey

Her:Hey

She cried

Me: Pls don't...

I cried too

Her:You see why I never wanted you to come and see me

Me:I couldn't do it any longer

Her: Why you're here Dora?

Me: I wanted to see your face

Her:I look horrible

Me:Without makeup? Come on you look beautiful

Her:I doubt

We shared a little laugh

Her:Dora,you can't wait for me for all of these years. You'll meet people...

Me:Jade? When I said I loved you I meant every word when I said I'll wait, I'll wait why? Bcz I love you

Her: I love you too

We held hands

"No touching the prisoner"

We pulled back

Her:My Dad is also arrested?

Me:Yes

Her:Oh

Me:And Uncle,my Mom is still on the loose

Her:She's good

Me:Police we'll find her anyway,tomorrow we'll have family reunion everybody will gather around and Paige will come clean

Her:Then expect Teresa tomorrow

Me:What do you mean?

Her:That woman is so obsessed with Paige she'll do anything

Me:We have to have bodyguards well obviously

Her:Just be safe I'll try and be a good prisoner here so I can go home sooner

Me:I'd love that

•

•

•

Kelly's POV

This can't be,I took the pregnancy test

Me:Freakin pregnant?!!!!?!? Oh no

I paced up and down in the house frustrated

Me: Shit! Shit! Shit!

I'm with Athi now, like we're a couple but I don't want a baby now

Me:Lord help me

"Hey Beab"

I quickly hide it

Him:Hey

Me:Hey

We pecked lips

Him:Let's go or our table will be given to someone

else in that restaurant

Me:No

Her:Why?

Me:I'm not feeling like going out

Him:What's so Beab?

Me:I'm not even ready

Him:Beab what's wrong?

Me:I'm not feeling too well

Him:Hungry, feeling dizzy again or...

Me:I'm pregnant Athi

Him:What? How?

Me:We fucked that's how

Him:There was no need to be harsh I know that

Me:I need to be alone

Him:No you won't be, alone.It's okay we'll raise our baby

Me:Really?

Him:Ofcause

He smiled

Me:Oh my Gosh

I jumped hugging him I kissed all over his face

Him: Okay calm down

Me: I am calm

I kissed him

Me:Let's not go so we can take advantage of this moment Elle is at school

Him:You don't have to tell me twice

He picked me up I giggled.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:52] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 19 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Me:Is everyone inside already?

Dora:Nope not yet but everybody is greeting each other,having a good time nothing much

Me:Great,great I'm freaking out

Her:Calm down you'll do great

Me:Where's Mom?

Her:On the other room

Me: She can't come out now

Her:She won't

Me:Ok oh I'm sweating

Her:You'll do amazing

Me: You think

My Aunt got in

Her:Everybody is here

Me:Everyone? Are you sure?

Her:Yes

I walked to the door

Me:Ok they'll all hate me after this

Dora:Be positive

Me:Fine

We walked out

Me:I'll fucken blew this

Aunty:You and negativity let's go

We walked to the garden I saw Peter he smiled my heart melted I smiled back

Me:Ok let's do this

I went to the front I got everybody's attention. Mom,Dad,Chris,Kim,Kelly, Peter's Father, Ben,Athi,my boys,Elle,Aunty and Dora are here I wanted the earth to swallow me.

Me: Hy,everyone

Peter whispered "I love you"

I smiled at him he's just so amazing right now.

Me:I called all of you to tell you guys the truth,to come clean and rekindle my relationship with everyone here.

People were mumbling looking at each other

Me:Some of you know me as Amanda but I'm not.

They whispered more

"Well,well,well"

We all looked at the door it was Teresa with a gun pointing at me,how did she pass the bodyguards oh Lord.People panicked 2 bodyguards came rushing I stopped them

Me:Just let her,say whatever she wants to say

Her:Oh thank you that's so sweet,you got everybody here to make everyone hate me

She was sweating and crying

Me:People hate you bcz of your actions

Her:Don't you dare act innocent

Me:But I am

Her:Acting as if you love my son when we both know you don't

Me:Really? You still doubt my feelings for Peter when I did everything for him for our family for us to be together again...

She laughed

Her:You just want to use him

Me:You don't know what you're talking about

Her:I see you got everyone here,hello everyone

She came to the front

Her:Oh your parents are here and your best friend

They all were lost

Her:Oh you don't know her? Haven't you told them yet? Ohh...

Me:She'll be a death of me

I whispered looking away

Her:This is Paige Mahone my daughter in-law

Everybody was shocked

Dad:How dare you joke about my daughter like that,may her soul rest in peace

Her:Oh pls can't you tell it's her,ask yourselves why she called all of you here to tell you the wonderful news that she came from the dead.Well besides the face it's still her fake but her.She went away for 5 years and let her husband raise her children

Me:Shut up

Her:Well I'm pretty sure they are not my grandkids

Me:They don't have to!

I said fuming Dora calmed me down.My Mom in the crowed is silent and shocked

Teresa:Blah blah blah always same old,crying. You should at least realised it by now your tears don't mean shit

Me:Shut up!

Her: I see your kids too,oh my son are you sure

they're yours?

Me:Don't you dare talk about my kids!!

Her:They don't even look like you

Me: Say one more thing I'll lose it

Dora held me telling me to calm down,how can I?

Her:You were a whore...

Me:Me? Wow

Her: And your kids...

Y'all,she didn't finish saying whatever heck she was about to say I jumped to her we both fell,we fought.So,to cut the story short the gun went off,someone was shoot.My ears rang I was shocked people moved around I was lost in my world ppl were panicking then I just shut down

•

•

•

I opened my eyes with people giving me air

Me:What happened?

Dora: How are you feeling?

Me:Was I shot?

I said sitting up I was still on the floor,I saw my parents

Dora:You're not shot Teresa was shot she was rushed to the hospital

Me: Oh

I held my head

"Mommy"

Me:Boys I hugged them

Ppl were still shocked and I don't blame'em.I got up

Me:Hy

I said looking at my parents

Mom:My baby

She hugged me tight crying she made me cry my Dad hugged us too we shared a group hug

Me:I'm so sorry

Mom:You're here that what matters

Then we broke the hug

Dad:I missed you

Me:I missed you all too

"Welcome back Sis"

Me:Chris

We hugged

"So the face? How did that happened?"

That was Kim ofcause

Me:It's a long story

Her:I have the whole day

We hugged it out,my biological mother walked in Oliver.I can't do this introducing stuff now, how will everybody take it but it's gonna be done and now.

Me:Guys pls meet Oliver, my biological mother

My parents face went WOW

Me:I already know Mom

Dad:We wanted to tell you...

Me:It's okay Dad

"So I was hitting on you?"

Ben said walking to me

Me:Yes and you're terrible

Ben:But....I'm so embarrassed

Kim:Enough about that we need to know what happened to your face

Me:Oh well Teresa tried to kill me she poured acid on my face and threw me on the river

Mom:Oh my God

Me:So these ppl found me

Aunty and Athi walked forward

Me:They helped me I got surgery and I became Amanda bcz I lost my memory,few years later I regain my memory and wanted revenge

Chris:You think you're tough huh?

Me: I know I am,where's Peter?

Dora:He left with Mom

Me:Oh,ok people just eat the food it just can't go to waist

Ppl took seats,I over heard Chris talking to Kim

Chris:Nice to see you again after a while

Kim:You too I gotta go

She came to me

Me:You and Chri...

Her:Pls don't

Me:My lips are sealed

She looked pissed her nose was red.We talked the whole lunch it was happy but only one person who was distant Kelly.I don't have anything against her I'm actually cool she treated me with open arms when I first came here.

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:54] Lynne: SEASON 2

×•••× 20 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

Everything is just awesome we are one happy family now and now I'm meeting my Mom to the house.I went to knock on the door

Me:Hey Mom

Her:Hey sweety

We walked in

Her:I'd like to introduce you to someone

A man came up

Her: Sweety this is my fiancé David

Me:oh hello

Him:Hy I've heard so much about you

We hand shake

Me:I hope good things

Him:Trust me.Oh and you do look different from your pictures

Me:And it sucks

We went to seat down and talk he was good company.

•

After that I went to visit Dad they don't live together now.Mom took the house though good for her.I went to knock on his door

Him:My princess

Me:Hey Daddy

We walked in

Him:Come in meet Violin my wife, Violin this is my daughter Paige

Me:Hy

Her:Hey

We handshake."Wife"? he was quick but Mom is engaged so yah.

Dad:Let's seat

Violin:I'm picking up Mars from school sorry I can't stay

Me:Okay

She left

Dad:Mars is her nephew

Me:Oh.And you're married

Him:Yah and I love my wife

Me:It's great seeing you happy

Him:How's your Mother?

Me:Great

Him:She shut me out when I tried talking to her in the reunion

Me:You blame her?

Him:No no ofcause not but at least hear my sorry

Me: She's happy let her be

Him:I want closure

Me:Don't ruin your marriage again Dad just let it be

Him:Okay,fine

•

I went to burger King at last my favorite restaurant. I walked in I saw Kim down,I'm meeting her

Me:Girl

Her: Oh hey

I set opposite her

Me: You ordered for me,you're the best

I opened up my Burger

Me: What's up with you

Her:A part of me regrets going to that reunion

Me:What? Why

Her:My fiancé broke the engagement

Me:Your what? Girl you're engaged!?

Her:Was?

Me:Kim? Why didn't you tell me girl? I would have thrown a big party and celebrate than going to Burger king

Her: It's okay Paige there's no engagement anyway

Me:What happened?

Her; Chris,Chris happened

Me:My brother?

Her:Yes,he called in the middle of the night and asked me to meet up today he misses me

Me:Is he insane? He misses you?

Her:And my fiancé took the call not me

Me:Damn

Her:He left last night,he was so mad

Me:I'm so sorry

I set next to her we hugged

Me:Shhhhh it's okay

Her:I tried explaining he didn't listen, I love him Paige

Me:You're crying that says a lot. Chris is such a jerk

for doing that.It's okay maybe your fiancé will come a around.

Her:His name is Sipho

Me:He's black?

She blushed

Her:Yes

Me:You can't stay away from the chocolate huh?

Her:Too hard to resist and Peter ain't White too pls

Me:He's both parents are mix

Her:He's a mix too so pls

We laughed

•

After all that I went back home.

Aunty:Where's Athi?

Me:I don't know

Her:He's been out a lot these days anyway someone is here for you

Me:Me? No no I'm tired for visitors

Her:You'll like this one

Me:My kids? Where are they

"No it's me"

Peter walked in

Me:Where are my babies?

Him:So harsh

Me:No I've seen you many times,where are my boys? Tell me you didn't come here alone?

Him:I did...

Me:Why?

Him: This is important

Me:How important I miss my boys,do you know how much pain I went through in labour?

Him:No,no clue

Me:Yes you don't

Him:She talks alot

Aunty:I know

Him:Maybe this is not the right time

Aunty:Yah

Me:What is it? One of my babies have a girlfriend? Oh my God, well it was gonna happen eventually they don't even want to give me a kiss when I drop them to school.We have to teach them about girls at this age no it's horrible...

They laughed at me

Peter:No they are not having girlfriends

Me:Thank God

Him:May I have your attention pls?

Me:Yes but I want my kids

Him: Then why didn't you go to the house?

Me:I don't know

Him:Ofcause you don't. Okay pls just stop talking now

Me:What is going on say it already

I felt,weird like I can throw up

Me:Can you give me a sec

I rash to the bathroom I threw up nasty stuff

Me:Ew that's so disgusting and smell horrible

I quickly rinsed my mouth

"Are you okay?"

Me: No

I walked out

Him:What's wrong?

Me:I need to lie down

Him:Come

He accompanied me to my bed he tucked me in

Me:I feel like a little baby

Him:You're my little baby

He kissed my forehead

Him:Maybe tomorrow you'll be okay?

Me:I don't know

Him:I'd love to cuddle you right now

Me:You will

Him:When Beab? Let's move together again

Me:I can't

Him:Why?

Me: I'm just kidding, ofcause I'll move in with you

Him:Really

Me:Yes

We pecked lips

Him:Okay get well soon okay?

Me:Okay

He left

•

•

•

Peter's POV

I called Nick

Me:Ayo bro I couldn't do it

Him: What do you mean?

Me:Change of plans

Him:Okay?

Me:We'll throw a nice party,everybody will come and BAM! I'll drop my bomb

Him: I wonder what will she say?

Me:It's obvious dummy

We laughed

Him:I'll tell the others

Me:I'll tell everyone too, she must not find out or I'll kill you

Him:Yes yes yes I know

Me:Good

I dropped the call. Finally

•

•

•

[12/22, 12:56] Lynne: ×•••× FINALLY ×•••×

SEASON 2

×•••× 21 ×•••×

•

•

•

Paige's POV

I woke up okay maybe it's something I ate yesterday that made me vomit.Anyway I heard a soft knock

Me:Come in

My boys came running in

Me:My babies

We all hugged

Me:How are y'all doin?

Kris:Great

Me:Awesome I'm great too.Did you bath bcz I was

about to

They all sulked

Me:Did you guys bath I know you hate too but you gotta

Kaleb:We did

Me:Klein?

Klein: Hmmm don't ask me

I know he doesn't lie

Peter walked in

Me:Did you bath the kids?

Him:Paige pls I didn't bath myself

Me:What now?

Peter:No pls I bathed yesterday

Me:But today is not yesterday

Kris:We wanted to bath Daddy didn't want to bath us

Me:Ofcause he didn't

Peter:Excuse me? We all agreed...

Kaleb:Mommy,he agreed alone

Klein: No Mommy we all agreed

Kris:His lying

Me:Ok I don't care who's lying now but you guys will bath,now

Kris:Oh Mom

Me:You still young to be refusing to bath.Now go and eat breakfast

Kris:We already ate

Me:Go and eat again

They ran off,Klein left behind

Me:What's wrong boy?

Him:It hurts

Me:Where

He had his hand under his trouser

Me:Let me see

He showed me his penis

Me:What is it?

Peter:Is it hard boy?

He nodded

Me:Stop touching it let's go

Peter:Where are you going?

Me:To make him pee

Him:How did you know that?

Me:I read it on google,come baby

We went to the bathroom

Me:Ok now pee

He tried

Him:I can't

Me:Try again

Him:I can't

Me:Ok wait a bit

I took a towel then opened up luke warm water on the sink,I made the towel wet

Me:Ok come baby

I placed it to his penis

Me:It will be okay okay?

He nodded

Him:I want to pee

Me:Ok come

He peed

Me:Good boy

I kissed his cheek he smiled

Him:Can I go and play now

Me:Sure

He ran out I went to the bedroom

Peter: How did you know that?

Me:I read on google the things boys go through as girls,that's one of them

Him:I knew too you know

Me:Ofcause Beab

Him:Paige I did

Me:I'm not saying other wise either

Him:Anyway my boy is becoming a man

Me:He's 5 years old Peter

Him: But still.He's the first one to get that right?

Me:Yes

Him:I thought Kris will be first

Me:Okay let's talk, why are you here?

Him: To see the love of my life and see how she's doing

Me:I'm great

Him:Good

He smiled

Me:What's with the smile

Him:Dora is taking you out today she said

Me: I don't go out bcz I'm married

He blushed

Me:Oh my God did you blush

He fixed his face

Him:What? No

Me:Where is she taking me?

Him:I don't know to party

Me:I don't do parties, I don't think I have done parties before

Him:You'll talk with her

Me:Yah

My stomach feels weird again

Him: Are you okay?

Me:Yah yah I just feel weird again

Him:Let's cuddle you'll feel all great later

Dora walked in

Peter:Wrong timing girl

Her:Am I interrupting?

Me:No,whatsap?

Her:Wanna go out ?

Me:Where?

Her: You'll see

Me: Is it a party?

Her: No you'll see

Me: Okay what should I wear in this mysterious place?

Her:The sexist dress you have in your closet

Me: I got none

Her:I'll come up with something

Peter:It doesn't have to be revealing you know

Me:Peter this is a girls thing pls

He laughed

Him:My woman is going no my WIFE is going, that sounds way better when I say it out loud

Me:Beab pls just one time

Him:Ok fine

Dora:Awesome I'll be back

She left

Peter:So?

Me:So what?

He set down on the couch

Him:I'm in this couch you're in that bed,one of us is in the wrong place

Me:Where did you hear that?

Him:I'm trying to be romantic with you and you're ruining it

Me:I'm not ruining anything

Him:You're no fun

Me:I'm fun thank you very much

Him: No you're not

Dora came in again

Her:Bro,come

Him:Ok I'm coming

She left

Him:But Beab my penis is hard too

Me: Pee

Him:But Paige? Why you're so evil?

Me: Bye I love you

Him: I don't

Me:No I love you more

He walked out angry well acting angry,he always wants something to excite him.Real men out there mesturbate sometimes why he doesn't? No no

•

Me:So this is what I'll wear?

Dora:Yes

Kim: Besides you'll look amazing

Dora:Yep

Me: Where are we going really?

I don't feel okay again

Kim:You'll see

Me:Okay

I changed to the dress

Dora:See? It shows your figure well

Me:Yes it does and red is beautiful on me,who knew

Kim:Me, I knew but you never listened

Me: Oh pls

Dora:Do the make up girl it's getting late

Kim:Ok let's do this girl

She did my make up

Kim:Maybe I'll go with somebody's man on that party what about you Dora?

Me:Kim? Aren't you engaged?

Her:Oh yes you're right

She laughed

Her: I keep forgetting but I was given a chance phew

Me:So? don't blew it

Kim:Fine, What about you Dora?

Me:She's still young Kim why are you even asking her that?

Kim: At that age I was unstoppable

Me: You not her

Dora:I'm into women

Kim:Whaaat?

Me:Huh?

Kim:Girl I was naked in front of you

Dora:Don't worry I won't rape you

Me:Kim apologize

Kim:I'm sorry

Dora: It's cool.I'm in love with someone

Me: Who?

Dora:Jade

She smiled

Me:Ohhh will your father agree...

Her:Even if he agrees or not it's my choice

Me: But Jade is in prison

Her:I'll wait

Kim: Wow that is true love right there,unconditional love it's rare these days

Me:Yah

Kim:Sorry to say but you don't look like a lesbians

Me: Jade too they look like straight girls who are sisters or something but not lovers,I hope that wasn't offensive

Her:It's okay.Yah we don't look like other lesbians but we love each other that way and that what matters

Me:So cute

Kim: Indeed

Dora:Enough about me,girl this is all about you

Me: Me?

Dora:ahhh

Kim:About us,about us ofcause

Dora:Yah

Me: Ok

Weird

•

Me:What is this place

Dora:Let's get in

Me:I'm not opening, knock

Kim:I'll open

Me:It's dark here and scary

Dora:Ok I'll do it

She walked in

Me:Dora?

Dora:Follow me

Me: I don't wanna die

Kim:You won't

Me:This ain't a party though

"Surprise!!!!!!!"

The lights went on

Me:Ahhhhhh

I screamed I looked around

Me: Mom,Dad,boys?

Everybody is here

Me:What's going on

Dora and Kim were laughing at me

Me:What's going on

Dora:Gotcha

They laughed

Me:Got me? How?

I laughed at myself too,then a soft piano started playing

Me:What is going on?

Peter came out

Me:What's this?

I'm lost,Peter walked to me nervous as hell he looked terrible.As soon as he walked to me,everybody around me disappeared we were in our own little bubble.He came to hold my hands

Me:You're nervous

Him:I'm trying pls

I laughed a little then he went down on his knee,what is going on!!! The music stopped

Him:Paige Mahone Jackson, the mother of my children,the woman of my dreams,the woman I want to spend the rest of my life with,the woman I want to grow old with,the woman I want to have fights and solutions with,the woman who made me a man amongst other man,Paige Mahone Jackson will you make me the happiest man in the whole entire universe,will you marry me?

I became sour right there,what is he talking about we are already married

Him:Again and start all over and get married the right way?

I smiled now he makes sense

Me:Ofcause I'll marry you again

Everybody cheered the music started playing again he got up.He took off the other rings then put on the new ones

Me:I love you

Him:I love you too

We kissed,everybody cheered and everybody started dancing and congratulating us

Me:Peter this is insane we should have renewed our vows

Him: The lies,the wrong vows? No I wasn't into you then now I am I want to tell you what's in my heart

Me:Ok did you take few shorts first?

Him:Yes,yes I did

Me:Explains a lot

We laufged

"Hy"

Kelly came to us

Peter:I'll go to the boys

He left

Me:Hy

Her:Congratulations

Me:Thank you

Her:Paige look,I know we...

Me:Kelly it's fine, it's in the past forget it.When I first came here you've been nothing but nice and supportive towards me and my kids and for that I'll be forever greatful

Her:Same to you.

Me:Come on let's hug it out

We hugged

Her: And girl I need whatever you guys are using.Peter loved you as Paige then he loved you as Amanda as well,that's just so beautiful

Me:Thank you

Her:Welcome

Athi came to us

Him:Can I still my future wife as well pls?

Me:You guys are together?

Kelly:Yes

Athi:Don't we look cute?

Me: Indeed

They left laughing.Peter came to me he looks worried

Him:Everything okay?

Me:Yes

Him:Kelly?

Me:Cool she's over you

Him: Like that?

Me:Excuse me?

Him:I'm kidding

He laughed

Me:I'm not

Him:I'm just playing love,come let's dance

Me:I'm a terrible dancer

Him:So am I

A love song played

Him:This one is perfect

Me:Okay

We went to the dance floor everybody was dancing we also danced.His hands on my waist mine on his shoulders moving the same pace, slowly.

Me:I love this

Him:Me too

Me:This is it?

Him:It's it

Me:This is our happily ever after?

Him:Yes my love

Me:I guess every story has a happy ending

Him:Not without a little one

He brushed my tummy

Me:Oh don't you even start

Him:What? that will be a perfect ending

Me:I do want a baby too but Peter, I need time to relax my life has been hectic

Him:You're right but I gotta plant my seed again

Me:Do you think it's nice being pregnant? Its not my love it ruins our bodies

Him:I'll love you till we have wrinkles babe I don't care

He got me closer to him

Me:If you get a boner you're alone

Him:There are bedrooms in this house stop being greedy

He bit on my neck it tickled

Me:That tickles

Him:So what do you think?

He squeezed my butt

Me:I think you have me all your life stop wanting to hit all the time

Him:But you're so hot

Me:Stop,there are ppl here

He was kissing my neck

Me:That's just so wrong

Gosh my panties are wet I'm sure

Him:Pls

My stomach hurt again

Me: Beab my stomach hurts

Him:How?

Me:Ouch ouch!!!

I screamed

Peter:Somebody get a car!

I got dizzy I passed out

•

•

•

I woke up with a weird smell.I opened my eyes

"Beab,Beab are you okay?"

Peter was on top of me I looked around,oh hospital even everyone was here.

Me:What happened?

Mom:We're waiting for the Doctor sweety just relax now

Me:OK

The Doctor came in

Peter:What is it Doctor?

Doc: The results, Paige Mahone Jackson you're pregnant

Me:WHAT!!!????

Peter: Yesss!!!!!??????

•

•

•

×•••× THE END ×•••×

•

•

•

Guess the three minutes left a mark huh?